NUNC COGNOSCO EX PARTE

TRENT UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

CANADA

IN THE

GREAT WORLD WAR

PATRICIA EDITION

This edition is limited to One Thousand
Numbered Sets, being the first
printing, of which this is
Number 753

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/canadaingreatwor0006unse

H Burstall

CANADA

IN THE

GREAT WORLD WAR

AN AUTHENTIC ACCOUNT OF THE
MILITARY HISTORY OF CANADA
FROM THE EARLIEST DAYS TO THE
CLOSE OF THE WAR OF THE NATIONS

BY

VARIOUS AUTHORITIES

Vol. VI

SPECIAL SERVICES
HEROIC DEEDS
ETC.

TORONTO
UNITED PUBLISHERS OF CANADA
LIMITED

DS47.C2C35 V. 6.

Copyright, 1921
by
United Publishers of Canada, Limited

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

Page
THE CANADIAN ARTILLERY 1
By J. S. B. Macpherson

CHAPTER II

THE CANADIAN ENGINEERS 37
By J. L. Melville

CHAPTER III

THE CANADIAN ARMY MEDICAL CORPS . . . 75
By Lawrence J. Burpee

CHAPTER IV

RELIGIOUS AND SOCIAL ACTIVITIES 116
By Officers of the Services

CHAPTER V

CANADIAN WOMEN IN THE GREAT WAR . . . 176
By Wealtha A. Wilson and Ethel T. Raymond

CHAPTER VI

THE CAMPAIGN IN NORTHERN RUSSIA . . . 219
By Allan Donnell

CHAPTER VII

DEMOBILIZATION 240
F. A. Carman

CHAPTER VIII

HEROIC DEEDS 270

APPENDICES

I. COMMANDING OFFICERS OVERSEAS UNITS . 315
II. DECORATIONS AWARDED CANADIANS . . 373
III. STATISTICAL ACCOUNT OF THE C.E.F. . . 376
IV. TERMS OF ARMISTICE WITH GERMANY . . 378

105362

ILLUSTRATIONS

Lieutenant-General Sir H. E. Burstall, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., A.D.C. . . . . *Frontispiece*
Brigadier-General W. B. M. King, C.M.G., D.S.O. *facing page* 6
Sixty-pounders in action . . . . . . " 18
Loading a big gun . . . . " 18
The master-gunner and two of his officers . . " 24
Officers of the 9th and 10th Brigades, C.F.A. . " 34
Bridging the Canal du Nord . . . . . " 44
Canadian Engineers at work . . . . . " 56
Colonel Herbert A. Bruce, M.D., F.R.C.S. (Eng.) " 84
Officers of "B" Mess, Canadian Corps H.Q.: Brigadier-General A. E. Ross, C.B., C.M.G., seated in centre . . . . " 104
Late Lieutenant-Colonel John McCrae . . " 110
Lieutenant-Colonel F. A. C. Scrimger, V.C. . . " 112
Officers of the 26th Battalion, 1918 . . . " 142
Canadian Generals . . . . " 162
General Sir Arthur Currie with H.R.H. Prince Arthur of Connaught and Divisional and Brigadier Generals . . . . " 242
Canadian Generals . . . . " 246
Canadian Generals . . . . " 250
Types of Canadian Battalion Commanders . . " 256
Types of Canadian Officers . . . . . " 260
Types of Canadian Officers . . . . . " 266
Canada's Greatest Aces . . . . . . " 270
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 274
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 282
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 286
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 292
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 296
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 304
Winners of the Victoria Cross . . . . . " 310
Major-General Sir F. O. W. Loomis, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O. . . . . " 316
Major-General Sir David Watson, K.C.B., C.M.G. " 318

Officers of the Royal Canadian Regiment, 1918 . *facing page* 320
Types of Canadian Battalion Commanders . . " 322
Lieutenant-Colonel A. E. Dubuc, D.S.O., and Bar " 324
Officers of the 42nd Battalion, 1918 . . . " 326
Officers of the 49th Battalion, 1918 . . . " 328
Soldier Brothers . . . . . . " 330
Soldier Brothers . . . . . . " 336
Soldier Father and Soldier Sons . . . . " 340
Soldier Brothers . . . . . . " 346
Types of Canadian Officers . . . . . " 352
Types of Canadian Officers . . . . . " 356
Lieutenant-Colonel C. P. Templeton, D.S.O. . . " 368
Decorations . . . . " 374
Map of Europe . . . . *page* 378

CHAPTER I

THE CANADIAN ARTILLERY

1. Its Organization and Work

IN attempting to give an account of the work of the Canadian Artillery in the recent war, one is confronted with great difficulties. There was hardly a unit which went through such great changes and developments, and there was hardly a unit which changed its interior organization to so great an extent. Field artillery were changed from four-gun militia batteries to six-gun overseas batteries, back to four-gun batteries, and then again to six-gun batteries; howitzer brigades were abolished, but howitzer batteries were added to field artillery brigades, and the number of brigades to a division was also changed. In the heavy and siege batteries, an organization grew from nothing in the case of siege batteries, and in the heavies from one battery for each of the first two divisions in France to independent brigades. Again, in the case of the arrival of the various portions of the Canadian Corps Artillery in France until the demobilization of the corps, each division had its own history in the formation of its artillery, and to trace the history of the artillery from this point of view would be a task which would involve searches through almost all the war diaries of the various brigades in existence at the end of the war, and the result would be little more than a catalogue of dates and figures. Therefore this article lays no claim to be a strictly accurate account of all the changes which took place in the artillery of the Canadian Corps, but attempts to give the reader a general idea of its development from the original First Divisional Artillery to the final growth which it had attained at the end of the war, and also to give some idea of the work done by the gunners, a work which is all too little appreciated, especially in the case of the field artillery.

The field artillery at the end of the war was organized into five divisional artilleries and one army brigade. Each divisional artillery consisted of two brigades and a divisional ammunition column, and each brigade had three batteries of six 18-pounder guns each and one battery of six 4.5-inch howitzers. The divisional artillery was attached directly to each infantry division for administration and as much as possible for operations, but frequently for operations was lent to some other division, not always a Canadian one. The Fifth Divisional Artillery and the Eighth Army Brigade were used wherever they were most needed, in and outside of the Canadian Corps. Thus the organization and growth of the artillery kept pace with that of the remainder of the corps and grew not only to four but to five divisions.

The First Divisional Artillery was formed chiefly from the militia artillery of Eastern Canada, although both Winnipeg and Victoria sent large and extremely well trained detachments to Valcartier. The militia batteries in 1914 consisted entirely of four-gun batteries and at Valcartier were without howitzers. The various four-gun batteries were there combined to form six-gun batteries, of which there were three brigades of three batteries each to a division. These brigades were the 1st, largely from the vicinity of Ottawa; the 2nd, largely from Montreal; and the 3rd, largely from Toronto. There was also the 1st Heavy

Battery, originally from Montreal, but at Valcartier it absorbed a large number of men from the heavy batteries (chiefly of St. John) in the Maritime Provinces. Such was the organization which sailed, fully equipped with guns and horses and over strength in officers and men, from Gaspé Basin in September, 1914.

In England the four-gun batteries were again formed, and three brigades of four four-gun batteries each, together with the Heavy Battery, sailed from Bristol on the 10th of February, 1915, and arrived at St. Nazaire some days later after a stormy and most unpleasant voyage through the Bay of Biscay.

The First Divisional Artillery has the distinction, of which it is particularly proud, of being the only division of the Canadian Corps which went to France as a complete fighting division. The only thing lacking was howitzers, and as these were not available an English howitzer brigade was attached to them until they got howitzers of their own; but apart from this they were from the moment of their arrival a complete division, and entirely self-supporting in every respect. The 2nd Division brought out one brigade, the remainder of their artillery following about three months later. The Third Divisional Artillery arrived in the winter of 1917, after the formation of the division from new battalions and various C.M.R. and other units, which were already in France. The Fourth Divisional Artillery was formed when the brigades were reorganized into six-gun batteries, but with only two brigades to each division. The Fifth Divisional Artillery came out complete in itself, but without any infantry for it to support.

Now, although the artillery is considered an arm of the Service, and takes the right of the line, and is in every sense of the word a combatant corps, it is the infantry who win battles; the sole object of all firearms is to enable the man with the bayonet to accomplish his work, and all other things are subordinate to that. During the war far too much was said of artillery winning this, that, and the other thing. The gunner is the first man to say that alone he can do nothing; without the protection of the infantry a battery is almost as helpless as a hospital. The field artillery had their task, the heavies had theirs, and both these tasks in their ultimate object were identical; namely, to help the infantry defeat the German infantry. The German gunners were doing the same thing; and, even when back areas were shelled or when batteries shelled each other, the primary object might be to hit a cross-road or destroy a battery, but the ultimate object was to prevent the enemy from using that cross-road in bringing supplies and relief to their infantry which was actually engaged, or to deny them the support of the battery of which the destruction was attempted. Thus the whole object of all the artillery was to support its infantry in every possible way, and the better it accomplished this task the more efficient it was, even though the rôle might not be an inspiring or spectacular one.

The protection of the infantry was the first consideration of a battery in any position. In the more or less permanent positions of trench warfare this was highly organized and what were known as S.O.S. lines were carefully laid out and frequently tested, and were handed over with each relief. When an advance had been made on any portion of the front, even before the infantry had finally consolidated their new position, a temporary S.O.S. line for their protection was always the first consideration from the moment the first objective was reached. As nearly all these advances were made wholly under the protection of a barrage, the final resting-point of the barrage was generally the S.O.S. line. In the later stages of open warfare an S.O.S. line was always arranged as soon as the advancing infantry halted, even if the advance was to be resumed in a few hours. This was not always an easy or simple thing to do, but invariably some attempt to do it was made.

The S.O.S. consisted of a sort of continuous curtain of fire laid down in front of our own trenches, so that any advance which was made would have to pass through this fire, its object being to stop the enemy altogether, or to make their casualties so heavy that the infantry would have no difficulty in beating off an attack which did succeed in reaching our trenches. In a trench position each gun had its own particular line of fire, this being arranged by the batteries. A divisional area would have its front split into zones, each zone allotted to some particular brigade supporting that division; each brigade then divided its zone and allotted a particular portion to each battery in the brigade and each battery split its area up among its guns. The concentration of this protective barrage varied with the nature of the ground and the importance at the time of a particular sector of the front. On some sectors a gun might have twenty-five or more yards to cover, on others ten or fifteen, or less. In addition to this protection afforded by the 18-pounders, the howitzers and the heavies had their own tasks to perform, such as firing at trench junctions and cross-roads, counter-battery work, and so on.

This protective fire could be called for by the infantry whenever it was required to repel an attack in force or a raiding party. All guns, when not actually engaged in some other firing, were kept laid on their S.O.S. lines, and if being used at the time when an S.O.S. was called for they immediately switched back to the S.O.S. lines. The signal for this fire was given in different ways, generally by coloured rockets fired in various combinations, which were changed at frequent intervals. The signal was always confirmed by telephone as well, for fear it might not have been seen or that a mistake might have been made. A definite rate of fire was laid down, varying with the calibre of the gun, such a rate as would give the maximum of fire without causing the gun to cverheat and jam the breech in consequence.

The S.O.S. barrage was the only carefully arranged purely defensive measure adopted by the field artillery; all its other tasks were offensive. Of its offensive rôles in a trench-warfare front, the harassing fire and sniping were probably the most extensively employed, coupled with frequent destructive shots undertaken by the heavies. The sniping done by detached guns was probably the most effective.

Nearly every battery had one gun or a section of two guns in some position in advance of and some distance from its main position. This gun did almost all the firing for that particular battery, so as to give the minimum chance of having the main battery position accurately located by the enemy. During the day sniping was the method employed to harass and inconvenience the Germans, and it proved most effective. Every observation post kept the hostile territory in front of it under close watch all the time, and anything that moved within reach of the sniping gun was promptly fired at. In the great majority of cases no casualties were inflicted, but there were very few cases where the people fired at were not forced to run for cover and not to expose themselves again. Occasionally a gun was lucky and the men sniped at became casualties. When the great length of front is taken into consideration, and the fact that sniping went on everywhere, the sum total of casualties inflicted in this way must have been very large indeed. However, it was of value mainly on account of its moral effect on the enemy. Living too much in deep trenches and travelling too much in deep communication trenches, has a most destructive effect on the *moral* of troops. By vigorous sniping it was quite possible to have the enemy so cowed that not a living

BRIG.-GEN. W. B. M. KING, C.M.G., D.S.O.

soul would dare show his head above ground during the hours of daylight, except very far back. In some cases, when the people opposite were of a cautious nature, although the sniping guns at the best could fire only five thousand yards behind the enemy front line, yet no one would expose himself under seven or eight thousand.

At Hill 70 the military value of sniping was clearly shown. In the autumn of 1917 the Canadians were in that sector and kept up a vigorous sniping policy, so that after dawn it was seldom that any of the enemy could be seen above ground anywhere within reach. However, late in the autumn the Canadians went forth to Passchendaele, and the Hill 70 sector was then taken over by a division which did not carry out sniping tactics to nearly the same extent. When the Canadian Corps returned to the Lens area after their successful operations at Passchendaele, the Germans had become extremely bold and walked all over the back area quite openly during the day, but as soon as the vigorous sniping started again the old condition returned and in a little over a week it was possible to sit for hours in an observation post without sighting any object against which to direct the guns.

Harassing fire was somewhat different in its nature, although its object was the same — to lower the enemy's *moral* and inflict casualties. This was carried out chiefly at night and the laying of the gun was done entirely by measurements from the map. A definite number of rounds were allotted to each battery to be fired during the night, and these were fired at various intervals at selected targets, generally cross-roads much used by the enemy or junctions of important cross-country tracks and similar places, which were likely to be used at night when the chances were good of hitting something. In any case, the very fact that a shell was likely to land close to a certain spot at any time made it a very unpleasant thing to linger around there and, if this place were one it was necessary for the enemy to use, the harassing fire must have had a very bad effect. The number of signs of warning found after an advance was a fairly good indication of the general effectiveness of our harassing fire.

The barrage was probably the method of fire in which the close co-operation between the artillery and the infantry was most clearly shown. This method of employing artillery was not actually a product of the Great World War, but was certainly developed and organized and perfected during its progress. In former wars an infantry battalion might have in front of it a sort of rolling barrage, consisting of the controlled fire of a brigade, but the fire of the guns of a whole army working to a fixed time-table and on a concerted plan was not seriously thought of. That, however, is what a barrage consists of.

This rolling barrage, or creeping barrage, is a curtain of fire arranged with heavies in depth as in an S.O.S. barrage, but it moves forward over the country at a definite rate and a definite distance, the rates of fire being laid down for each section of the barrage and for each " rest." As far as the fire of the 18-pounders is concerned, this forms a curtain which moves forward as nearly as possible at the same pace as the infantry, and the infantry get as close to it as they can without actually getting in the beaten area. In this way it is used to keep the enemy under cover until the last possible moment, and if the infantry are sufficiently close to the barrage they should be on top of the foe before he has time to get his machine guns into action after the barrage has lifted. In the early stages of the war the lifts were generally from the first to the second line, from the second to the third line, and so on, but this was not found satisfactory. The Germans became past-masters of the shell-hole defence scheme; that is, little pockets of men with machine guns who lay in defended shell holes between the various lines of defence and escaped in the "lifts." The machine gunners were frequently able to smash an attack very badly before it had really properly developed. This necessitated some change in the method of protective fire during an attack and the ultimate result was the rolling barrage of the latter part of the war. In this way the whole country was shelled and the shell-hole defence rendered much less effective.

The task of co-ordinating and arranging the various stages of a barrage and the various calibres of the guns involves an enormous amount of labour and would require a very technical explanation which cannot be undertaken here and which, indeed, would be out of place anywhere but in an artillery text-book. It will be enough to merely indicate what this means just in a battery. A separate range, angle of sight, and angle from the zero line must be worked out and tabulated for each gun and for each lift in the barrage; the fuze must be worked out for each gun and each change of fuze. It is impossible in the noise that is going on to pass orders with any degree of accuracy and so all this has to be worked out for each gun and given to the N.C.O. in charge of the gun. In addition, the officers must have tables showing all the guns, so that they can check them when possible. All the watches must be accurately synchronized with the divisional time, so that every gun and all the infantry of the division will be working together at the same second. Moreover, opportunities must be found when there is a "rest" in the barrage or when the rate of fire is slow to take the guns out of action in turn and cool them.

Another job of the gunners which must be mentioned is the slow, tiresome process of cutting wire. In a trench position, before any attack, it is always necessary to have the wire in front of the opposing trench cut, and this task generally fell, in part at least, to the 18-pounders. It was not a job much sought after. In the first place, it generally meant very close shooting, so that an occasional shot would land in or behind our trench, which always naturally greatly annoyed the infantry, but the only thing to do was to grin and take the abuse; explanations made them, if anything, more irascible. In the second place, it was generally very difficult to find an observation post from which the wire to be cut could be seen advantageously. When one was found it was as often as not in the most inaccessible place and necessitated a long line of special telephone wire being laid to it, but this wire was frequently cut. In the third place, the Divisional Headquarters, with their usual consideration, gave far too little time, and only about half the rounds necessary, to do the job properly, so that it was done in a rush and many rounds spent from the precious reserve which every battery commander perjured himself and forged documents to build up.

This task, after a suitable place for observing the wire was found and the extra telephone job completed, started off by careful registering on the wire. The registration could not be called satisfactory until a group of eight rounds had been laid down — four over and four short of the exact point registered on. The laying, needless to say, had to be done with the most painstaking care. Once the registration was satisfactory (provided the telephone was still all right, which was frequently not the case), the gun proceeded to fire at a definite point in the wire with a low-bursting fuze, so that the full forward sweep of the shrapnel bullets would cut the wire and roll it up. The gun would gradually shift a little off, necessitating bringing it back on again; the range or fuze was constantly changing and would have to be corrected. After hours of work and a great deal of very annoying shooting, with luck, the wire might be cut. It was extraordinary how badly some guns seemed to act on wire-cutting. One round might appear to be just right; a second might be as effective. A group of four is ordered, and the nearest to the wire will be one hundred yards away. Sixteen rounds or more might be tried before the gun gets on again, only once more to lose its target. There seems to be no explanation and everyone's experience is the same. Another day, the same gun crew with the same gun will get on in a few rounds and never go off again and the job will be finished while the man in charge of the gun next in line is still cursing his hard luck and has not had three decent bursts since he started. Telephones, too, have the same peculiarity. Just as you want to send down a message or stop a group that you know will be ineffective, the line goes out and you are left helpless. However, when one takes into consideration the enormous amount of wire-cutting done in France and the few failures, the efficiency of the field artillery in this work can be appreciated.

This recital of the various uses of the field artillery in the trench-warfare stages is somewhat dull, but unless the matter is understood much that has been said, and will be said, about artillery in the past and in the future will not be fully comprehended or appreciated. The tasks of the artillery required the greatest care and patience and were often very fatiguing, without bringing the men the excitement and glory of an advance. For example, night harassing fire was very hard on a gun crew, especially if, as often happened, they were called on for some duties the next day, and yet nobody could claim that there was anything inspiring or heroic about it. Wire-cutting often meant a whole day, or several days in succession, of the most painstaking and monotonous kind of slow firing. It was useful, essential work, but no one has ever shown much appreciation for wire-cutting. Barrage work and S.O.S. were different. There was an immediate and easily seen object for it. If the advance was successful or the enemy beaten off by the gunners' response to the S.O.S., everyone shared in the general jubilation and the artillery was not forgotten.

Probably one of the best ways to explain the method by which the artillery fought is to outline the average way in which a battery took over the position of another battery in a trench-warfare position. The procedure followed was not always exactly the same; for example, sometimes guns were handed over and sometimes they were not; the relief was generally made on two successive nights, but occasionally, for some reason, the whole battery was relieved at once. However, if the usual relief toward the latter part of the war, when relief came to be largely a matter of routine, is taken as an example, it will give a fairly accurate general idea of the work involved in the change of position of a battery.

A party always proceeded a day ahead and all that was possible was done to complete arrangements for guides. The position and accommodations were looked over, the observation post was visited, and the general system of communication examined. In the meantime some of the party had been arranging the taking over of the wagon lines. The second night, just after dark (I am considering the case where guns are taken over), the relieving section arrived with sights for the guns, small stores, and kits, and proceeded to take over from the incoming section. This was generally a fairly simple matter, as most battery commanders found it convenient to send personnel on only the first night, and as few wagons and horses as possible.

The next day the new crew guns were "shot in." When guns were not taken over, but each crew came in with its own gun, this was generally quite a long business, although every possible attempt was made to get them on the line of the outgoing guns. However, even with a change of sights only, the sights vary slightly and as a precautionary measure the new crews fire on their zero line to test the sights and guns. The zero line is a line drawn from the battery through a conspicuous and easily located target. It is very accurately registered, as after its exact line has been found and the angles from the aiming point recorded and the aiming posts carefully laid out, every switch, even to the S.O.S. line, is measured from this zero line. Thus it is essential that when the gun is dead on line, the line through the aiming posts should read zero on the sight. If it does not, the sight is set at zero and the aiming posts moved until they are in line with the cross-wires of the sight.

The next night the main relief took place. The battery had spent the day in billets close to the wagon line of the outgoing battery, and when they pulled out they left their guns behind them. The actual party going on the guns generally arranged so as to arrive at their destination early enough to let the outgoing battery reach their billets at as reasonable an hour as possible. The actual relief at the guns took place much the same as before, except that four guns were relieved instead of two, and the telephone communication was taken over and the command of the battery passed. At the wagon lines, all that could, moved without waiting for the party from the guns. They left behind sufficient transport and horses to bring along the rest of the battery. The incoming battery then took over the new wagon lines and the outgoing battery picked up the guns which were left behind by the battery which had just gone into action. The next day the new arrivals "shot in" the remaining four guns.

After a relief of any kind there was always a great deal of work to be done. No two battery commanders had exactly the same idea about the best way to build a position, and consequently the incoming battery always made changes, and in many cases improvements. The same thing took place at the wagon lines.

Many people envied the artillery their horses on a long march, but overlooked the fact that horses needed much care. During a long march the men had to walk to save the horses, and then on arrival in billets the first consideration was not the man, but the horse. Before anyone could think of food or rest, horse lines must be put up, harness put away, the animals watered and fed, so that very often, when artillery and infantry arrived in a village at the same time, the infantryman was fed and settled down in his billet long before the less fortunate gunner had finished helping the drivers with their horses. On marches the feeding and watering of horses very often became a serious problem. The number of instruments, the amount of telephone wire, and the quantity of maps and records which had to be carried by a battery increased enormously during the war, but the transport available did not keep pace with it. Consequently it was often difficult to carry the forage, and all sorts of devices were tried, — the footboard of a wagon body, or the top of the body itself, was, I think, on the whole the most satisfactory. Again, on a march occupying several days, at many of the halts the water facilities were very poor and only a few horses could be watered at places a long distance from the actual lines of the unit.

One of the most remarkable developments of the war was the great increase in the care and accuracy with which field artillery was fired. Devices were introduced and factors taken into account which before the war, and during its early stages, were looked on as almost the exclusive concern of garrison artillery and the experimental range. One of the first factors, which had previously been ignored, to be taken into account was the correction for the ''error of the day.'' This had always been calculated for garrison work, but the field artillery had paid little attention to it. However, with the introduction of trench warfare and the close shooting necessary, it became quite apparent that no precaution which would give increased accuracy could be overlooked. The "error of the day" is the variation from the map range caused by the atmospheric conditions. The correction, put on the gun, is added to or subtracted from the map range as the case may be, and is a result obtained from several factors; namely, the temperature of the air, the temperature of the charge, the barometric pressure, and the wind. In the instructions received in England in the autumn of 1914 we were told: "At night cock her up another fifty yards or so for safety's sake, and if the wind is against you, you had better add a bit too." If anyone had proposed such a thing at the same time of year in 1916 the medical officer would have been sent for. Telegrams were sent to every unit six times a day giving the temperature for various times of flight of shell, the velocity and direction of the wind, and the barometric pressure. It was from this information that the "error of the day" was arrived at and corrected as it gradually changed.

The error of each gun soon came to be considered also. A worn gun does not shoot as far as a new one, and so must be corrected, consequently each gun as it becomes worn will have an error peculiar to itself. At first, in a gun which was somewhat old, allowance was made for its age; this result was a sort of combination of guess and experiment, and might or might not apply in all positions. It certainly would not apply at all ranges. However, once the "error of the day" could be found with accuracy, then, by shooting, the range at which that gun ought to hit a target on that day could be found. By a calculation the muzzle velocity of the shell could be arrived at. This was invariably done, and from this the error at all ranges established, and this error was painted on the shield of the gun. It was quite a common thing, when a battery was firing at, say, six thousand yards, for not a single gun in the battery to have that range on the range drum, yet all guns would be hitting the target. In 1918 the finding of the muzzle velocity, or calibration, as it is called, was no longer done by shooting at a distant target, which at best was a somewhat long, expensive, and possibly inaccurate way. The muzzle velocity could be found by firing at very close range through electrically connected wire screens, and this method gave absolutely accurate results.

A third consideration, which was not quite so necessary before the war, was the type of ammunition fired. With the introduction of N.C.T. as a propellant as well as cordite, this had to be taken into consideration in calculating the ''error of the day.'' In addition to this, as more types of shells came into use many of these had to have special allowances made for them. When the war broke out there was the one type of 18-pounder shrapnel shell in use, with the rarely used ''star'' shell. But, as the war progressed, a high-explosive shell was introduced, of slightly different weight, and also a different type of fuze, which had to be allowed for. Then there came the number eighty-five fuze and the number eighty brass fuze, the gas shell, the cast-iron and brass fuzes for high-explosive shells, the one-hundred-and-eight instantaneous fuze, the incendiary shell, and the smoke shell. Some of these could be fired with the same range as the ordinary 18-pounder shrapnel shell, but many of them had their own corrections. In addition to this, the field howitzers had their troubles. Their shells were not always of the same weight, and over-weight and under-weight shells had to be allowed for; also a new type of driving-band was put on the shells, and the old and new driving-bands did not give exactly the same range; this, too, had to be allowed for.

All these requirements, which used to be practically ignored, except for experimental purposes, may be said to be a development caused by the nature of the fighting in this war. It can easily be seen that night firing would be extremely ineffective if all the various sources of error mentioned were not carefully allowed for and we "just cocked her up another fifty yards or so for safety's sake" at night. The creeping barrage would not have been the extremely effective weapon it was had it not been for the great degree of accuracy attained. The protective S.O.S. when we were shooting very close to our own trenches rendered it imperative that some way be found to prevent that fire being wild at the very moment when it should be most accurate, and of necessity this led to every conceivable source of error being sought out, and, as far as was humanly possible, eliminated. Thus as the infantry fighting changed from open to trench warfare and back to open again, so the artillery improved their methods and developed their aim so that at all times they were able to give to the infantry what they were there to give them — their protection and support.

The development of the heavy artillery was even more remarkable than the growth of the field artillery. Before the war Canada had a few heavy batteries and a little garrison artillery, but in the nature of mobile siege weapons nothing larger than a 60-pounder was available. The 1st Division arrived in France with one 60-pounder battery. At the end of the war there were with the Canadians two 60-pounder batteries, eight 6-inch howitzer batteries, two 8-inch howitzers, and two 9.2-inch howitzer batteries. In addition to this remarkable growth of the actual number of batteries, the growth of the transport involved must be considered. The Canadian Corps Heavy Artillery fired an enormous amount of ammunition, and as a great deal of heavy ammunition cannot be carried in one lorry, this expansion in the heavy artillery meant a corresponding expansion in the mechanical transport.

It was chiefly in the case of the heavy artillery that the co-operation between aircraft and artillery was most useful. With the shorter range of the 18-pounder there are not so very many targets which cannot be seen and so aeroplane observation is not so necessary; also the small burst of an 18-pounder is very difficult to see from the air and consequently there is not so much chance of an observer obtaining a really satisfactory result in the great majority of cases. But the heavy gun has the advantage of a conspicuous burst and furthermore its great range enables it to hit a large number of targets which cannot be seen from any point in its lines. For these reasons every effort was made to bring co-operation between the aircraft and the heavy artillery to as high a state of perfection as possible. The results achieved were excellent. The gun was on its target in a very few rounds, and a complete record of the ''fire for effect'' was obtained. In 1918 the squadron commander of one of the squadrons doing artillery work (Major Portal) conducted a very successful shoot by moonlight — a feat which, I venture to say, was unthought of early in the war.

Probably the most remarkable feature of the Canadian Corps Heavy Artillery was the counter-battery work. In no corps of the British Army was this feature so fully developed as in the Canadian Corps. Counter-battery fire is, as its name implies, fire against hostile batteries, but much more is involved than appears on the surface. In the first place, there are destructive shots against definitely located hostile batteries; then there is simply harassing fire against the batteries, with the intention, naturally, of doing as much damage as possible, but not necessarily of destroying the battery; then there is the neutralizing fire against a hostile battery in action.

In the first case a hostile battery is selected for destruction. The whole shoot is almost always observed, either by aeroplane or some other good means of get-

SIXTY-POUNDERS IN ACTION

LOADING A BIG GUN

Canadian Official Photographs

ting accurate results. Photographs are taken, both before and after the shoot, and carefully examined to make sure the results are satisfactory. In this case ammunition is no object; the whole battery is concentrated on one hostile gun and fired until the observer considers that gun to have been satisfactorily dealt with. The fire is then shifted to the next emplacement, and so on until the most complete destruction possible has been done.

In the second case the shooting may be observed or not. If it is not, then the results cannot be known. In the case of observed shooting, the battery firing registers accurately and then proceeds with bursts of fire, "for effect." The aeroplane gives general reports on the bursts and small corrections are made from these reports. In this case the number of rounds is always limited, and, while it is hoped that as much destruction as possible will be done in these bursts of fire, the number of rounds to be fired is set arbitrarily and is not governed by the result attained.

Lastly, there is the fire used to silence a hostile battery in action. Elaborate methods were worked out for the reporting of hostile batteries and as soon as there was any firing on our front the offending battery was located. At the counter-battery office at Corps the position and calibre of every hostile battery was known, and as soon as shells of a certain size were coming over it could be told by the direction of the sound which battery was the offending one. Immediately one or more of our batteries were turned on it, and if possible observation from an aeroplane secured. This fire was not destructive in the strict sense of the word, as the expenditure of ammunition was not governed by the amount of destruction done, but by the number of rounds required to stop the fire of a hostile battery. A definite number of rounds was generally fired on each call for fire of this sort, but this number was repeated until the offending battery had ceased fire and no further reports of its activity were coming in. So complete was the organization at the Canadian counter-battery office for this kind of work, that it was no uncommon thing for a counter-battery shoot to start in less than ten minutes after a hostile battery was reported in action. This is remarkable when one takes into consideration the fact that the report had to travel back to headquarters from the forward area, — even with field telephones, not an easy thing, — the offending battery had to be spotted, the battery selected which could most effectively deal with it, and the orders given to this battery, — all before the battery could be brought into action. If this were done in approximately ten minutes, it meant that at the counter-battery office the minimum of time was taken for its share in the work.

The outstanding feature of the employment of the heavy artillery of the Canadian Corps was the counter-battery work, and the credit for the highly developed state of this work must go to Brigadier-General A. G. L. MacNaughton, who organized and developed the counter-battery office at Canadian Corps Headquarters. As has been said before, no other corps had such effective machinery for employing its heavy artillery in robbing the enemy of the effective use of his artillery, and all this machinery was created by General MacNaughton. For each battery a crime sheet was prepared, which gave its position, the targets which it generally shelled, the number of rounds it fired, a complete and accurate history of its various offences, the time of each offence, and also the various punishments meted out to it. The means used to locate these offending batteries were many and varied; aeroplanes and photographs were most useful, but not always infallible. Sound-ranging instruments, which located the battery by the sound waves caused by its firing, were most effective under favourable conditions and were extraordinarily accurate. The intersection of flashes was of much value, and sometimes a battery was spotted by direct observation on the ground.

In the barrage and before an attack heavy artillery was used to bombard strong points against which field artillery would be absolutely ineffective, — for example, a concrete pill-box, which would stand a lot of pounding from even the heaviest shells. A shell from a field gun would simply bounce off anything of that nature. The heavies were used, also, against likely assembly areas of the enemy. When used in this way they were fired with an instantaneous fuze. This fuze goes off on contact and the shell does not penetrate the ground at all. It thus has a most deadly effect, as the pieces travel sideways and fairly low, and are in no way smothered by the earth as when the slower fuze is used and there is penetration before the explosion. It is estimated that a 12-inch shell fired with an instantaneous fuze can be effective a thousand yards from the burst.

Like the infantry, the artillery had its particularly risky jobs, or "suicide clubs," and the artillery's "suicide clubs" were the trench mortars. The trench mortars are a creation of this war and grew from a subaltern with whatever weapons and numbers of men the powers that be chose to give him to a definite organization with a definite number of guns of a definite make. In the first winter of the war, experimenting began, and until the conflict ended new devices were being experimented with and old ones improved. The light trench mortars were manned by the infantry, the medium (6-inch) by the artillery, and the heavy (9.45-inch) by the artillery. As their name implies, they are essentially a trench weapon and are fought from pits close to the line and deal with the enemy's front-line systems. They are most effective against hostile trench mortars and enemy machine-gun emplacements, and the medium trench mortar is an effective wire-cutter. The heavy trench mortars had a most destructive effect, and when used against trenches and new work must have been a great annoyance to the enemy. It is not a pleasant thing for a battalion to have had a big working party engaged all night on an important job, only to have a heavy trench mortar destroy the whole thing next day in about fifteen minutes. While trench mortars were primarily a trench weapon, experiments were constantly being carried out with various kinds of sleighs and carts whereby they could be used for the close support of infantry in an attack. Trench mortars in lorries at Amiens were on one occasion very useful. They assisted the French to capture Mézières, and later gave them much-needed support; but such cases were not numerous, and no way has yet been found of making trench mortars an effective weapon for open warfare.

Purposely nothing has been said about the field artillery in open warfare. This is for two reasons — first, the greatest changes and improvements took place in and applied mostly to trench-warfare methods; secondly, for over four years the Canadian Field Artillery were engaged in trench fighting, whereas for barely four months they were employed in open or semi-open warfare. This does not mean that open warfare was by any means a secondary consideration, for that is what both sides had been striving to attain from the first day trench warfare set in, and in all training that object was always before the artillerists. One thing must be mentioned. When open warfare started, the most successful batteries were those that adhered the closest to the principles laid down in the pre-war artillery training; namely, Field Artillery Training, 1914.

In the later stages of the war most attacks started with a barrage, and one battery, or separate section, were sent forward at zero hour to follow the infantry and give close support. The battery or section took no part in the barrage. At the completion of the barrage the remainder of the guns got forward as soon as possible to give additional support, or to fire a new barrage if necessary.

The effectiveness of the guns in close support depended largely on the co-operation with the infantry. The artillery officer could not wait to be told his targets by the infantry, who had other things to do, and much information he had to find out for himself as best he could if his support was to be effective. On the other hand, frequently the infantry would ignore the artillery with them and not pass on information which might easily have been passed on, and information which might have proved very useful indeed. There was one case when a battery was accused of not being on the job because it failed to take on a machine gun which was holding the flank of the battalion the battery was supporting. As a matter of fact, the battery was firing at targets which the battery commander considered good ones, and the company commander, whose company was suffering, instead of attempting to get word of the situation to the artillery officer, sat down and cursed all the artillery in the world. Fortunately incidents of this sort were very rare, and on the whole in the latter stages of the war the co-operation of the artillery and infantry was excellent.

All this somewhat scattered information has not been given with a view to telling the imposing tale of war battles, but to give the ordinary reader, who has not had the opportunity of working with or seeing the artillery work, some idea of the various tasks they were called on to perform, and how they did them. They were at all times subordinate to the infantry, and while this war has perhaps made artillery support increasingly important, nevertheless it was an auxiliary arm, and always will be an auxiliary arm.

The infantry win battles, and the artillery try to help.

No article on the artillery of the Canadian Corps would be complete without a reference to Major-General Sir Edward Morrison. It was under General Morrison's guidance that it grew most rapidly and finally attained its full growth. It was under him that the siege artillery of the corps came into existence, and while he may not have given the artillery its pugnacious spirit, nevertheless in their leader the gunners saw that spirit fully exemplified. He fought for his men and he saw to it that his men fought for him, and as a thorough Hun-hater there were few like him. Under General Morrison's leadership the Canadian Artillery fully lived up to the gunmen's motto, *''Quo fas et gloria ducunt.''*

2. Operations on the Western Front

It is difficult to give in a clear manner an account of the operations of any particular arm of the Service without going into details as to the work of the other arms and chronicling the whole progress of events; yet, to understand the work of any one arm properly, an account of its activities, as distinct from the others, is necessary. In the following pages, therefore, there will be attempted a brief outline of the operations of the Canadian Artillery from the landing of the first guns in France in February, 1915, until the signing of the Armistice in November, 1918, three years and a half, in which there was not a day on which at least some units of the Canadian Artillery were not in the line.

The First Divisional Artillery went into the line about March 1st, 1915, in the vicinity of Fleurbaix, a short distance north of the scene of the Battle of Neuve Chapelle. While not actively engaged in this battle, every battery fired what was for those days a

Canadian Official Photograph

MAJOR L. C. GOODEVE, D.S.O. BRIG.-GEN. C. H. MACLAREN, C.M.G., D.S.O.

MAJ.-GEN. SIR E. W. B. MORRISON, K.C.M.G., C.B., D.S.O.

THE MASTER-GUNNER AND TWO OF HIS OFFICERS

large amount of ammunition and kept up an appearance of great activity.[1] The Canadian Artillery were on the northern flank of the attack, and near Lille, and had the Imperials succeeded in their attempt to break through the German trench system they were to be among the first troops to advance. Although on the 10th of March they were fully prepared to make a dash for Lille, the much-looked-for order never came and they quickly settled down to the old policy of watching and saving ammunition. The First Divisional Artillery remained at Fleurbaix for a month and then moved north into Belgium.

After a short rest they again went into the line in the Ypres Salient, taking over from the French, and were soon in the thick of one of the most critical engagements of the war. On the 22nd of April, 1915, began the first real "show" the Canadians were in.[2] The story of the Second Battle of Ypres is far too well known to need repetition here, but, even with all the accounts that have been given of it, none of them give any adequate impression of the awful confusion of the first two days. By marvels of hard work and ingenuity a good supply of ammunition for the guns was kept up. At times, it is true, batteries did run short, but such a state of affairs did not at any time last very long, and for the most part the guns of all batteries were continuously in action. The confusion of the first night defies description. To add to the difficulties, there was a relief going on at the time, — some of the batteries of the 1st Brigade, which were out at rest, were coming into the line, and batteries of the 1st and 2nd Brigades were going out; thus some of the batteries had a section of one and a section of another, with officers and men strangers to each other at a critical time when smooth working was most essential. It must not be imagined that there was any friction, but, at the same time, two strange sections, moving in the dark with the roads crowded with other batteries and wagons, infantry and ambulances, mixed in a gigantic sort of stew, find it much more difficult to keep together than a whole battery where everyone knows everyone else, and even voices can be recognized in the dark.

---

[1] See Vol. III, p. 44.
[2] See Vol. III, p. 128 et seq.

To detail the work done by individual batteries on this critical occasion is out of the question. Each battery had its own troubles and each battery did its job efficiently. The position of some batteries perhaps called for more spectacular work than others, but no one battery can be said to have done better than any other. The first night all the batteries of the 3rd Brigade were forced to retire in the dark and without any definite information as to where their line was, or where the enemy were. There was fortunately practically no shelling of the roads during the greater part of the night, although in their search for a new position some batteries came under machine-gun and rifle fire. By daybreak on the 23rd of April every battery was in action. The batteries at rest had come in on the western bank of the Ypres-Dixmude Canal; the batteries on the east side of the canal were still there, the 3rd Brigade in new positions, but the other batteries in their old ones.

Some of the positions occupied during the night were in plain view of the enemy and these the batteries were forced to vacate. Heavy firing continued throughout the day, but the evening of the 23rd found matters much as they were in the early morning. The Germans began to advance again on the 24th, this time attacking on the Canadian front, and before evening all the batteries had been forced to retire to near St. Jean, where they remained until the general withdrawal from the end of the salient, when most of the batteries withdrew behind the canals at Ypres.

During this period, until near the end of April, the

Ammunition Columns had very hard work. All the ammunition had to be hauled long distances by wagon, and this was not an easy job. The roads were badly shelled and the demands of the batteries insatiable. Great credit is due to the Brigade Ammunition Columns that there was at no time a serious shortage in any of the batteries, although at times a battery was out of action for a few minutes.

After the general withdrawal there was a period of comparative inaction, but about the end of May the Canadians moved south to Festubert to take part in an attack there.[1] The fighting was very heavy, but consisted mostly of hand-to-hand engagements by the infantry, and except for protective barrages the artillery took very little part.

Early in June a further move south was made to La Bassée Canal, where an attack towards La Bassée was made on the 15th of June, just one hundred years after the Battle of Waterloo. This attack proved a total failure. For the first time the Canadian Artillery had guns in the front line for special tasks.[2] These guns were taken in at night and remained hidden until five minutes before the infantry went over. One hundred rounds had been dumped by each gun and when the time came they opened up at close range on their allotted targets. The guns of the 2nd Brigade were not used for various reasons, but all those of the 1st Brigade were fired and, from all the information which could be gathered, proved very successful.

A few days after this "show" the whole division moved north again to Hill 63, between Ypres and Armentières. This proved to be a very quiet spot, and here they remained until the spring of 1916, when they moved north once more to the southwest of Ypres, where the 2nd Division, which had arrived in the winter, were in action. The Canadian Heavy Battery had been in action at Loos during the attack in September and had done very well indeed.[1]

---

[1] See Vol. III, p. 155 et seq.
[2] See Vol. III, pp. 187-189.

The Canadian front was not specially active until the 2nd of June, 1916, when the Germans suddenly attacked the C.M.R.'s just south of Hooge. They penetrated through Sanctuary Wood and advanced altogether about six hundred yards. The 1st Division counter-attacked that night and held up the advance, and on the 14th counter-attacked again, restoring the old line. This meant a very active period for the guns. All the batteries were in the line, and even after the 14th there was great activity and hard work until late in July, after the Somme offensive was well started. At Sanctuary Wood the 1st Division had two guns in a forward position about five hundred yards from the front line. These guns, under Lieutenant Charles P. Cotton, put up a magnificent fight.[2] They were eventually captured, only one man of the two crews getting out alive, but on the counter-attack they were recaptured in their own positions, as the Germans had been unable to get them out.

In the latter part of August and early in September the move to the Somme took place and the Canadian Artillery went into the show. The whole of the artillery was in and did not get any rest until the entire corps pulled out and moved north again. The Battle of the Somme was particularly hard on observing officers. Some went forward on every advance and few came back. The enemy had not yet developed his persistent back-area shelling as fully as he did later on, so the actual battery positions were comparatively unmolested, but his attention to the forward areas, where the observation posts were situated, left nothing to be desired in its thoroughness. He also gave the plank roads a fair amount of attention and the job of bringing up ammunition and rations was difficult and hazardous. The Somme really marked the beginning of the full employment of artillery as it was known later in the war. The concentration of guns was greater than had ever before been attempted, the rolling barrage made its first appearance as such, and an absolutely unprecedented amount of ammunition was fired.

---

[1] See Vol. III, p. 222.

[2] See Vol. III, p. 264.

After the Somme, the corps moved north to a position near Bully Grenay, and the divisions went out in turn to rest, until March, when it moved into the Vimy Ridge section to prepare for the Battle of Vimy Ridge. A great many Imperial batteries were placed under the G.O.C., R.A., of the corps for this attack, the total number of guns being 848, the greatest number that at any one time supported any corps. There were 45,760 artillery personnel, the equivalent of more than two (in fact almost three) infantry divisions.

The heavy and continuous firing during the attack of April 9th, 1917,[1] turned No Man's Land and all the forward area in the German lines into a sea of mud, so that after the enemy's front line was smashed battery after battery was stuck in the mud and unable to advance. The Germans had retired for several miles, and it was a bitter disappointment not to be able to follow up to a greater extent this successful attack. The work of getting the guns through the mud baffles description. Hours of work resulted in the advance of a few yards; roads were non-existent, and, to add to the churned-up condition of the ground, it was intersected in all directions by deep trenches and barbed wire.

The Battle of Vimy Ridge was followed by a period of very great activity, which meant particularly hard work for the gunners. Long after the real advance was abandoned and the actual strength in guns considerably reduced, it had to be made to appear as if further attacks were probable. This led to some very bitter local fighting and much shelling. None of the batteries got out to rest for some time and every battery had a great deal of hard work to do, with many short moves to make.

---

[1] See Vol. IV, p. 133 et seq.

After the Vimy show two of the Canadian divisions, supported by all the Canadian Artillery, attacked Hill 70.[1] Four hundred and sixty-six guns and 25,520 artillery personnel were used for this attack, which took place in August, 1917. The fighting, although on a narrow front, was most bitter and the enemy counter-attacked unceasingly, so that S.O.S. calls were without number. It was at this fight that the gunners of the 1st Division so distinguished themselves by removing their gas masks in order to see properly and, while it resulted in a successful S.O.S., it caused many gas casualties in the division. To the low ground behind Hill 70, where gas was most effective, the foe sent over an enormous number of gas shells, but never succeeded in putting the guns out of action. It did, however, add greatly to the difficulties of the gunners and caused a very large number of casualties in all batteries in that area. Although the fight at Hill 70 was not on a wide front and did not result in a gain of great depth, it resulted in some of the bitterest fighting of the war, fighting in which the artillery did their full share.

The corps remained in this area until moved north in November to attack Passchendaele. This was beyond a doubt the worst ordeal of the war for the artillery. Every battery was in all the time, and the conditions defy description. The front lines were so vague and uncertain that most of the shelling consisted of area shots over areas where batteries were likely to be, and in the concentration of artillery there was not an area where a battery could not be found. The Canadian Corps Artillery, 587 guns and 32,755 personnel, alone fired over two million shells in thirty days. Trench tramways were non-existent and the plank roads were the only roads, so all ammunition had to be taken in by pack-mule. The ground was so wet that brushwood wrapped in chicken wire had to be used for platforms or the guns would sink out of sight. The building of any sort of shelter was absolutely impossible. Everybody had to crowd into the nearest available pill-box, often with inches of water on the floor of it, and very seldom with room enough to stand erect. Even at wagon lines rest at night was, at best, a poor thing, excepting when torrential rains temporarily caused hostilities to cease. The wagon-line areas and all the roads were nightly subjected to severe and continuous bombing. For pure, unadulterated misery I do not think Passchendaele has ever been equalled.

---

[1] See Vol. IV, p. 180 et seq.

After Passchendaele the corps moved south again and held the line in the Vimy sector. There was little activity of note during the winter. Each division got out to rest for a time and, as the whole sector was filled with old battery positions, not much work was needed there. However, in anticipation of the enemy's spring offensive, every battery had to build three positions in rear for the defence of lines already prepared.

On the 21st of March the long-expected German attack began and immediately the Canadian Artillery were on the move. From a gunner's point of view, events were most confusing. They were pulled out of the line in a hurry, sent south, brought part way back, made wait, and moved again. Eventually all divisions were in the line over a very extended front. After the Battle of the Lys began on the 11th of April the front was still further extended. A very aggressive attitude was maintained, which involved very hard fighting on the part of the artillery. For protective work each battery had an unusually wide zone for so important an area and, as numerous raids were carried out, with a wide distribution of the guns, it meant that all gun pits had to be built so as to allow for a large switch. The extended zone covered also called for very great vigilance on the part of the forward observing officers, whose task, never an easy one, became all the harder. Shoots were being constantly carried out, particularly by the heavy artillery, and there were numerous gas-projector attacks accompanied by an artillery barrage. During this period the Canadians were not actually called on to meet an attack, but, nevertheless, it was a strenuous time, and when the corps went out for a rest early in May everyone felt that it had been well earned.

The period of rest was spent in training for offensive operations in open and semi-open warfare. It was a welcome change from continual trench work and, although a certain amount of such training was done on all periods of rest, never before had there been such a long period on a training area where batteries could manœuvre without afterwards facing a long bill for damages to crops.

Early in June the Canadian Artillery went back into the line, where they remained till pulled out unexpectedly and sent to an unknown area. This proved to be just south of Amiens, and work began at once for an attack. The artillery were all kept under cover in woods and no movement of any sort was allowed by day. It was very fortunate that at this critical time the weather was misty and that the German machines could not get over to observe, for the water facilities necessary for such a large number of horses were absolutely non-existent, and in most cases the horses had to be taken for miles across the open to be watered.

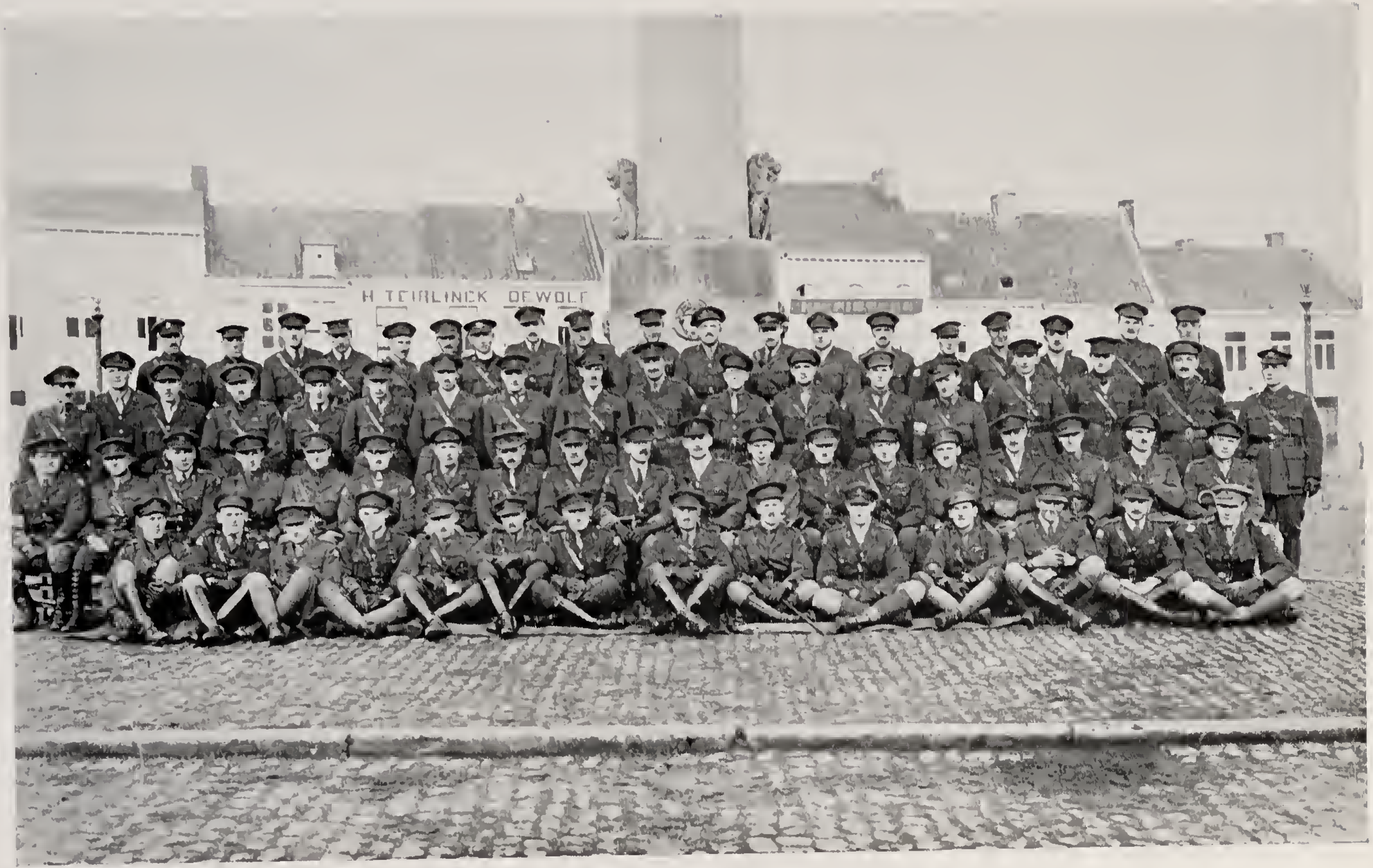
Every night was spent in taking ammunition up and dumping it at the new battery positions, for which no previous preparation had been made. Owing to the short time allowed for preparation, all units had to get supplies forward, with the result that the roads were jammed with traffic all night long. It sometimes took an hour to move a few hundred yards, and it was only because of the very skilful handling of the traffic and the most rigid enforcement of traffic regulations that vehicles were able to move at all.

At 4.20 a.m. on the morning of the 8th of August the attack began under cover of a very severe barrage. None of the guns had been registered, in fact they had come into position only the night before, but, as a result of the very careful way in which the angles and ranges were worked out, the barrage was most successful. The guns of the two advancing divisions moved forward at once and as the attack progressed it became very much a case of each battery for itself. Exact information was, of course, out of the question with the situation changing so rapidly, but each brigade and battery commander struggled to keep in touch with the infantry and tried to use his guns to the best possible advantage. When the infantry had occupied the German lines a party of gunners went forward to turn captured guns around and use them against the retreating foe. They met with great success and did some very useful work indeed.

When the advance stopped at night the usual precautions were taken and S.O.S. lines arranged for, and preparations made to continue the attack the next day. Substantial advances were made on the 9th and 10th of August, but after that fighting became more local and consisted of small advances by individual units and brigades. The enemy were now in the old trench area and began to put up a strong resistance, so the situation rapidly came to resemble the old trench-warfare days of settled and protected battery positions.

On August 17th the corps began to move north. The heavy artillery remained in the Amiens area for some days, but by the 26th of August the whole corps was ready for the attack which eventually resulted in the capture of Cambrai. The area in front of Arras, where the attack began, abounded in trenches and barbed wire, so that a rapid advance as at Amiens was out of the question; consequently no batteries moved forward at the zero hour, but as the advance progressed beyond the range of the barrage they got forward as best they could over much-cut-up roads. The enemy fought very tenaciously and, in field batteries in particular, put up a wonderful resistance. Many batteries remained in action in exposed positions, firing over open sights, until all the gunners were knocked out. Some exceptionally good targets presented themselves, as the Germans used lorries to bring up machine gunners very close to the front, and many batteries fired on them over open sights and did some very effective shooting. The main battle lasted for two days, and after that there were many local encounters, the more important undertaken with a hastily arranged barrage, until the attack on the Drocourt-Quéant Switch Line on September 2nd. The enemy made frequent counter-attacks, and the artillery had many S.O.S. barrages to fire, and besides strained every nerve to get up sufficient ammunition for the attack on the 2nd. In addition there was a great deal of wire-cutting to be done.

The attack on the Drocourt-Quéant Switch Line met with great success in its earlier stages. Some of the batteries went forward with the infantry and began a vigorous fire over open sights. The remaining batteries moved forward very soon after the attack began and most of them found good targets to shoot at and did effective execution among the German troops, finally forcing them to beat a hurried retreat. The next day there was very little advance made, although most of the batteries took the opportunity to move into better positions than the hastily selected ones of the night before. The enemy's artillery appeared to



Canadian Official Photograph

OFFICERS OF THE 9TH AND 10TH BRIGADES, C.F.A.

be very strong and he used an enormous number of gas shells against the battery positions, which made conditions very unpleasant, to say the least. He also used long-range guns on the wagon lines when he could locate them, and kept up intense bombing at night.

During September everyone got out for a short rest and refit, and the batteries in the line were very active at sniping and harassing fire.

The attack on the Canal du Nord took place on September 27th. In most cases the barrage had to be kept up to a great depth, so that guns had to go very far forward indeed. This meant that the positions had to be occupied the night immediately preceding the attack, and the barrage fired without registration. The batteries of the 3rd and 4th Divisions had to advance into captured ground during the barrage and continue it from there. There was very hard fighting until the 3rd of October and many counter-attacks were made by the Germans. All our attacks were made under a barrage and the work of getting up the necessary ammunition was enormous.

The attack was renewed on the 8th of October by the Third Army, but the Canadian Artillery carried out a demonstration, and the next day the corps attacked at 1.30 a.m. in a dense downpour of rain. There was the same hard and bitter fighting until the 11th of October. At this time the corps took over a front facing the flooded region north of the area over which so much of the heavy fighting had taken place. There was no general infantry action, but numerous offensive patrols were sent out and in many places the line slightly advanced. Every day barrages were fired to test the enemy's strength by his return fire. On the 17th of October it was very feeble and a general advance was started. The advance continued almost without fighting until the 25th of October. The batteries followed the infantry closely, but were not needed, as the enemy put up no resistance. The chief difficulty was blown-up bridges and mined cross-roads. All mounted units were held up by these and much time and labour were spent filling in the holes in the road to make them passable, or constructing temporary bridges to replace those destroyed. The heavy artillery, for the most part, could not keep up with the advance. Some 6-inch howitzers and 60-pounders were available for the attack on Valenciennes, but the heaviest guns were left behind.

On November 1st the advance was resumed. The 3rd and 4th Divisions attacked under a heavy barrage and captured Valenciennes. After this, progress was slow but steady, the enemy putting up at times a fair resistance, except on the 9th of November, when a large advance was made. The artillery was called on to a certain extent, but no regular barrages were fired. Owing to the presence of the civilian population the guns could not be used freely and these operations were confined to points where the enemy were clearly stationed in strength.

November 10th brought the corps to the outskirts of Mons, which was captured on the morning of November 11th without an artillery preparation. Most of the batteries were out of range by this time, but a few, who could do so with safety to our own troops and to the civilians, fired their last shot in the Great World War at 10.59 a.m. on November 11th, 1918.

CHAPTER II

THE CANADIAN ENGINEERS

1. Introductory

A STUDY of early history reveals the fact that the primary task of the engineers was, as it is now, the work of maintaining communications and the construction and destruction of field defences. Hannibal's engineers built a famous road over the Alps, and two centuries later Caesar's engineers constructed magnificent military roads and bridges, one bridge, worthy of special mention, being thrown across the Rhine. In modern times the work of the engineers has been augmented by the introduction of more modern conditions of warfare and also by the larger armies in the field. During the South African War the necessity of communications was a vital feature and considerable work was done in road, bridge, and railway construction. In addition blockhouses had to be built and extensive accommodation provided for the troops and also for hospital patients.

In the Great World War vast armies were in the field and the maintenance of lines of communication was vitally necessary to their mobility and success. In the first instance the troops and supplies had to be brought forward from the base, and the railways of France and Belgium were unable to cope with the traffic. This led to the development of the 60-c.m. light railways. Bridges had to be constructed, not only for horse transport, but to carry as well the new weapon of warfare, the "tank," the largest weighing thirty-seven tons. Horse transport tracks had to be provided in order to give close access to the units and supply points; infantry tracks were made to facilitate the proper assembling of the troops. The vital necessity of water compelled the construction of large pumping stations and reservoirs. The development of trench warfare and the masses of artillery employed involved very elaborate and extensive systems of defence. The driving and sinking of tunnels, mines, and deep dug-outs are more advanced stages of this work. Operations were on a large scale, speedy communication and close co-operation between units widely separated being essential to success; this resulted in a high development of the Signal Services. The advent of the aeroplane gave observation over the enemy territory; this rendered imperative the concealment of defensive works and weapons or, as it is generally known, "camouflage." The work of the engineers may therefore be defined as follows:—

The purpose of engineers is to apply engineering science to the emergencies of modern warfare, in order to protect and assist the troops to ameliorate the conditions under which they are serving and to facilitate locomotion and communication.

In the following pages a short general account is given of the activities, in the various branches of work, of the engineering units with the Canadian Corps. No mention is made of the invaluable work of the Canadian Forestry Companies and Railway Troops,[1] as they were not with the corps. The article closes with a brief account of the organization of the Engineer Services and a list of the units.

2. The Activities of the Engineers

Roads and Tracks. From dusk until dawn the roads in the forward area were crowded with a mass of transport of all descriptions, rendering repair work very slow and difficult. During the day small parties of sappers endeavoured to keep these roads passable; no easy undertaking in the rainy season. This season, in the Ypres sector, was supposed to last ''eighteen'' months in the year; certainly the mud was ever present. Cross-country tracks were constructed to keep horse traffic off the main roads, but were only of use in the dry weather. These were often run along the side of main roads and served a very useful purpose in relieving traffic congestion.

---

[1] See Vol. V, pp. 300-326.

Conditions varied considerably, but at the Battles of Vimy Ridge and Passchendaele a severe strain was thrown on the engineering resources. This was especially the case during the Passchendaele operations, where only one main lateral road served the area. Large working parties of engineers, together with infantry and labour units, were employed continuously doing the necessary work under severe shell-fire and exposed to the most trying conditions. During the Battle of Amiens conditions were different; the attack was a complete surprise, the weather of the best, and the area comparatively clear of shell holes and trenches. Early on the morning of the advance, Staff cars, guns, wagons, and ambulances proceeded down the Amiens-Roye road on the heels of the attacking troops. These were all able to cut across country without any fear of being mired. Definite horse traffic routes were staked out and freely marked with signs. In the advances following the Battle of Arras of August, 1918, more difficulty was experienced. Large craters were blown at most of the cross-roads, usually by the detonation of a series of trench-mortar bombs. Detachments of sappers proceeded forward with the advancing infantry in order to search for these mines and, if possible, withdraw the charges. Many of these were set especially to destroy tanks. They consisted of a number of bombs with percussion caps and a plank across the top covered with a loose layer of earth or sod. During the Canal du Nord attack, the first tank to go over one of the dry canal crossings west of Inchy detonated one of these mines. Another tank came to the rescue and quickly hauled out the damaged one and the large crater was soon bridged and temporarily filled by the sapper party detailed to maintain this crossing. Considerable difficulty was met with where overhead railway crossings or arches were demolished and dropped on the road. In most cases a traffic diversion was made until a clear fairway was effected.

One marked feature of the roads was the clear way in which they were sign-posted. Prior to the attack sign-boards were painted at the R.E. Parks and every cross-road was clearly marked. On entering a village from any direction, the name could usually be seen on a wall or gable of the first house, and direction signs were painted on the walls throughout. These signs were painted low in order to catch the light from the headlights of cars and lorries.

On account of the narrowness of many of the roads, and to avoid traffic blocks, these had to be limited to "one-way traffic" and regular traffic circuit maps were issued to all drivers.

During an operation, special parties from the engineer units proceeded forward with the attacking troops, examined the ground for road mines and did temporary repairs. Other parties followed up and maintained the roads. In the rear the work was done by the labour companies under the direction of the D.A.D. Roads, an Imperial Army officer attached to the Canadian Corps Staff.

For the period from the 26th of August, 1918, to the 11th of November, 1918, that is, during the advance from the Arras front to Mons, the following road programme was completed:—

773 miles of road repaired and maintained for lorry traffic.

292 miles of dry-weather tracks constructed.

Bridges. It was only during the last hundred days of the war that there was really any extensive bridging activity, in many ways the most interesting phase of engineering work. Certainly the sapper was at his best and happiest when on a job of this nature. The country between Arras and Mons was freely intersected by the canal system of Northern France, viz. Canal du Nord, Canal de la Sensée, Canal de l'Escaut, and Canal de Conde. The water was from ninety to one hundred feet wide and the bridges constructed varied in length from one hundred to one hundred and ninety feet. In addition numerous rivers had to be crossed and also bridges constructed for high-level railway crossings. Between the 26th of August and the 11th of November, 1918, over two hundred bridges were constructed by the Canadian Corps; of these, eighty-six were for heavy traffic.

Valuable data regarding the bridges existing before the war had been compiled by General Headquarters and issued in book form. This was supplemented by information from the local inhabitants and also by aerial reconnaissance and photographs. In addition very valuable knowledge as to the condition of these structures was obtained from daring investigations carried out by engineer officers and men.

Bridging problems were very numerous and varied and were greatly complicated by the thorough demolition which had been carried out. Not only were the bridges destroyed, but large craters were blown in the approach roads, and these had to be repaired and filled in before the lorry transport with heavy bridging material could proceed to the bridge site. It was also necessary to construct these heavy bridges on, or close to, the site of the original structure; otherwise a traffic diversion had to be made, with consequent loss of time. This fact was known to the enemy and inevitably resulted in a heavy and sustained bombardment of the site.

The bridging work was usually divided into three phases, viz.: —

1st. Crossing for infantry.
2nd. Crossing for 1st line transport, i.e. field guns, horse transport, etc.
3rd. Heavy bridges to take tanks, the 6-inch naval gun, lorries, etc.

Infantry Crossings. Many different expedients were resorted to in order to ensure the speedy passage of the infantry. The rivers were seldom sufficiently deep or wide to present a serious obstacle, but this was not the case with the canals. The crossing of the latter was effected by the use of cork pier bridges. Slabs of cork, sufficient to give the necessary buoyancy, were baled together with wire netting and formed the piers. These were connected at eight-foot intervals by two light wooden stringers across which slats were nailed. The bridges so formed took infantry in single file.

The German foot-bridge was somewhat similar in construction, with the exception that hollow sheet-iron cylinders were used to give the buoyancy. The main feature in their favour was their portability; but they were easily punctured by shell splinters and sunk, a thing that frequently occurred.

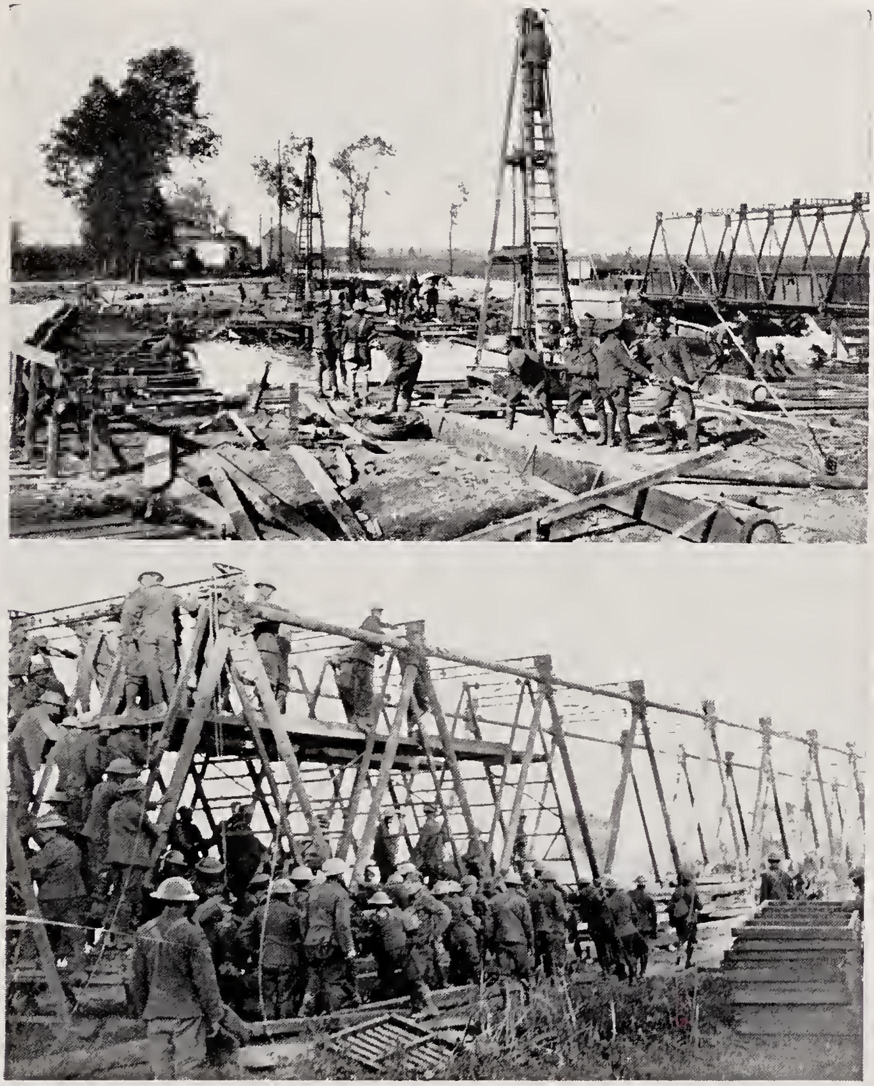
In many cases it was possible to effect a crossing over the damaged bridge structure or at the lock gates. A fair amount of success was met with by ferrying the troops across in collapsible boats; these were canvas-covered and easily man-handled.

Crossings for 1st Line Transport. It was essential to make provision for the early passage of the guns and wheeled vehicles of the fighting troops, and much success was met with in the use of the pontoons and trestles carried by the Pontoon Bridging Transport Units, of the Divisional Engineers. The sappers had all been well trained in the handling of this equipment, and under very adverse conditions constructed medium pontoon and trestle bridges over the canals in rapid time. During one of the advances pontoon bridges were constructed over the Canal de la Sensée. The Germans, however, had control over the locks and drained the canal in the captured area. This move, although unforeseen, was speedily noticed, and the maintenance party erected a new Weldon trestle bridge before any interruption in traffic took place. These pontoon and trestle bridges were speedily replaced by more permanent structures. The equipment was loaded on the trestle wagons and moved forward in preparation for the next advance. The great feature of the pontoon bridging equipment was its mobility and also the speed with which a bridge could be constructed. Ordinary timber trestle spans or crib pier bridges were also built where the conditions did not permit of the use of pontoons. In many cases temporary repairs were quickly made to structures which had not been entirely demolished.

Heavy Bridging. The problems confronting the engineers in this direction were greatly added to by the introduction of the tanks. The first tanks weighed thirty tons; then the new Mark 5 Tank, weighing thirty-seven tons and requiring a clear roadway of fourteen feet six inches, came into use. The next load, in point of seriousness, was the 6-inch Mark 7 Gun with an axle load of seventeen tons. Naturally all the heavy bridges could not be constructed to take care of these excessive loads, as time and material were very precious. The most suitable crossings were therefore selected and every bridge was clearly marked as to its carrying capacity. The tank and artillery units were advised in order to avoid confusion.

A number of standard-span portable bridges, varying in span from sixteen to eighty-five feet, were stored at the base depots. These bridges consisted of loose members and were bolted with machine-turned bolts. They were, however, very cumbersome, and this rendered their erection slow. The weight was another disadvantage, e.g. the eighty-five-foot span was a single-way bridge and weighed sixty-three tons. Fortunately a new bridge, called the "Inglis Portable Military Bridge, Rectangular Type," had been invented by Captain Inglis, R.E., and was adopted by the British Army. This bridge was the Warren girder type and was composed of a number of identical bays, each twelve feet long, twelve feet high, and twelve feet wide. It was designed to carry a dead load of eighty-four tons distributed over a clear span of eighty-four feet. Each part could be easily manhandled and the span could vary in multiples of twelve feet, e.g. sixty feet, seventy-two feet, eighty-four feet, ninety-six feet, and one hundred and eight feet, to suit the gap. The bridge was built on blocks in skeleton form with a counterbalance arm and jacked up on to a two-wheeled trolley. It was then pushed over the gap, the counterbalance removed, then jacked down on the abutment, and the decking laid. On the 28th of September, 1918, a bridge of this type was erected complete over the Canal du Nord at Marquion in twelve and a half hours actual working time under severe shell-fire. A party of approximately two hundred sappers was employed on the construction of the bridge with the necessary approaches and abutments. The span was one hundred and eight feet clear and the safe distributed load fifty-one tons.

Owing to the scarcity of these bridges and their value in an offensive operation, it was necessary to start immediately on the construction of a more permanent structure. Deck bridges with trestle bents were usually substituted, but everything depended on the available material and the conditions. The Inglis bridge at Sains-lez-Marquion was replaced by filling in the canal with earth and forming a two-way plank road. This fill was done by a detachment of Canadian railway troops in record time.



BRIDGING THE CANAL DU NORD

Canadian Official Photographs

Most of the heavy bridges were of timber construction with I-beam stringers. Many valuable dumps of bridging material were captured and this supply greatly facilitated the work, both of temporary construction and replacements.

An official photograph shows the crossing of the Arras-Cambrai road over the Canal du Nord. On the right is the Inglis bridge erected during the advance and on the extreme left is the original pontoon bridge. A semi-permanent bridge is being constructed by an Army Troops Company of Canadian engineers, who are busy driving the piles for the piers.

The success of the Bourlon Wood operations depended, to a great extent, on the speed with which the Canal du Nord was bridged. It was decided to provide for seven infantry foot-bridges, ten crossings for guns and horse transport, and five crossings for heavy traffic. The east bank of the canal was held by the enemy and in some places they had outposts established on the west side. The river Agache ran parallel and close to the east bank of the canal and also had to be bridged after a crossing was effected. Special dumps of bridging material were, however, formed as far forward as possible and skilfully camouflaged. Prior to zero hour, 5.20 a.m., on the 27th of September, 1918, most of the roads and tracks were repaired well forward, in order to expedite the passage of the bridging convoys, which were all loaded up and ''standing to.'' Special engineer detachments went forward with the attacking infantry and soon had crossings completed. The first guns crossed the canal at 8 a.m. and other crossings were completed at various times during the day. The heavy bridging convoy for the Sains-lez-Marquion bridge consisted of twenty-four three-ton lorries and these reached the site at 2 p.m. The bridge was practically ready for launching before nightfall, but this was a hazardous operation and was delayed until daylight. The bridge span, one hundred and eight feet clear, was open for traffic early on the afternoon of the 28th of September. An attempt was made to get material forward for the Marquion bridge on the Arras-Cambrai road, but the situation here was not cleared up till the afternoon of the 27th. Owing to the scarcity of this special bridging material and to the fact that the site would be heavily shelled during the night, it was decided to delay erection until dawn of the 28th. This policy was fully justified and the bridge, as already stated, was erected in twelve and a half hours actual working time, a record performance.

Great commendation was given to the Canadian Engineers by the Commander-in-Chief and G.H.Q. for their unequalled record in bridging; the fighting troops, too, realized how much their efforts had to do with the speed of the advance.

Defences. The general policy concerning defences and their nature and siting was laid down by the Corps General Staff. The Chief Engineer had on his staff a field engineer in charge of defences, and these works were carried out by, or under the supervision of, the engineers.

In order to ensure defence in depth, all work in the forward area was carried out under the supervision of the Commanding Royal Engineers Division or, as he was later, the Officer Commanding Engineer Brigade. In the corps area the work came directly under the C.E.

Under the category of defences were included wiring, construction of trenches, deep dug-outs, gun and machine-gun emplacements, offensive and defensive mining, infantry subways, preparation of roads, bridges, railways, machinery for demolition, etc. Infantry and mule tracks had to be constructed, also deep dug-outs or protected accommodation for regimental aid posts, advanced dressing stations, and battalion, brigade, and divisional headquarters.

It was not until the Battle of the Somme in 1916 that deep dug-outs came to be extensively used. Large numbers had been constructed by the enemy, all having timbered entrances and chambers. These usually had from twenty to thirty feet of head cover and involved considerable work in construction.

The wiring of the forward system was done at night by infantry parties under sapper supervision and was a very unpopular job.

In addition to the defences in the forward area, provision had to be made in case of an enforced retirement. A study of the German successes in the early part of 1918 is sufficient evidence on this point. The most complete system of this nature was probably that of Vimy Ridge, where the defences were organized to a great depth. These consisted of successive and clearly defined defensive systems which were roughly parallel to the main front. These were linked together by ''switch lines'' sited to protect either flank. All of these systems were very strongly wired and protected by a series of machine-gun emplacements enfilading the wire. In addition a number of ''strong points'' were introduced at intervals; these formed part of the system and were stocked with ammunition, water, emergency rations, etc. Large numbers of trench signs were erected in order to minimize confusion and clearly establish the different systems.

These signs often afforded much amusement to visitors and usually were typical of the occupants, e.g. ''Canada,'' ''Ottawa,'' ''Vancouver,'' ''Regina.'' You could go along ''Piccadilly'' until you met ''Teddy Gerrard'' and on your way back take in ''Peggy.'' At the same time the nervous system suffered a severe shock when at intervals were discerned such signs as:—

HELL FIRE CORNER
NO LOITERING

SHRAPNEL CORNER
UNDER ENEMY OBSERVATION

SNIPER
KEEP LOW

The good weather of the early part of 1918 contributed to the success of the construction of these defences, and the following work was done in rear of the main front-line system:—

250 miles of trench dug.
300 miles of barbed-wire entanglements erected.
200 tunnelled machine-gun emplacements constructed.

The tramways, water supply, deep dug-outs, etc., all formed part of these works, but are dealt with elsewhere in this sketch.

Tunnelling and Mining. Very little is known of the extensive underground operations which were carried out, and the report that a mine was blown by our troops conveyed little impression to the ordinary reader. Yet, for months, continuous shifts of tunnellers were employed driving shafts, hauling the refuse to the surface, and disposing of it in such a manner as not to excite the enemy's suspicions. Not only was this the case, but battles were fought under as well as above ground. The enemy was also busy with his underground workings, and each was trying to gain the master position and blow in the other. The work of the tunneller was therefore no sinecure, and he toiled on, knowing that at any moment his gallery might be blown in. Very accurate information as to the level, direction, and vicinity of the enemy workings was given by trained miners who could detect the tapping from the face of their own shaft. Delicate instruments were also used to effect the same purpose.

The most extensive and ambitious work of this nature was carried out in the Ypres sector and culminated in the Battle of Messines in June, 1917. The attack opened at 3.10 a.m. on the morning of the 7th with the blowing of a series of large mines. The sight was a never-to-be-forgotten one; the terrific explosion and shock were instantaneously followed by immense jets of flame which rose to a height of from one hundred and fifty to two hundred feet. The mines were on a larger scale than had ever been attempted before and there was not a single failure. This was more remarkable owing to the fact that many of the charges were ready for firing many months previous. The success of this operation was an event in military history and clearly showed that, with the scientific application of skill, determination, and personal bravery, military mines of temporary construction could be made to meet tactical requirements after a considerable lapse of time, even in the most difficult ground. Large craters were found as a result of the blowing of these mines and some measured over three hundred feet in diameter and fifty feet deep.

A very important part in these operations was played by the three tunnelling companies of Canadian engineers who were engaged on mining work in this area during 1916 and 1917.

The mine under Hill 60 and the one under "The Caterpillar" serve as good examples of the large amount of work and labour involved and the magnitude of the quantity of explosive used. The charge for the former mine was fifty-four thousand pounds of ammonal at a vertical depth of ninety feet, while the latter one was seventy thousand pounds of ammonal at a depth of one hundred and ten feet. The charges were at the bottom of long inclined galleries and were loaded and tamped in October, 1916, i.e. eight months before they were blown. During the whole of this mining work the engineers were in instant touch with the enemy underground and operations were subjected to repeated counterblows. Conditions were very critical at times, and in one instance an enemy gallery was captured, which had penetrated one hundred feet inside our lines, at a depth of sixty feet.

In addition to the offensive and defensive mining, special detachments of tunnellers were attached to the infantry during operations. Their duty was to locate and remove enemy mines, to examine dug-outs for booby traps, etc.

Infantry saps and subways were constructed in order to give accommodation for troops and also to give protection and concealment while moving to forward positions. Battle headquarters had also to be constructed.

On the reorganization of the Canadian Engineers in 1918, two of the tunnelling companies were absorbed into the engineer battalions and the 3rd Tunnelling Company, C.E., alone retained its identity until the end of the war. These units seldom operated with the Canadian Corps, but came directly under the orders of the Army Controller of Mines.

Light Railways. The light railways constructed by the Canadian Corps on the Arras-Hill 70 front constituted the most complete forward system on the whole of the Western front. These were divided into two areas; viz. the army light railways, which were operated by steam motive power in the rear areas, and the corps tramways, which were operated by petrol engines in the forward areas. All the systems were linked together and connection was also established with the broad-gauge railheads. This resulted in a great saving in transportation and handling, and also in traffic on the roads. All the light railways in the corps forward area were constructed, operated, and maintained by the 1st and 2nd Tramway Companies, C.E., assisted by other engineer personnel in time of stress.

The two main junctions on the Vimy front were at Lens Junction and Aix Noulette, and over sixty-one miles of railway were operated. All traffic was controlled from these points, which were in telephone communication with the control stations established at intervals along the line. The whole was a very well organized system, and when it is considered that all the forward area traffic was done at night over heavily shelled areas, and that accidents were very infrequent, the situation may be better appreciated. Special repair gangs of tramway engineers were continuously patrolling, ballasting, repairing, and replacing the track.

Spur lines ran to battery positions and in this way ammunition was delivered direct to the guns. In the same manner rations and engineer stores were delivered to the various dumps. The battery spurs were usually camouflaged in daytime in order that the gun positions should not be visible to the enemy airmen.

An illustrative incident is recorded of an Imperial battery which was attached to the corps for an operation. On the day on which the guns were placed in position the Officer Commanding the battery was visited by a Canadian tramway officer, who asked how many rounds of ammunition he would like delivered *that night.* An order was placed with very little faith in the immediate delivery. Towards dusk a small gang of tramway engineers started on the construction of a spur line connecting with the battery and soon had this completed and ready for the petrol tractor, which arrived well before dawn with the full complement of ammunition. Here was "service" as applied to modern warfare.

The work of these tramway companies was not confined to supplies alone and the trains returning empty were used to bring in wounded personnel. Splendid results were obtained in this connection and many a wounded soldier was saved a rough ride or long stretcher carry over shell-torn roads.

A seriously wounded Canadian was brought into the dressing station in the basement of the factory at La Coulotte (near Lens) one day when the writer was there. The Medical Officer, after an examination, stated that his only hope of life was to be immediately taken to a casualty clearing station for an operation. Luckily, the light railways were in operation to this point, and by the time the casualty was put on the train a clear right of way had been established to Liévin. Here the train was met by a medical officer, the patient transferred to another train, and then rushed to the hospital.

Everything possible was being done to assist the troops, and it was decided to attempt to take a relieving brigade of infantry to the line by railway and to convey the outgoing troops to their rest billets. The experiment was a complete success and was put in operation whenever possible. In the same way reinforcements detrained at the railhead and transferred to light railways, which conveyed them to the wagon lines of their units. The troops were thus saved the fatigue of long marches.

In the spring of 1918 a leave train was run and about one hundred and fifty men were daily brought from the line by petrol tractor trains to Lens Junction. Here they transferred to steam tractor trains and were conveyed to the railhead, where they joined the regular leave trains for Boulogne, Calais, or Paris.

The value of the light railways in assisting in the projection of gas was inestimable. In these operations special spurs were constructed very far forward, in order that our own troops and defences should not suffer from the gas projection. Many attacks were launched on the enemy and on the night of the 22nd of March, 1918, over 4,500 gas cylinders were taken as far forward as possible by petrol tractor. They were then pushed to the end of the spurs by infantry parties and the gas projected.

During the Amiens operations nine captured metre-gauge steam locomotives were overhauled and, with thirty-five captured metre-gauge trucks, were removed under their own power to a place of safety.

Fortunately the German light railways had, in many cases, the same gauge as our own, viz. 60 c.m., and we were able to link up the two systems; where they were operating a metre-gauge the conversion to 60 c.m. was speedily made.

Remarkable results were achieved by the light railways in the Bourlon Wood operations of the 27th of September, 1918. Prior to the operation over three thousand tons of ammunition were being delivered daily to the advanced ammunition dumps and gun positions by the Canadian Corps Tramway Companies. The track was constructed very far forward, with the result that when the operation commenced the returning empty trains conveyed daily over one thousand wounded personnel to the broad-gauge railhead.

A study of the traffic figures for the period from the 1st of January to the 18th of November, 1918, will, however, give a better impression of the saving in road transportation effected.

NUMBER OF TONS MOVED

H.A.	F.A.	R.E. STORES	MISC.	TOTAL
73,134	107,694	64,088	239,306	484,222

Approximately half a million tons, when allowance is made for personnel conveyed.

The Supply of Water. The writer has a vivid recollection of a night during the Somme operations when he was in charge of a working party on the repair of the Courcelette road. A relief had taken place and the weary infantry were plodding their way back to Albert for a short spell of rest and quiet. Poor fellows, they were parched with thirst, and everywhere one was met with the query: "Say, Mac! got anything left in your water-bottle?" In this area the water supply situation was very serious; most of the civilian wells had been obliterated and many of those which were reclaimed were found to be contaminated and labelled by the engineers: "Water not fit for drinking."

The development of the water supply was a vital necessity, and when it is considered that provision had to be made for watering 100,000 to 160,000 men and 25,000 to 45,000 horses, the problem confronting the engineers may be better realized. In France and Belgium, especially in the battle zone, the main civilian source of water supply was from wells, and these existed in large numbers in all the villages. During an advance, many were found to be polluted, a favourite method of the enemy being to throw dead bodies in the wells.

The development of the water supply in the forward area was entrusted to sections from the Divisional Engineers. In the rear areas the system was more permanent and extensive and the work was carried out by the Army Troops Companies, C.E. This was especially so during an advance; but when the corps settled down in an area for any length of time, all water supply installations were put in by the A.T. Companies. This work was carried out under the supervision and orders of the Field Engineer, Water Supply, an officer on the staff of the Chief Engineer.

Many different methods were used for raising the water, each dependent on local conditions. The hand-power lift and force pump was used to pump from ponds or rivers into canvas water-troughs; the old-type windlass and bucket was repaired or erected over wells, and where these were of good capacity a chain helice or power pump was usually installed. These systems relieved the situation in the villages to a great extent; but the reserve and forward areas had to be supplied, and this involved the necessity of pipe line installations. Where local conditions did not permit of any other scheme, a bore was driven by one of the ''well-boring sections'' of the Royal Engineers. The water was then pumped through a 4-inch screw pipe main to the 50,000 gallon reservoirs. These reservoirs were interesting on account of the simplicity of construction. An excavation was made about eighty-five feet long, twenty-five feet wide, and five and a half feet deep, the sides being sloped at forty-five degrees, and a skeleton wooden frame constructed, to which was attached canvas tarpaulins. These reservoirs were built on the highest and most suitable ground in the vicinity, in order to obtain a good gravity feed to the numerous water supply points. Camouflage was erected over the reservoirs as the large expanse of water was most conspicuous from the air.

The pipe lines were continuously patrolled, and repairs effected by special repair gangs of engineers. A light covering of earth was usually thrown over the pipes in the summer months, but in the winter the pipes had to be sunk to a depth of three feet in order to have protection from the frost. Stand-pipes and water-bottle filler sets had to be wrapped with straw or boxed in manure. Under normal conditions, horses were watered three times daily, and as this was usually done at the same hour a great strain was thrown on the water supply. However, good standings were constructed with "IN" and "OUT" gates and wired in. These were under the charge of a control man, who was responsible for maintaining order. During an advance special detachments of Divisional Engineers proceeded forward with the attacking troops. Rapid tests of the available sources of water supply were made and these were labelled as to their fitness for consumption. Temporary water points were constructed to meet immediate requirements.

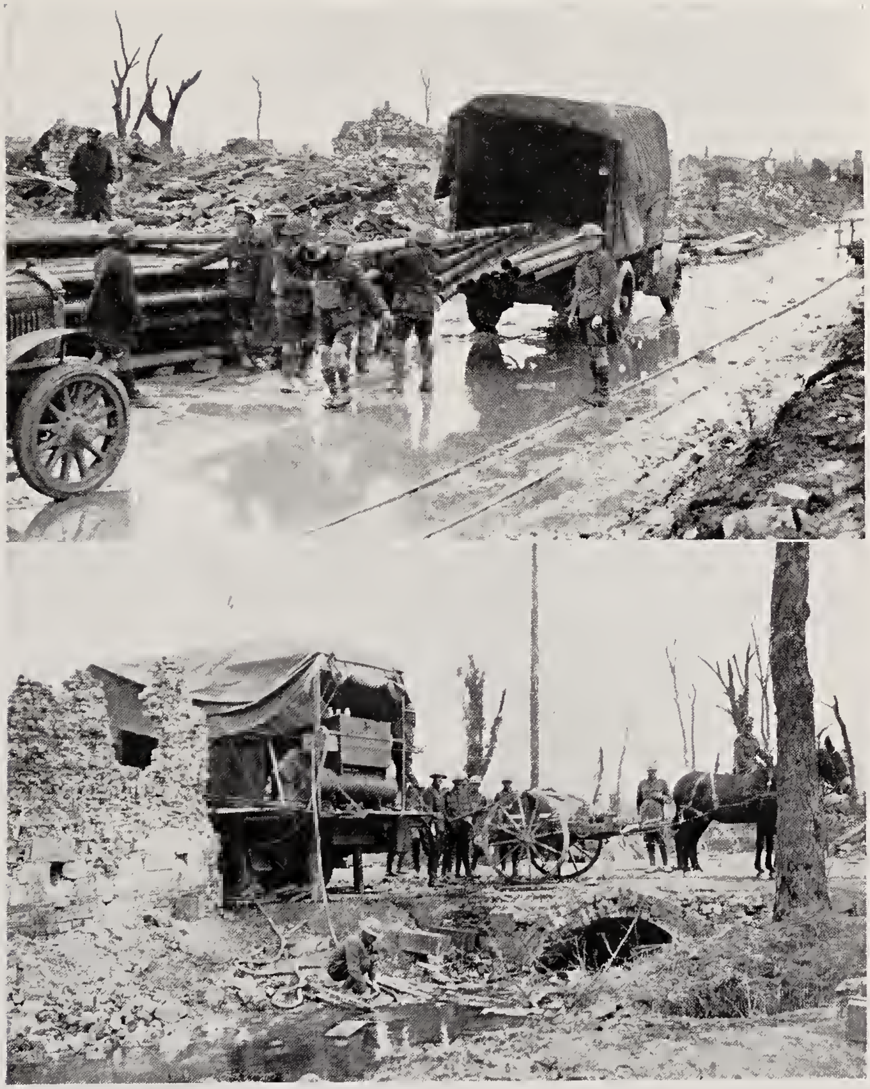
All the water used for consumption was chlorinated before use: this made it slightly unpalatable. During the advances of the corps several large German soda water factories were found and many large dumps of bottled soda water were captured: this seemed to be generally used by enemy troops.

In the advance of the latter half of 1918 other methods had to be devised. The deep penetration of our troops resulted in a move forward of larger masses of the corps personnel. To meet the demand, special water-tank companies were attached to the corps and came under the orders of the Chief Engineer. They were equipped with water-tanks fitted on motor chassis, and these were used to fill storage tanks which were placed at regular intervals along the sides of the roads. Special sterilizing lorries were also used to pump and sterilize water from the streams or other sources. These formed a very valuable asset and source of supply in the forward area during the advances.

As an instance of the work carried out by the Canadian Engineers, the following development of the water supply was done during the Battle of Arras. Twenty-two power pumping stations were established, having a total daily capacity of six hundred thousand gallons. Fifty-five thousand linear feet of water pipe were laid or reclaimed, and six thousand linear feet of horse-troughing constructed. About one hundred thousand gallons of water per day were obtained from wells which were repaired or reclaimed; about fifty thousand gallons of water per day were supplied from the sterilizing lorries; and about forty water storage points were kept filled by the water-tank lorries. These operations, it should be noted, extended from the 26th of August to the 3rd of September, 1918.

No Electrical and Mechanical Companies existed in the Canadian Corps and very valuable assistance was given by those units of the Australian and Royal Engineers.

A record of the water supply activities of the corps would not be complete without mention being made of the late Captain (Acting-Major) O. M. Stitt, M.C. This gallant and capable officer was field engineer in charge of water supply and was mortally wounded near Rosières on the 12th of August, 1918, while inspecting the forward water supply. He was conveyed



UNLOADING WATER MAINS
ENGINEERS STERILIZING WATER
CANADIAN ENGINEERS AT WORK

Canadian Official Photographs

to the casualty clearing station at the asylum, south of Amiens. No hope was given for his recovery and the Medical Officer said he would pass away in a few hours. The writer stayed by his bedside during the whole evening. He was semi-conscious most of the time, and continuously asked for water. He once said to me: "That water is nice and cool; does it come from a spring?" I said "Yes," and shortly after he asked where the spring was. Thinking to ease his mind, I said it was just outside the building. He thought for some time, then said: "That isn't right; there is no spring in the grounds here; the nearest one is one and a half miles away." In a few hours he passed away, but not before he had discussed the question of his successor and was satisfied that everything would be taken care of. Here was the true engineering spirit, active to the last; typical of this officer, who was exact to the smallest detail.

Accommodation. Consider for a moment a "moving city," with a population greater than that of Ottawa, the whole or part of which was liable to move at short notice. This involved the provision and erection of the necessary hutting for headquarters, officers, and men, and in winter the construction of standing and shelters for upwards of twenty-five thousand horses. The essential sanitary arrangements such as latrines, bathhouses, laundries, disinfectors, incinerators, etc., had to be provided, and the hundred-and-one things which were necessary to maintain this personnel in the field. In the forward area most of this accommodation was below ground, and the refuse from the excavation had to be removed, distributed, and camouflaged, in order to be screened from enemy observation. Arrangements had to be made for the reception and storage of the necessary supplies, e.g. rations and forage, ammunition, and stores.

During 1917 and 1918 aerial bombing increased to a tremendous extent and the rear and rest areas were the main targets on suitable evenings. Orders were issued by the Army that all sleeping quarters and horse lines had to be bomb-proofed. This involved the erection of breast-high earthworks, thus localizing the effect of bursting bombs. Similar provision had to be made at the ammunition dumps.

I wonder if there is any British soldier in France who has not slept in a Nissen hut. These huts were twenty-one feet six inches long, sixteen feet six inches wide, and semicircular in section, with corrugated iron roof and sectional wood ends, and were speedily erected by a few sappers. They were usually bunked to accommodate twenty-two soldiers and, of course, a stove. A "standing room only" sign was totally inadequate when reveille was sounded. These huts, however, served a very useful purpose; they were quickly constructed or dismantled, easily portable, and did not form a very marked target. The inventor, Mr. Nissen, was, I understand, a Canadian who was serving with the British Forces.

Camouflage. The increased demand for camouflage and the necessity for its use resulted in the Chief Engineer taking over all work of this nature from July, 1918. All gun positions, defensive works, headquarters, dumps, etc., had to be skilfully disguised from enemy observation. Many ingenious expedients were resorted to in order to effect this purpose. In the case of special work, detail sketches were made on the site and the general colour scheme decided on. The work was done at one of the camouflage parks of the Special Works Companies, R.E., under the direction of the corps camouflage officer. As an example of the value of this work, the following authentic instance is given.

In September, 1918, the Advance Headquarters of the Canadian Corps moved to an area between Neuville Vitasse and Wancourt. Quarters were taken up in dug-outs in the Old Hindenburg Line and a large number of huts were erected for officers, messes, garages, etc. The total personnel accommodated in this area would number approximately two hundred. On completion of the work a request was sent to the flying squadron attached to the corps, requesting an aerial photograph of the area. The exact map location of the camp was given. The first pilot returned with the information that he could find no trace of anything to photograph and a second trip resulted in a like report. The machines were flying low and crossed and recrossed over the site. After confirming the map location, a third trip was made and a series of photographs taken. It was almost impossible to detect anything from the prints and only one very familiar with the layout and the interpretation of aerial photographs could do so. The huts had been sunk into the sides of old trenches, sunken roads, or shell holes, and the whole camouflaged over. Everything was very skilfully assimilated with the local surroundings and no vertical faces were left to cast shadows.

During the Battle of Amiens over one hundred thousand square yards of camouflage material were issued and erected in the Canadian Corps Area. On the return of the corps to the Arras sector in the middle of August, 1918, the camouflage factory at Duisans was taken over. This enabled special camouflage material to be manufactured under direct supervision. Schemes were evolved for the camouflage of guns up to and including the 6-inch howitzer, in order to meet the requirements of these mobile guns. Real success was met with and a light camouflage cover was devised, which could be erected by four men, complete, in four minutes. This cover met with immediate approval and was adopted by other armies.

Engineer Stores. In order to meet the demand for all stores of an engineering description, Corps R.E. Parks were established at a suitable broad-gauge railhead. These parks were operated by Army Troops Companies, C.E., or by the P.B. Company, C.E. This latter unit was an artisan company formed of skilled tradesmen, who had either been casualties or were of low medical category.

In the early stages of the war it was possible to purchase stores locally, but the supply was soon depleted; as a consequence, the French authorities reserved any supplies which were left, and all purchases were prohibited. Careful estimates had, therefore, to be compiled and all material required requisitioned for six weeks in advance. These stores came through the regular army channels and were delivered to the corps parks in bulk. Here the allotment was made to the corps and divisional engineers and the material shipped forward by light railway, lorry, or wagon, to the advanced Corps R.E. Parks, Divisional R.E. Parks, and the advanced divisional, brigade, and battalion dumps. These engineering stores included cement, corrugated iron, roofing felt, steel joists and rails, posts and wire for entanglements, steel shelters, wire netting, expanded metal, hurdles, canvas and frames for revetting the trenches, bath mats, bricks, baths, ironmongery, timber of all sizes, electrical stores, mining and tunnelling stores, water pipes and fittings, pumps, stock span bridges, standard huts, and tools of every description.

At each of the Corps R.E. Parks workshops were established. Here timber was resawn to required dimensions and made up into standard designs for mining frames, revetting frames, bath mats, targets, sectional huts, and infantry, artillery, and trench bridges. In addition to the sawmills, well equipped plumber shops, machine shops, paint shops, blacksmith shops, and tinsmith shops were in full operation. Everything possible was done to produce articles which could be obtained from no other source, the primary object being to reduce the work at the advanced dumps. An instance of the work accomplished is worth quoting. Early in the winter of 1917 it was seen that the supply of stoves was far short of the requirements of the corps. A request was sent to each of the Canadian divisions for a nominal roll of all personnel who were tinsmiths by trade. These men were despatched to a Corps R.E. Park and started on the manufacture of the well known Quebec Heaters. A very large supply was quickly made, also the necessary stove pipes and fittings, and all the demands from the units were filled. The personnel of these parks was usually increased by detachments from the labour battalions, in order to distribute and load and unload the stores.

Great difficulty was met with in obtaining the necessary engineering stores for the Battle of Amiens. This operation was skilfully camouflaged and its extent known to only a few of the Higher Command. The result was that the Army and Corps R.E. Parks were not stocked to meet the excessive demands, and material had to be hauled from the base parks. Fortunately for the corps, the Canadian Engineers M.T. Company had been formed and its establishment of ninety-six lorries received. This unit rendered very valuable assistance from its formation in the summer of 1918. Had this transport not been available, the situation would have been a most difficult one. The following gives a list of the quantities of some of the stores drawn for the operation by the Canadian Corps: 1,500,000 sandbags, 36,000 shovels, 36,000 picks, 15,000 small coils of barbed wire, one train-load of two-and-a-half-inch hardwood slabs for plank roads, twenty tons of eight-inch and nine-inch cut spikes, seven hundred and twenty hammers, seven hundred and twenty hand-saws, six hundred hand-axes, six hundred felling-axes.

An attempt was made, in the battle referred to, to deliver urgent engineer stores by tank. One tank was allotted to each engineer brigade and, prior to the operation, loaded with bridging material, picks and shovels, wire, etc. But the experiment was not a success; the tanks were too slow and the material had to be transferred to the regular engineer trestle wagons. Had the newer and speedier tank been used, better results might have been achieved.

Signal Service. The development of signal communication was a very interesting feature of the war and an example of the march of progress. History recounts an important engagement during the South African War when an operation suffered through lack of support. This was owing to the fact that the sun was under a cloud all day — an almost unheard-of event at that time of year — and consequently there was no heliograph communication with the flanking units.

During the recent campaign many new instruments and methods came into use. Those generally adopted were telephones and telegraphs, wireless telegraphy, visual signalling, pigeon service, and despatch riders. Trench warfare, for signals, entailed complicated buried cable systems and permanent airline routes. This necessitated the employment of every available man on maintenance and operation. In this way all other methods had been eclipsed by the telephone, which was developed almost to perfection. Cables had to be buried to a depth of six feet at least, in order to be protected against shell-fire. In the forward area it was essential that every precaution be taken to prevent the enemy from picking up messages, even though sent in code; this purpose was effected by the use of the "Fuller Phone," a buzzer set which, by a simple contrivance, prevented enemy interception. Wireless came into use only during the last year of the war and the introduction of the "Continuous Wave Wireless" was a decided asset. This was extensively used during active operations for keeping in touch with special groups and also with the infantry and artillery brigades and divisions, when telephone communication was impossible or temporarily interrupted. When the corps were on the march into Germany the wireless was also in general use, especially when it was impossible to establish communication by connection with the civilian railway telegraph system.

The deep penetrations made by the British Army in 1918 resulted in a complete disorganization of the German communications. The enemy were forced to adopt wireless and the messages were intercepted by a special long-range set which was put in operation by the corps.

Another valuable introduction was the adoption of "loop wireless sets." These had a limited range of four thousand yards and could be speedily put in operation without the aid of skilled personnel. They were used to establish communication between forward units when all other means had been cut off owing to enemy bombardment.

During trench warfare one thousand pigeons were required for the Corps Pigeon Service. The birds were delivered to forward points by two despatch riders and taken into the trenches from these points by battalion and battery pigeoneers. In normal trench warfare about one hundred pigeons were sent forward daily and released after twenty-four hours' duty. About thirty special men had to be trained weekly as pigeoneers in order to maintain this service. These birds were of little use in open warfare, owing to the fact that they were unfamiliar with the ground and consequently lost considerable time in locating their lofts.

Great credit and praise must be given to the Despatch Rider Letter Service, whose work in the forward area was extremely difficult and hazardous owing to the crowded roads and heavy shell-fire. A great volume of this traffic was handled at night and had to be delivered to units whose location was ever changing. No lights could be carried, and the only address was of this description, "M 27 d 2.4," viz. a map reference. For the period from the 24th of August to the 1st of September inclusive, nine days, four regular runs were made daily, 153 special runs were made, and 19,526 despatches were carried of which sixty per cent. were registered.

The Corps Signal Company carried three portable 3-K.W. electric lighting sets and the Divisional Signal Companies one each. These were used to light the Corps and Divisional Headquarters. In addition each signal company was provided with a 1-K.W. set for charging accumulators.

A very extensive telephone service was established in the Vimy area, and, exclusive of battalion, brigade, battery, and other telephones, the Canadian Signals handed over to the relieving corps in May, 1918, when they came out to rest, 118 miles of six-foot buried cable routes averaging forty pairs per route, or 9,440 miles of armoured cable; 152 miles of airline routes averaging ten pairs per route, or 3,040 miles of open wire; eight miles of fifty pairs in mine galleries, or eight hundred miles of insulated cable.

As an example of the traffic through the Corps Headquarters Signal Office the following figures for the nine days, viz. August 24th to September 1st, 1918, are given:—

Urgent Operation Priority Messages	Telegrams			Special D.R.L.S.	Despatches
	Sent	Transmitted	Received		
281	8,658	27,486	7,684	153	19,526

A grand total of 63,788 messages, an average of over seven thousand per day.

One very interesting and useful feature of the Signal Service was the interception and police sets. These consisted of special instruments equipped with amplifiers and were used to collect information from messages and conversations passing over the enemy telegraph and telephone systems. They were also used to police our own system in order to regulate the traffic and so reduce to a minimum the amount of information intercepted by the enemy.

3. Special Canadian Engineer Units

Anti-Aircraft Searchlight Company, C.E. The company consisted of a headquarters and four sections of three 90-c.m. lights each. Each of these lights was mounted on a petrol electric lorry. This unit worked in conjunction with the other searchlight companies and anti-aircraft batteries in the area and came directly under the orders of the Army Director of Searchlights. The Canadian personnel were attached to the British units for instruction and soon mastered the principles of the game. Their record for the number of machines picked up as against the number of machines raiding our territory was a high one and received splendid commendation from the armies they operated with.

The sight during an enemy raid is a never-to-be-forgotten one. The intermittent drone peculiar to the German machines would be heard and the sky dotted and intersected with the beams of light. These would intersect each other and slowly sweep the heavens. Meantime flashes of light followed by faint reports told that the "Archies" were putting up their barrage. Suddenly the lights would all converge on one spot and the German machine could be seen, resembling a gorgeous silvery insect. Immediately the

"Archies" got to work in their endeavour to bring him down or drive him back. The pilot would frantically manœuvre his machine, but the beams were relentless. Often the cargo of bombs would be hastily unloaded and the lightened machine endeavour to return to its aerodrome. Sometimes the pilot would continue on his way and suddenly the rear area lights would come into action and pick up the machine from the forward lights which were going out of range. Again the machine might be seen to burst into flames and come tearing down to earth like some mighty meteor — one of our night defence machines had shot him down and added to the heavy toll taken.

Canadian Engineer Motor Transport Company. On the formation of the Engineer Battalions in 1918 certain motor transport was allowed for. It was later decided to form an Engineer M.T. Company and detail the lorries to units as required. This scheme was very successful and the unit rendered valuable assistance. It was now possible to deliver large quantities of material direct to engineer working parties and dumps. During operations the lorries were running for twenty-four hours daily, the second driver on each lorry forming the relief. Great credit is due to many of these drivers for work carried out under very heavy shell-fire. The lorries had to travel over roads which were being shelled and very often were halted while some in front, which had been hit, were dragged off the main roadway. The continuous lines of traffic on narrow roads rendered it impossible to return and take an alternative route.

4. Organization and Administration

A study of what has already been written naturally prompts the question: What was the organization responsible for the carrying out of this work and where was all the personnel obtained from?

Chief Engineer. The Chief Engineer of the Canadian Corps was Major-General W. Bethune Lindsay, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O. His staff consisted of a staff officer and four officers who were attached as field engineers to assist in co-ordinating and directing the work within the corps area. He was the technical adviser of the Corps Commander on all Engineer Services, and on the reorganization of the Engineers administered all their personnel in France. This necessitated the provision of a staff officer, a staff captain (A and Q), a staff captain (stores and transport), and four field engineers (one each for defences, roads, water supply, and tramways). Additional field engineers were attached, as required, in time of stress.

Divisional Engineers (before reorganization). Until May 24th, 1918, the organization of Canadian Engineer units within the corps was exactly the same as in the Imperial Service. In a division the engineer services were carried out under a Commanding Royal Engineer, who had an adjutant to assist him and three field companies under his command. Each division had a pioneer battalion, which was usually, although not always, placed under the C.R.E. for work, but not for administration. These companies were responsible for all the engineer work in the divisional area, i.e. defences, roads, tracks, water supplies, etc. As they were only small units of highly skilled personnel, wholly intended for supervision, it was necessary to employ the pioneer battalion, usually reinforced by infantry work parties, to do the work.

The establishment of a field company was six officers and 217 other ranks, and each company carried pontoon bridging equipment, which was, by itself, usually insufficient for any bridging job.

Reasons for and process of reorganization. Upon the conclusion of the offensive operations of 1917 the Chief Engineer urged the reorganization of the units and personnel required for engineer services. The proposal was based on the ground that the existing establishments and organizations were unsuitable for dealing with the conditions developed during the war, and the reasons may be briefly stated as follows: —

a. The personnel of the field companies was only sufficient for supervision.
b. The pioneer battalion was useful when officered by engineer officers, but most of the available men were frittered away on odd jobs in the Divisional area.
c. The daily detail of work parties from the infantry was very unsatisfactory and costly as the engineers were responsible for the *quality* of the work and the infantry for the *quantity.* The detail of a different party each day was not conducive to continuity of work or good results.
d. A permanent detail of a party from the infantry worked well, but naturally was strongly objected to by battalion commanders.
e. The introduction of new weapons and new methods of attack and defence was rapid and progressive, thus rendering more difficult the problems to be solved. The depth of the battle zone had increased tremendously and defence in depth was essential. The increase in artillery involved the providing of means for handling the large tonnage of ammunition required.

The obvious remedy was to merge the skilled and unskilled labour into one organization under one control. A general scheme of reorganization of the divisional engineers was therefore prepared by the Chief Engineer, endorsed by the Corps Commander, approved in March, 1918, and brought into effect on May 24th, 1918.

New Organization. Within a division the personnel of the three field companies and a pioneer battalion was reorganized by utilizing each field company as a nucleus, absorbing the pioneer battalion, and by the addition of a proportion of a Tunnelling Company, C.E., and other personnel, creating three engineer battalions, and a pontoon bridging transport section. The whole formed a Brigade, C.E. In forming these battalions, care was taken to provide for the dilution of the highly skilled sapper personnel by the inclusion, in due proportion, of the service of skilled and unskilled Class "A" labour who had completed their infantry training.

The Pontoon Bridging Transport Unit was formed by pooling the pontoon bridging equipment of the three field companies in the division. Each unit carried sufficient to build two hundred and twenty-five feet of medium pontoon bridge. The centralization and control of this equipment under one unit was a very marked success. During large operations the equipment of the four Pontoon Bridging Transport Unit sections was pooled.

The staff of each of the four engineer brigades consisted of a brigade commander, brigade major, and two staff captains. The establishment of each of the twelve engineer battalions was thirty-nine officers and 975 other ranks, and of each of the four Pontoon Bridging Transport Unit companies three officers and sixty-three other ranks. The battalions were, however, never up to strength; prior to the Battle of Amiens they totalled approximately seven hundred other ranks, and prior to the Battle of Arras 725.

A certain number of lorries were allotted to each battalion, but an Engineer M.T. Company was formed and the lorries were detailed to suit the requirements of the engineer brigades.

The organization of the engineer brigades and the C.E. Motor Transport Company was carried out under a great handicap in the field and was completed in the last week of July, 1918. During the first week in August it was subjected to its first trial — a very severe one — and more than justified the change.

From this period until the close of hostilities the engineers provided all necessary facilities to ensure the rapid advance of the corps in the way of roads and tracks, bridges, light railways, defences, water supply, camouflage, etc. This work was all done without calling upon other troops for working parties. The fighting efficiency of these other arms was therefore not impaired and they were able to conserve their entire energy and devote it to the task of overcoming and wearing down the enemy opposition. The value of this is seen in the rapid and unprecedented advances made by the corps.

5. Corps Troops

Corps troops may vary from twenty thousand to fifty thousand men, and to carry out the engineer services required, the Chief Engineer had, at Corps Headquarters, a C.R.E. Corps Troops assisted by an adjutant. This officer administered all the Canadian engineer units and attached Royal engineer formations, other than those with the divisions.

The Canadian units consisted of five Army Troops Companies, C.E., two Tramway Companies, C.E., three Tunnelling Companies, C.E., an Anti-Aircraft Searchlight Company, C.E., a P.B. Company, C.E., and a C.E. Motor Transport Company.

The establishment of the Army Troops Companies was identical with that of the R.E. units, viz. three officers and 138 other ranks per company (three supernumerary officers were attached to each of the Canadian companies). These companies were employed on water supply, bridging, the construction of defences, the operation of R.E. Parks, and the construction of accommodation for the troops in the corps area. The companies had each two motor lorries and were very mobile. The inclusion of a large proportion of highly trained sappers rendered them very useful and valuable.

In March, 1916, the C.E. organized an unofficial unit called the Canadian Corps Tramway Company, for the construction of light railways in the forward area, by borrowing suitable men from other sources. This organization soon proved the practicability and value of the construction of these lines and the immense saving in transport and man power effected. At a later date the construction of light railways was undertaken by General Headquarters, but the limit of their construction was usually a point to which deliveries in bulk could be made in daylight by steam traction. After two years the organization of the two tramway companies was approved and the units were formed by absorbing the original company with the addition of qualified personnel. The establishment of each of these companies was twenty officers and 363 other ranks.

The establishment of the Tunnelling Companies, C.E., was the same as that of a Tunnelling Company, R.E. (higher establishment), viz. nineteen officers and 550 other ranks. Three of these companies were formed from Canadian personnel, but they seldom worked with the corps. However, on the reorganization of the Engineers the 1st and 2nd Tunnelling Companies were absorbed into the engineer battalions on the agreement that the Canadian Corps would undertake all the tunnelling work required in their area without assistance. The 3rd Company was to be absorbed as soon as it could be relieved from work in another Army area, but this was never given effect to.

The A. A. Searchlight Company, C.E., was formed in 1918 from skilled personnel drawn from the other engineer units. Hostile bombing had increased very considerably in the latter part of 1917 and in 1918, and the primary object of the formation of the company was to help to protect the Corps area and ensure the rest of the troops. The establishment allowed for five officers and 125 other ranks.

The P. B. Company, C.E., was formed early in 1917 to enable skilled tradesmen who had become casualties with engineer units, and had been placed in a lower category than Class "A," to be utilized in operating a Corps R.E. Park and Workshops. An A.T. Company was therefore relieved for more forward work. This unit performed a great deal of very useful work and completely justified its organization. Its provisional establishment was two officers and 123 other ranks.

The C.E. Motor Transport Company operated directly under the orders of the Chief Engineer, but was administered by the S.M.T.O. Canadian Corps.

6. Signal Service

The Canadian Signal Service in France was administered by the Chief Signal Officer, Canadian Corps, viz. Lieut.-Colonel E. Forde, D.S.O. This officer was technical adviser to the Corps Commander on all questions of intercommunication and was responsible for the organization and efficiency of the signal communications in the corps area. This included the coordination of the corps, divisional, and artillery communications and of the personnel employed therein.

The Canadian Signal Service consisted of:—

One Corps Signal Company with nineteen officers and 516 other ranks.

Four Divisional Signal Companies, each of thirteen officers and 288 other ranks.

5th Divisional Artillery Signals, four officers and fifty-eight other ranks.

8th Army Brigade C.F.A. Signals, one officer and twenty-one other ranks.

The Corps Signal Company was responsible for the communication with flanking corps, divisions, heavy artillery, the Royal Air Force, and all special units with the corps. It included the headquarters, one wireless, two motor airline, and four cable sections; also signal sub-sections for the heavy artillery.

The Divisional Signal Company was responsible for communications to the flanking divisions and all communications to, and with, the artillery and infantry brigades, and other units in the Divisional area. These companies included a headquarters section, Motor Cycle section, Despatch Rider Letter Service section, wireless section, and two cable sections, in addition to the signal sections for the Divisional Artillery.

The Signal Services found that their equipment was inadequate to meet the demands of modern conditions of warfare. This was more especially so owing to the extra strength of the Canadian Corps. A complete reorganization of the whole system was recommended on March 10th, 1918, but did not meet with the approval of General Headquarters. Further proposals were forwarded, but these did not receive the final approval of General Headquarters before the cessation of hostilities.

All the engineers were trained in England and on the reorganization of the Engineer Services a large C.E. Training Depot was formed to meet the increased demand for officers and men. Specially selected officers and N.C.O.'s, with front-line experience, were sent over from France to act as instructors.

Reinforcements were despatched on demand to the Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp in France and allotted to the Signal Reinforcement Wing or Engineer Reinforcement Wing, where training was continued until they were despatched to meet the demands of units in the field.

TOTAL STRENGTH OF THE CANADIAN ENGINEER ORGANIZATION, INCLUDING THE SIGNAL SERVICE

	OFFICERS	MEN
B.E.F. (France).......	834	18,392
O.M.F.C.	1,164	24,892

CHAPTER III

THE CANADIAN ARMY MEDICAL CORPS

1. In Canada

WITHOUT attempting, or even wishing to attempt, any comparison of the respective merits of the different arms of the Canadian Expeditionary Force, this much should at least be said, that nowhere was found more devoted and unselfish service, more cheerful or grim persistency, more genuine heroism under conditions that burned down to a man's very soul, than in the Canadian Army Medical Corps. This is an attempt to tell, however imperfectly and inadequately, the story of the Medical Corps in the Great World War: what it was, how it was organized, where it served, and what it accomplished.

To get this story in proper perspective, one must go back a few years and run over very briefly the earlier history of the corps. In the early Colonial days the service was represented only by medical officers attached to each militia regiment, whose duties were rather ornamental than useful. There was no army medical organization before Confederation, or for many years thereafter. It was not, indeed, until 1885, when a field force had to be hurriedly got together to dispose of Louis Riel and his rebel followers in the North-West, that something in the nature of a Canadian army medical service was organized. Dr. D. Bergin, of Cornwall, Ontario, was appointed Surgeon-General with headquarters at Ottawa. Dr. Thomas Roddick, of Montreal, accompanied the expedition as Dep-

Early in 1902 the first Canadian medical unit, the 10th Canadian Field Hospital, left Halifax for South Africa, under the command of Colonel A. N. Worthington. The equipment included the Hubert tent, believed to be an improvement on the British hospital tent, and several other Canadian innovations, including a mobile acetylene gas plant. The 10th Canadian Field Hospital did good service in the Transvaal, as a stationary hospital, and a detachment went through the Battle of Hart's River, with Cookson's column. Of the three Regimental Medical Officers who accompanied the First Contingent to South Africa, Captain Eugene Fiset particularly distinguished himself, winning the D.S.O. at Paardeburg. He became Deputy Minister of Militia and Defence in 1906, was appointed Surgeon-General in 1914, and knighted in 1917. Another Regimental Medical Officer who did exceptionally good work in South Africa was Major (afterwards Lieut.-Colonel) Keenan, of the Strathcona's Horse, who won the D.S.O. in the late war. He went overseas in 1914 as M.O. to the P.P.C.L.I., and was afterwards Senior Surgical Officer to No. 2 Canadian General Hospital in France.

As a result of experience gained in the South African War, a number of changes were made in the organization of the C.A.M.C., notably the creation of Principal Medical Officers, to serve as intermediate links in the chain of responsibility between Headquarters and the local medical units. Following the lead of the Imperial authorities, Canada also decided to combine the Bearer Company and Field Hospital into a single unit, the Field Ambulance. The object of this consolidation was "to attain increased mobility at the front, and more particularly to combine under one command the two intimately related functions of collecting the wounded and affording immediate but temporary care of the same." The Bearer Companies had been associated with the city corps, and the Field

Hospitals with rural corps. The introduction of the Field Ambulance into the Canadian service was accomplished, not by combining these urban and rural units, but by expanding each into the larger form. Another feature, and one that differentiated the Canadian from the Imperial system, was the provision of skeleton rather than full establishments. Where the British Field Ambulance consisted of ten officers and 241 other ranks, divided into three sections, the Canadian unit consisted of the same number of officers and non-commissioned officers, but only seventy-five other ranks, divided among one full section and two skeleton sections, the latter to be brought up to strength on mobilization. It is claimed for this system that, without putting an undue burden upon the country, it offered a means of drawing competent civil practitioners into the service.

No more momentous step forward in the development of the C.A.M.C. was taken, however, between the close of the South African War and the opening of the European War, than in the intelligent recognition of the supreme importance of sanitation. As Colonel Adami says, in his *War Story of the Canadian Army Medical Corps,* "it is no exaggeration to declare that the main advance in the Canadian Militia . . . was in the steadily increasing realization that where men are massed together their welfare and their effectiveness centre around the preservation of their health, and that sanitation is a matter that concerns all." It took some time, nevertheless, to convince many of the more conservative Commanding Officers that sanitation was a matter too vitally linked with the health of their men to leave to the Quartermaster of the battalion, and that it was one in which the Medical Officer should have a governing voice. The tremendous improvement in this respect is illustrated in a comparison of the relative casualties from wounds and from disease in the South African War and in the European War;

and the result is still more striking if the comparison is carried back to, say, the Crimean War. Much of the success of the movement for improved methods of sanitation in the army, so far as Canada was concerned, was due to the recognition of the fact that it depended upon the effective combination of knowledge and authority. It was largely a matter of discipline, intelligently applied. The Medical Officer had the knowledge of how that discipline should be applied so as to safeguard the health of the battalion. The Commanding Officer had the authority to enforce it. Therefore, the actual responsibility for effective sanitation was laid upon the latter, and to protect himself he was compelled to follow the advice of his Medical Officer.

In 1907 the Association of Medical Officers of the Militia was organized, as a means of bringing together the medical officers of the permanent force and the militia, and creating an *esprit de corps.* This association met annually, and proved helpful in a variety of ways. In 1911, for the first time, the Army Medical Corps held its own camp, medical units from the different districts being brought together at London, Ontario, for sixteen days' training. An ambitious programme was worked out, ranging from the work of the M.O. with his battalion under service conditions, up through field ambulance work with the brigade, to divisional co-operation of field ambulance and casualty clearing station. The London camp also afforded an opportunity of testing the details of the new *Manual of Establishment and Equipment of the Army Medical Corps, Canada,* which covered both war and peace conditions.

In these and other ways the members of the C.A.M.C. were deliberately preparing themselves for any possible emergency, and actually preparing themselves for the Great Emergency that faced them in 1914. For some years prior to the outbreak of the war the D.G.M.S. had conducted a course at Ottawa every winter, in which the medical history of one or other of the great campaigns had been carefully studied, and laboratory training given in sanitation and bacteriology. This course was for the principal medical officers, and these in turn instructed the regimental medical officers in their respective divisions. As a result of all this preparatory work, the D.G.M.S. was able to call to the Service in 1914, "not an untrained herd of general practitioners, but a group of officers keenly interested in their work, familiar with the problems and difficulties of the Service, and, what is more, familiar with the forms and administrative procedure of the Army Medical Corps."

This brief sketch of the history of the C.A.M.C. previous to the declaration of war in 1914 would be incomplete without some reference to the nursing service. Unlike the British and other armies, the Army Nursing Sisters of Canada had a definite status, and formed a part of the C.A.M.C. And this was provided for as long ago as 1906. Regulations were laid down as to the qualifications and training, and the fully qualified sister was given the relative rank of lieutenant. A certain amount of captious criticism was aroused by this granting of military rank to Army Nursing Sisters, but, even if the criticism had any reasonable basis, it must long since have been overborne by the splendid record of the sisters, both in South Africa and in the Great World War. Canadian nurses had made an enviable name for themselves in civil work. To a much greater extent in Canada than in other countries, nursing had come to be regarded as the profession for young women of birth and education who had too much independence of character and self-respect to waste their lives in the social merry-go-round. Canadian nurses were eagerly sought after in the larger hospitals of the United States, and many of them rose to be matrons of the institutions. And the mental and moral fibre, as well as the physical stamina, which made them a conspicuous success in civil life, carried them with even more conspicuous success through the almost unbearable hardships of war.

This brings us down to the assembly of the First Contingent at Valcartier, the mobilization among other units of various Field Ambulances, and the sanitary arrangements at Valcartier. No. 7 and No. 9 Field Ambulances were called out two days after the declaration of war by Great Britain, for temporary service at Quebec and Valcartier. A few days later No. 1 Clearing Hospital and No. 18 Field Ambulance were also mobilized. This was before the general Mobilization Order of August 17th calling for the formation of a Canadian Expeditionary Force.

For various reasons it was found convenient to mobilize the Field Ambulances in various centres. No. 1, drawn from units in the Maritime Provinces, Quebec, and Eastern Ontario, was mobilized at Valcartier; No. 2, drawn from Ontario units west of Kingston, was mobilized at Toronto; and No. 3, covering Western Canada, was mobilized at Winnipeg. Nos. 2 and 3 proceeded to Valcartier as complete units with stores and equipment. Lines of Communication units included No. 1 Canadian Casualty Clearing Station, created by amalgamating No. 1 Clearing Hospital from Toronto and No. 2 Clearing Hospital from Liverpool, N.S.; Nos. 1 and 2 General Hospitals and Nos. 1 and 2 Stationary Hospitals recruited from various medical units. Of the two Field Ambulances first called out for temporary service, No. 7 volunteered for overseas service, and No. 9 was returned to its base. The Medical Service at Valcartier was placed under the command of Lieut.-Colonel H. R. Duff. Lieut.-Colonel Duff[1] suffered an injury and was succeeded by Lieut.-Colonel J. W. Bridges, A.D.M.S. The important and arduous work of examining and filling out medical papers for some thirty-two thousand volunteers was entrusted to Lieut.-Colonel A. T. Shillington, assisted by a staff of thirty officers and a hundred clerical orderlies. The equally important work of vaccination and inoculation was under the control of Lieut.-Colonel Hodgetts, with the assistance of some ten officers and twenty other ranks. The sanitary arrangements at Valcartier, and particularly the securing of an ample and safe supply of drinking water, were carried through with conspicuous success under the direction of Lieut.-Colonel G. G. Nasmith, in charge of the Hydrological Service.

---

[1] Lieut.-Colonel Duff died in Egypt while serving with Queen's University Hospital.

This was substantially the situation up to the time the First Contingent sailed for England. Before following the C.A.M.C. overseas it may be convenient to note here certain charges and recommendations made at a later date in connection with the work of that portion of the Medical Corps which remained on duty in Canada. One of the serious charges made in the Report of Colonel Bruce — which will be dealt with as a whole when we come to consider the work of the corps in England — was that many soldiers were arriving in England from Canada medically unfit, who should never have been enlisted. This applied especially to battalions and drafts which arrived from Canada in the second year of the war; the Canadian Pioneer draft, for instance, which arrived in the Shorncliffe area in June, 1916, being found to have twenty-two per cent. of unfits.

The Babtie Board, which passed upon Colonel Bruce's Report, agreed with his conclusion that large numbers of soldiers had been sent over from Canada who were unfit for service at the front. The Board was of the opinion that this was partly due to inexperience on the part of examining medical officers, partly to hurry, partly to carelessness, and lastly, in some instances, to the opinion of the examining medical officer being over-ridden or ignored by commanding officers. It agreed with Colonel Bruce that the remedy lay in a more stringent examination and better organization of recruiting methods in Canada. The Board, however, declined to place upon the Director of Medical Services the blame for a condition of affairs which, according to Colonel Bruce, was responsible for the presence in England of thousands of unfits, representing a useless expenditure of millions of dollars, and enormous wasted effort.

Among Colonel Bruce's recommendations for the betterment of the service were several that affected conditions in Canada. He recommended that the medical arrangements in Canada, England, and overseas be co-ordinated, so that the special qualifications of each medical officer be used to the best advantage. That as soon as suitable accommodation could be provided in Canada, soldiers who were obviously incapacitated from any further active service be returned to Canada when they were fit to travel without detriment to their health, their further medical treatment and necessary re-education to be carried out in Canada. That immediate steps be taken to provide hospitals of one thousand beds in Halifax, Montreal, Toronto, Winnipeg, and Vancouver, together with a smaller one in Ottawa, and that these have suitable accommodation for a limited number of officers. That a certain number of Canadian medical officers, who had had experience at the front, be detailed for duty in Canada to assist in the organization of these hospitals. That all ranks, before leaving Canada, be examined by an independent Medical Board, to ensure the weeding out of unfits, and that a sufficient number of boards for this purpose be established throughout Canada, to be under the direction and control of the A.D.M.S. Embarkation. That in future no medical units be organized in Canada for overseas duty. That there be

COL. HERBERT A. BRUCE, M.D., F.R.C.S. (ENG.)

established in Canada a sufficient number of well equipped C.A.M.C. depots for thoroughly training the personnel. The then Director of Canadian Medical Services in England concurred in all these recommendations. Some of them were subsequently carried out. Others were, apparently, not thought necessary or desirable.

2. In England

The Canadian Army Medical Corps did not have to wait for its arrival in France to be of service to the combatant troops. It had already done good work at Valcartier, and it found much more to do on Salisbury Plain. Conditions were exceptional. The winter of 1914-15, so far as Salisbury Plain was concerned, was one of the worst on record. The rainfall for December was the highest in fifty years. The Canadian camp remained for weeks at a time an almost impassable quagmire. Nothing could very well exceed the discomfort. The men were all under canvas. It was impossible to keep dry — almost impossible to get even temporarily dry. The Expeditionary Force lived in an atmosphere of liquid mud. Their tents were islands in a sea of mud, and the islands themselves were saturated with mud; so were the inhabitants; so were their arms and accoutrements and clothing; it even lent a wholly unacceptable flavour to their food and tobacco.

And yet the men not only managed to keep cheerful, but the average health of the troops remained remarkably good, as long as they were kept under canvas. Trouble dated from the time when, owing to the increasing cold, they were removed from the tents to hutments, where the inevitable overcrowding and lack of adequate ventilation brought about an equally inevitable outbreak of influenza and throat troubles. This furnished plenty of work for No. 1 Canadian

General Hospital, which had established its headquarters in Bulford Manor, and soon found it necessary to draw reinforcements from No. 2 General Hospital. The remainder of the latter, with the exception of a few officers and other ranks who maintained a small hospital at Lavington on the western side of Salisbury Plain, proceeded to France, where they were temporarily employed in Imperial hospitals until the entire unit could be established on that side of the Channel.

Meantime No. 1 C.G.H. had its hands full. Some neighbouring cottages were taken over, and tents erected on the Bulford cricket ground. Later it became necessary to move the main hospital to the Cavalry School at Netheravon. At Christmas the number of patients was over a thousand. About the beginning of February it had increased to twelve hundred. Altogether No. 1 C.G.H. received and treated 3,993 patients, of whom 1,249 were venereal cases and forty-six cerebro-spinal fever. The total deaths amounted to sixty-nine, of which one-third were due to cerebro-spinal fever. When the main hospital was moved to the Cavalry School, Bulford Manor was retained for venereal cases, and one of the larger cottages became an isolation hospital for cerebro-spinal fever patients. Early in December, Figheldean House had been secured as an auxiliary hospital. The three ambulances were kept constantly employed in the work of carrying patients to and from the hospitals, and their work was made peculiarly arduous by reason of the state of the roads and the large area over which Canadian troops were scattered. It finally became necessary to enlist the co-operation of the Divisional Ammunition Park at Netheravon, which furnished motor transport as temporary ambulances.

Because of the publicity given at the time to the outbreak of cerebro-spinal fever at Salisbury Plain, and the criticism in Canada and elsewhere directed against the military authorities, including those of the C.A.M.C., it is important to summarize briefly what Colonel Adami has to say on the subject in his *War Story of the Canadian Army Medical Corps.* Although the impression had been spread abroad that there was a grave epidemic of meningitis on Salisbury Plain, the fact was that, out of the thirty-three thousand men of the First Contingent, only thirty-nine developed the disease, though twenty-eight of these were fatal cases. Some sporadic cases occurred in England after the 1st Division left for France, among men at the Training Depot, bringing the total up to fifty cases, with thirty-six deaths.

Cerebro-spinal meningitis appears in an epidemic form at irregular intervals. It usually carries off large numbers of young children, with occasional adults. The disease has broken out among the soldiers in every modern war, and epidemics are frequently recorded in barracks in times of peace. As a matter of fact, cases were reported from several parts of Canada in the autumn of 1914. Four cases were found at Valcartier in September, and, despite the utmost care in isolating those who had come in contact with the patients, three cases developed on the convoy. After the arrival on Salisbury Plain, seven cases were reported up to November 24th, scattered through the different battalions, but from that time up to nearly the middle of December not a single case was reported, owing, it is thought, to the open life in the air and sleeping in tents. With the removal to huts, the disease broke out again. There were fourteen cases in the latter half of December, ten of which proved fatal. Early in January a fully-equipped laboratory was established, and a thorough bacteriological study was made of the cases.

The principal difficulty was found with "carriers," men who, while not suffering from the disease, carried the dangerous germs in their system, and might readily convey the disease to others. In spite of the difficulty in discovering these carriers, and other difficulties incident to handling a large number of men in camp under peculiarly unfavourable climatic conditions, the outbreak of meningitis was kept well under control. The thirty-nine cases were scattered among eighteen different units, the highest number being six in the 17th Battalion. The precautions taken were so complete that nothing approaching an epidemic was allowed to develop in the camp.

Colonel Adami completely disposes of the idea, somewhat prevalent at the time, that the Canadian Contingent had introduced the disease into England, and particularly into the Imperial army. He shows that there had been repeated outbreaks of the disease in different parts of the British Isles between 1906 and 1914, more than a dozen cases having been reported in the month before the contingent arrived in England, and the first cases developing on Salisbury Plain coinciding in point of time with the cases found among the Imperial troops. ''There is,'' he says, ''absolutely no evidence that the Canadian troops are responsible for the spread of the disease in the Eastern Command and elsewhere in England. The fact is that when the disease is already present in a country and the weather is raw and damp, there is certain to be an outbreak among the troops unless those precautions be taken which the experience of the last four years has shown to be effective.''

One other point should be noted here, as to which criticism was directed against the Canadian Army Medical Corps, and that is as to venereal disease having been scandalously prevalent in the Canadian Expeditionary Force, as has been repeatedly alleged by well-meaning but ill-informed zealots. The evidence shows conclusively that the percentage was never at any time as high as that found in the average city. And it may be added that, after the Canadian army took the field, venereal disease was almost obliterated.

Before taking up some other matters connected with the service of the Canadian Army Medical Corps in England, it may be well to note here that No. 2 Stationary Hospital had the honour of being the first Canadian unit to land in France. It left Salisbury Plain on November 6th, 1914, after having been inspected by His Majesty, and crossed the Channel to Havre. At Le Touquet, near Paris Plage, on the French coast, it became the first of a series of Canadian base hospitals. No. 1 Stationary Hospital had at first been assigned to duty as a base hospital near London, but the plans were changed, and in February, 1915, it followed No. 2 to France, and began operations at Honeault Camp, Wimereux. Early in August it was sent to the island of Lemnos, in connection with the Gallipoli campaign.

No. 1 Casualty Clearing Station, after laying the foundation of what afterward became the Duchess of Connaught's Canadian Red Cross Hospital at Cliveden, crossed the Channel in March, and settled down in Fort Gassion, Aire. No. 1 Canadian General Hospital remained on Salisbury Plain after the First Contingent crossed over to France in February, until the last of its patients could be evacuated. In May it reached its final destination near Étaples, and began work under canvas. No. 2 Canadian General Hospital, which, as already noted, had been temporarily broken up, was finally reassembled in March, and established at Le Tréport, at the mouth of the Bresle. The Field Ambulances of course went to the front with the 1st Division.

It will not be necessary at this stage to say anything about the various units of the C.A.M.C. that were subsequently sent to France. It may, however, be convenient to note that the units in England ultimately included ten general hospitals, seven special hospitals, eight convalescent hospitals, one laboratory, four sanitary sections, a depot of medical stores, and two hospital ships. The total personnel was 8,376, made up of 770 medical officers, 1,094 nursing sisters, and 6,512 other ranks.

It now becomes necessary to refer to a matter that unfortunately became the subject of bitter controversy. Not many months after the First Contingent reached the battle line, the organization and administration of the Canadian Army Medical Service began to be subjected to severe criticism. Finally, in the spring of 1916, the Government of Canada appointed Colonel Herbert A. Bruce, a well-known Toronto surgeon, as Special Inspector General of the C.A.M.C., with instructions to proceed to England, investigate the administration of the corps, and make a full report to the Government. With the assistance of a committee of officers, selected by himself, he made a thorough investigation of the Canadian hospitals and Medical Service in England, and submitted a confidential report to the Minister of Militia, in September of the same year. This report, with a memorandum in reply by Surgeon-General Jones, then Director of Medical Services in London, was referred to the Acting Sub-Militia Council for Overseas Canadians, in London, and the council unanimously approved of Colonel Bruce's report and recommendations, and advised that the necessary reorganization of the Medical Service should be proceeded with. In October, the Minister of Militia sent instructions that the reorganization was to be carried out, under the direction of Colonel Bruce. The work was proceeded with until November, when the resignation of Sir Sam Hughes as Minister of Militia, and the appointment of an Overseas Minister for the Military Forces of Canada, changed the current of events. About the middle of that month, a Board of Inquiry was appointed to consider and report upon Colonel

Bruce's Report. This board, under the presidency of Surgeon-General Sir William Babtie, submitted its report about the end of the year, and, on December 30th, the Overseas Minister relieved Colonel Bruce of his office as Inspector-General of Medical Services.

These, in very brief outline, are the surface facts. It remains to consider what the defects were that Colonel Bruce found in the organization and administration of the Canadian Army Medical Corps, and how he proposed to remedy them; what were the views of the Director of Medical Services in the matter; and what the Babtie Board thought of the Bruce Report and its recommendations. Of the political and the personal sides of the famous controversy nothing need be said here, as it is not believed that it would serve any useful purpose. Colonel Bruce is evidently convinced that both he and the officers associated with him on the committee of investigation were made the objects of bitter and unrelenting persecution by the Overseas administration. So far as Colonel Bruce's side of the question is concerned, the reader is referred to his book, *Politics and the Canadian Army Medical Corps.* There may be another side, but if so it has not yet been made public.

In justice to Colonel Bruce, prominence should be given at the outset to his statement as to his attitude toward the Medical Service, as it has on more than one occasion been represented that his Report constituted an attack on the character and efficiency of the individual members of the Canadian Army Medical Corps. This charge Colonel Bruce emphatically denies. ''Neither in my original Report,'' he says, ''nor in this volume, have I criticized the medical men carrying on their professional duties in the Canadian Army. My exposure was of the administration of the service, and of the misuse of its personnel. In my own experience of three years I have never failed to express my unbounded admiration and respect for these men, for the sacrifice they made and for their efficiency in the various Canadian medical units in France and England. Nor can the praise of the informed and discerning be withheld from those members of the medical profession who carried on so ably and so uncomplainingly at home.

"To the medical officers serving with battalions I have paid special tribute for their admirable work under the greatest difficulties and hazards, and with unfailing cheerfulness, and sympathetic helpfulness, that gave moral support to the men. Their personal exhibitions of courage were only second to those of the stretcher-bearers, who displayed a heroism beyond all praise. To the medical officers working in the field ambulances, casualty clearing stations, and hospitals in France and England, I have also paid homage for their splendid devotion to duty. Indeed I have on many occasions remarked the unusually high standard of professional qualifications and aptitude existing in the Medical Service, the general competence and zeal of the nursing staff, and the fine spirit in which all 'carried on,' often under adverse and trying conditions."

It is clear, then, that Colonel Bruce's criticisms were directed, not against the individual members of the Medical Service, but against the system under which that service was administered. With this thought in mind, let us see what the points were that he believed to be open to criticism, and how he proposed to remedy the evil. It may be convenient to note at the same time the views of Surgeon-General Carleton Jones, then Director of Medical Services in London, and of the Babtie Board of Inquiry.

One thing emerges quite definitely from a careful reading of these documents, and that is that the particular point around which the controversy raged most fiercely was the desirability or otherwise of concentrating wounded Canadians in Canadian hospitals. To this point Colonel Bruce gives much more space than to any other. It is also made the principal feature of the Report of the Board of Inquiry. It is the subject-matter of much official and semi-official correspondence. And it is common knowledge that it gave rise to more acrimonious discussion, both in England and Canada, than any other point in Colonel Bruce's Report.

This was the situation: Canadian casualties arriving from the front were sent indiscriminately to a hospital in England, Scotland, Wales, or Ireland. It was found that they were accommodated in no less than eight hundred different hospitals. Colonel Bruce recommended that this practice should be discontinued and that Canadian patients should be directed to Canadian hospitals, concentrated within a restricted area near the eastern coast. He reported that the adoption of this policy would avoid needless delay in the transfer of patients to convalescent hospitals, would be more economical, and would be much more satisfactory to Canadian wounded soldiers. He says that for a time in 1915, under an agreement with the War Office, Canadian patients were sent to the Queen's Canadian Military Hospital at Beachborough Park and to the Duchess of Connaught's Hospital at Cliveden, Surgeon-General Jones having expressed the opinion that "it is conducive to the patients' well-being and comfort to be under our own administrative control," but that in March, 1916, the Director of Medical Services countermanded the previous request to the War Office and stated that "it is not now considered necessary, from a Canadian point of view, to make any special arrangements at Southampton for the collection of Canadian patients."

The Babtie Board in its Report deals at length with this matter, and while admitting that there is much to be said on both sides, concludes that the policy of segregation would not only be unwise but impracticable, having regard to the amount of accommodation that would be required owing to the increase of Canadian troops in Europe. The Board takes strong exception to what it considers to be the dominant idea of the Bruce Report, that the Canadian Expeditionary Force was something separate and apart from the Imperial army, and feels that to separate on their return to England men who had fought side by side, must tend to undo the bond of brotherhood sealed in the face of the enemy.

After reading all that has been said on both sides of this rather unfortunate controversy, one cannot help feeling that it was more or less of a tempest in a teapot. In the midst of the greatest and most momentous war the world has seen, when not merely the lives of individuals, but those of nations and empires, and even civilization itself, were at stake, the controversy seems altogether trivial. The demand for segregation is too suggestive, in its provincial outlook, of a popular election cry — Canada for the Canadians. It seems all the more regrettable that, in a report that contained many really serious charges of inefficiency, and many admirable recommendations for the improvement of the Canadian Army Medical Corps, so much prominence should have been given to the least important factor.

What these other charges and recommendations were will be stated as briefly as possible. Colonel Bruce found that the treatment of Canadian sick and wounded soldiers had not been such as to ensure either the earliest possible return of convalescents to the fighting unit or base duty, or the prompt discharge from the service of the medically unfit. There was no Consulting Surgeon, although the necessity for such an appointment was urgent. There was no adequate inspection of hospital cases. The V.A.D. hospitals were inefficient, expensive, and unsatisfactory. The system of dual control in Red Cross hospitals was undesirable. The administration of the Shorncliffe Military Hospital was very expensive and unsatisfactory. The special hospitals at Ramsgate and Buxton should never have been established, as most of the cases treated there could be better and more cheaply treated in Canada. The system of handling Canadian venereal cases was strongly condemned. No adequate provision had been made for Medical Boards to regulate the classification of casualties when convalescent. Satisfactory records regarding individual casualties were not available. The exceedingly important question of pensions, involving the expenditure of large sums of money by Canada, had been neglected, so far as the C.A.M.C. was concerned. There was a lack of co-ordination in the Canadian Medical Service between Canada, England, and the Front. Canadian Army Medical Corps personnel was not being used to the best advantage. The policy of the Director of Medical Services had been opposed to the use of experienced medical and surgical consulting specialists. The C.A.M.C. Training School had never been properly organized, although of the greatest importance to the Medical Service. The policy in connection with promotion was unfair and occasioned discontent in the service. Sufficient attention had not been paid to economy of management.

Such of Colonel Bruce's recommendations as affected the service in Canada have already been noted in the first part of this article. Of the others, his most sweeping suggestion was that the Canadian Medical Service be reorganized from top to bottom. He also recommended that Canadian casualties be, as far as possible, treated in Canadian hospitals, on the principle that the first duty of the Canadian Army Medical Corps was to the Canadian sick and wounded; that there should be a concentration of Canadian hospitals, and that the use of Voluntary Aid hospitals for Canadians should be discontinued; and finally that the joint operation of hospitals with the Red Cross be discontinued. The proposed reorganization would of course dispose of the other points to which Colonel Bruce takes exception, in connection with the administration of the C.A.M.C.

As already mentioned, Surgeon-General Jones in his Reply concurred in most of the recommendations, and so did the Sub-Militia Council. The Babtie Board at once took issue with Colonel Bruce as to the necessity of a complete reorganization of the Canadian Army Medical Corps. In its opinion the reforms he suggested would not remedy the defects he had pointed out, which were not due to the system but to inexperience on the part of officers, military and medical, and to faults in administration which could be otherwise remedied. As indicated in this general statement, the Board admitted the existence of many of the imperfections in the system which Colonel Bruce had exposed, but disagreed in whole or in part with nearly all his proposed remedies.

Particular exception was taken to Colonel Bruce's criticism of the Voluntary Aid hospitals. "These hospitals," says the Board, "are the outcome of a mobilization of the medical resources of the United Kingdom, and in them Canadian soldiers are not only well cared for professionally, but are comfortable, happy and at home. The Board desires to emphasize its dissent from the criticism of these institutions, which it believes to be unjust and undeserved."

In August, 1917, the Director of Medical Services submitted a report on the various reforms that had been instituted up to that time in the administration of the C.A.M.C. This is an exceedingly interesting document, and it is only just to Colonel Bruce to say that it clearly establishes the justice of most of his charges against the system as he found it in 1916. As Colonel Bruce points out in his book, "23 out of the 28 improvements stated by the Director of Medical Services to have been effected in the service, were due to the adoption of recommendations in my Report, or the continuation of reforms instituted during my term of office as Inspector-General while reorganizing the service."

3. At the Front

In the two preceding parts of this article, the attempt has been made to describe the work of the Canadian Army Medical Corps in Canada and in England. There remains the much more difficult task of telling the story of the Medical Service of Canada at the front. That story is so many-sided, and there are so many facts and incidents that deserve to be put on record to make it even approximately complete, that one is left in a state bordering on despair. Considerations of space, however, and the comprehensive nature of this entire work, make it imperative to confine the narrative to a broad outline of the place taken by the C.A.M.C. in the tremendous war drama on the Western front, with only the briefest possible mention of what they achieved in other theatres of the war.

We have already noted the arrival of the Stationary and General Hospitals and other units of the C.A.M.C. in France, and the interesting fact that No. 2 Stationary Hospital enjoyed the distinction of being the first of all the Canadian units to reach France.[1]

At the outset some difficulty was experienced by the C.A.M.C in getting into smooth working order under the novel conditions of service on the Western front. The First Contingent was not an independent army; it was an essential part of the British army; and as a necessary consequence the C.A.M.C. came more or less under the direction of the higher officers of the R.A.M.C. For instance, the Assistant Director of Medical Services who commanded the Canadian Divisional

---

[1] See Vol. II, p. 209 et seq.

Medical Corps, — that is, the three field ambulances, one attached to each brigade, — came under the Deputy Director of Medical Services of the Imperial army corps to which the Canadian division was attached. At the same time, he was responsible to the Director of Medical Services for Canada. Similarly, the latter found it difficult to keep in close touch with the different Canadian medical units and give them necessary instructions, without invading the jurisdiction of Imperial officers whose authority was supreme within their own particular districts.

This was but one of the numerous complications incident to the novel co-operation of Imperial and Dominion troops in one and the same army, and, as in other cases, a practical compromise was reached before long which worked smoothly and satisfactorily, largely because of the keen desire of all parties to further the common cause.

It remains now to describe the actual organization of the Medical Service at the front, and how it functioned under the stress of unprecedented war conditions. The soldier in the front line found in the Regimental Medical Officer and his sixteen stretcher-bearers his most familiar acquaintances in the C.A.M.C. They were his daily companions in the dangers and discomforts of trench warfare. The R.M.O. looked after his health while he remained unwounded, and the stretcher-bearers — those most unassuming heroes of the war — carried him out of the trenches or back from the hell of No Man's Land when he was wounded. They carried him to the regimental aid post, situated as near the trenches as was consistent with protection from shell-fire. Here all the wounded, whether walking or stretcher cases, were gathered for temporary treatment, and then sent back to the advanced dressing station, slightly wounded men making their way on foot, and the more serious cases being removed on stretchers by men of the bearer section of the field ambulance. It may be noted that, as the war went on, the regimental stretcher-bearers became so expert and so valuable in affording first aid to the wounded, that they were largely retained for that work, especially during a heavy action, other men being detailed from the platoons to take their places as stretcher-bearers.

From the advanced dressing station, the wounded after receiving necessary treatment were moved back to the main dressing station, well behind the lines. This work in the earlier stages of the war was done by means of horse ambulances, but these proved so unsatisfactory under the exacting conditions of modern warfare that they were before long replaced by motor ambulances.

At the main dressing station the wounded were definitely classified. Operations were performed here only in emergency cases, such as to remove an arm, foot, hand, or leg that no medical skill could save. Mild cases got rest and treatment for a few days, and then went back to their units. The remainder were transferred immediately, either to the casualty clearing station for treatment, or to one or other of the special hospitals.

The casualty clearing station, the next stage on the journey back from the front to Blighty, was established within easy reach of railhead — that is, the point where the railway ended and men and supplies went forward to the front by motor or other transport. It was really a collecting depot for wounded from a certain section of the front, who were brought together here, and after a short rest were sent down to the base on ambulance trains. The casualty clearing station was, however, a fully equipped hospital, under the charge of skilled surgeons, and many cases which could not safely be subjected to the long journey down to the base, were operated on here. Some of these stations were housed in existing hospitals; others, in hutments.

As the war went on and the pressure increased, the system was adopted of establishing these stations in pairs. After one of the big fights, when hundreds of serious cases demanding immediate operation poured into the casualty clearing station day after day, the strain upon the physical endurance of the surgeons would have reached the breaking point, if some method of relief had not been devised. By arranging the hospitals in pairs, however, the staff of one could work at full pressure for a day, the stream of patients would then be directed to the other hospital, and so on, the off days being utilized for routine work with cases going down to the base. At the casualty clearing station the wounded soldier, on his way down from the front, for the first time came under the ministration of the nursing sisters, those devoted women who did so much to lighten the suffering of the fighting troops.

The ambulance trains, marvels of comfort and convenience, carried cases that could be moved down to one or other of the coast towns. There they were met by motor ambulances, and the patients transferred to a base hospital, stationary or general. Practically the only distinction between the two was that the latter was much larger, and being equipped with specialists, pathological and X-ray departments and other special equipment, handled a larger proportion of the more serious cases.

It is difficult to appreciate the scale upon which these military hospitals were operated during the war. The number of beds has been mentioned elsewhere in this article, but that suggests very little to the average reader. A comparison with well-known Canadian hospitals may give a more definite idea. For instance, one of the Canadian stationary hospitals accommodated more patients than any hospital in Canada, with the possible exception of the new General Hospital in Toronto. Its accommodation exceeded that of the Royal Victoria in Montreal or the Winnipeg General Hospital. And the Canadian general hospitals operated on a correspondingly larger scale. Their staffs included hundreds of surgeons, nursing sisters, and orderlies; with many special departments, kitchens, stores, messrooms, officers' and nurses' quarters, dining-rooms, recreation rooms, administrative offices, etc., all housed in separate tents or hutments, the whole constituting a small town, and a very busy one.

These base hospitals were not, of course, the ultimate destination of the wounded soldier. The pressure from the front was too great to admit of a patient being kept at the base a moment longer than was absolutely necessary. The general and stationary hospitals were but one of the many stages of his journey back to convalescence, followed either by return to duty or discharge, according to the extent of his injuries. Very much the same procedure was followed at the base hospitals as at the casualty clearing stations. Some minor cases might be kept for a time, and returned to the front without the necessity of crossing the Channel. Serious cases might have to be retained until they had gained sufficient strength to stand a further journey. But the majority were usually evacuated within three days.

The next stage was the hospital ship. This was as wonderfully organized as the hospital train. Stretcher cases could be moved from deck to deck by means of lifts; they were furnished with cots swung so that the motion of the ship was reduced to a minimum. The ship had its medical personnel and nursing sisters, and emergency equipment of one kind and another. Everything was done to make the crossing as safe and comfortable as it could be made for a wounded soldier.

On the other side of the Channel, the ship was met by ambulance trains; stretcher cases were carried down the gangway and on to the trains; the walking cases followed; and they were off to one or other of the British hospitals. Here they remained for days, or weeks, as their cases demanded; and were finally transferred to the great convalescent hospitals.

No greater tribute to the splendid work accomplished by the Canadian Army Medical Corps, and the skill and thoroughness of its individual members, could be found than that suggested by the casualty lists. Bearing in mind the deadly efficiency of all classes of weapons used in the war, their variety, and their numbers, — in all three respects far transcending anything previously dreamed of, — the losses were remarkably small; far less, in fact, than had been anticipated by competent military authorities at the beginning of the war, when the destructive power of many new types of large and small arms was only beginning to be developed, and other weapons of extraordinary destructiveness had not yet been introduced. Keeping in mind, too, the enormously greater destructive power wielded by the respective armies in this war, over that of all previous conflicts, a comparison either of actual losses, or of the proportion of total casualties to deaths, with the statistics of earlier wars, is markedly favourable to the Great World War. Unquestionably much, if not most, of the credit for this result must be given to the remarkably effective work of the various Army Medical Corps, and in this respect the C.A.M.C. compared very favourably indeed with its fellow services in the other armies.

Some idea of the difficult conditions under which much of the work of the C.A.M.C. had to be carried on, particularly at the regimental aid posts and advanced dressing stations, may be gained from the experience recorded by Captain R. J. Manion, M.C., in his very readable and instructive book, *A Surgeon in Arms*.

"Until a man reaches the C.C.S. [casualty clearing station],'' he says, ''his wounds are dressed in very rough surroundings, not the aseptic dressing rooms of peace times. Dug-outs, cellars or open trenches are employed for dressing stations. After the Battle of Vimy Ridge my boys and I dressed our men for four days in an open, muddy trench, with the shells dropping about all the time. Dug-outs are simply holes in the ground, and may be most primitive dressing rooms. Everyone knows how aseptic the ordinary cellar could be made, even with the greatest care on the part of a M.O.'s assistants. But our dressings are folded and wrapped in such a manner that they can be applied, even though the dresser's hands are covered with mud, without the aseptic part of the dressing, which is applied to the wound, being in any way soiled.

''I have given one hundred and fifty inoculations hypodermically for the prevention of typhoid in a tent in which the men and myself stood ankle-deep in mud. Not one case of infection of the point at which the needle was inserted occurred. This illustrates the efficiency one reaches from being accustomed to working in filthy surroundings. Your stretcher-bearers and dressers become as skilled in this art as yourself, so that the men really get good attention in spite of the many difficulties in the way.''

Month by month, and year by year, as the war dragged its weary length, taking its hideous toll of death and suffering and leaving its glorious record of heroism and self-sacrifice, the Canadian Army Medical Corps developed a reputation for thoroughness, efficiency, and initiative second to none among the medical services of the Allied armies. Old theories that had responded well enough to the demands of previous wars were rejected as unequal to the strain of new conditions; new theories were tested in the fire of active service, did not measure up to the high standard demanded, and were promptly discarded, or remodelled and again subjected to the test. As the war progressed the conditions that had to be met and overcome by the C.A.M.C. were constantly changing, and constantly becoming more difficult. The unprecedented scale on which the conflict was carried on in itself put an immense strain upon the resources of the medical corps. The enemy improved his weapons, increased their number and efficiency, added new and unexpected factors. Every move involved novel conditions and increased casualties, and every move demanded a prompt and effective reply on the part of the C.A.M.C.

That the corps invariably responded, and responded quickly and intelligently, to the innumerable and ever-varying calls made upon it, is a remarkable tribute alike to the administrative genius and resourcefulness of the officers who directed its operations and to the loyalty, untiring energy, and team-work of their subordinates in the field and in the hospitals. It is beyond question that much of the success of the corps was due to the clear-headedness and resolute character of the D.D.M.S., Brigadier-General A. E. Ross. He had at all times both the affection and implicit trust of those under his command. He had also the confidence of his associates in the Imperial service. Even the enemy officers recognized his ability. It is mentioned, for instance, that on the morning of the Battle of Amiens a German medical officer who had been captured, congratulated the D.D.M.S. on the success with which the wounded were being evacuated. It is also a striking tribute to the success of his administration of the C.A.M.C. that the Imperial authorities offered General Ross the position of D.M.S. of the Fifth Army with rank of Major-General — the only occasion on which such rank was offered to a Colonial medical officer; and that the Overseas Minister refused to let him go. Without attempting the well-nigh impossible task, where the level of achieve-

Canadian Official Photograph

OFFICERS OF "B" MESS, CANADIAN CORPS H. Q.;
BRIG.-GEN. A. E. ROSS, C.B., C.M.G., SEATED IN CENTRE

ment was so uniformly high, of mentioning those of General Ross' subordinates who particularly distinguished themselves, it must at least be said once more, if only for the sake of emphasis, that the entire personnel of the corps, from the Assistant Director down to the medical orderlies and stretcher-bearers, co-operated loyally with the D.D.M.S. to keep the Medical Corps at all times and under all circumstances up to the highest pitch of efficiency, and in so doing to fulfil their main purpose of keeping the fighting troops medically fit and capable of handling the colossal tasks which fell to their lot.

What that meant to the Canadian Corps, and to the cause of the Allies, cannot better be illustrated than by quoting a brief extract from Sir Arthur Currie's account[1] of some of the achievements of the Canadians during the memorable Last Hundred Days, bearing in mind that those achievements were to a very large extent made possible by the devoted work of the Medical Corps in keeping the fighting troops physically fit and over strength.

Sir Arthur Currie, after describing the salient features of the three great battles of the Canadian Corps in the closing months of the war, — Amiens, Arras, and Cambrai, — the conditions under which they were fought, and their momentous consequences, and noting incidentally that more than one-half of the V.C.'s won throughout the war by Canadians were won in the last hundred days, briefly summarizes the three and compares them — for the sake of driving home their supreme importance, and the extraordinary odds over which the Canadians were victorious — with another great battle earlier in the war, a battle of which Canadians are deservedly proud, "one of the most magnificent victories the Canadians have to their credit," the Battle of Vimy Ridge. "At Vimy," he says, "we fought nine German divisions; at Amiens sixteen, at Arras eighteen, at Cambrai thirteen, reinforced by thirteen machine-gun detachments. At Vimy we captured seven thousand prisoners; at Amiens over nine thousand, at Arras about ten thousand, at Cambrai nearly eight thousand. At Vimy we captured sixty-seven guns; at Amiens one hundred and ninety-six, at Arras ninety-eight, at Cambrai two hundred and twenty. At Vimy we penetrated ten thousand yards; at Amiens twenty-four thousand, at Arras twenty thousand, and at Cambrai thirty thousand. In those last hundred days the Canadian Corps met and decisively defeated forty-seven different German divisions. On the 1st of August, 1918, there were one hundred and eighty-four German divisions on the Western front, and one-fourth of one hundred and eighty-four is forty-six; so that we can claim that the Canadians defeated one-fourth of the German army. Of these forty-seven divisions we re-engaged fifteen that had been pulled out of the line and rested for two weeks. If we count these as fresh divisions — and we do — that would make sixty-two. In addition there were two of them that were re-engaged after a further rest of two weeks, making in all sixty-four divisions. So that I do not think it is out of the way, or improper of me, to say that there was no force of its size engaged in the war that played a greater part than the Canadian Corps in finally crushing the Boche and forcing him to his knees." And, once again, let it not be forgotten that the C.A.M.C. played a most important, though inconspicuous, part in so forcing the Boche to his knees.

---

[1] In an address before the Canadian Club of Ottawa in August, 1919.

Something has already been said, in the first part of this article, as to the enviable reputation won by Canadian nurses, in civil as well as in war work. So far as the latter is concerned, it is almost a work of supererogation to attempt to add anything to the chorus of praise that has risen from all quarters as a tribute to their splendid work throughout the war. While it would be rather poor taste to draw any comparison between the Nursing Services of Canada and the other Allies, it is beyond all question that the Canadian nursing sisters combined to a remarkable degree the qualities that were most essential to the successful performance of their duties, not the least important of these qualities being that combination of pluck and endurance commonly called grit. Indeed, for sheer, unqualified grit, it would be difficult to match the achievement of these Canadian girls — transferred almost in a moment from the comforts and conveniences of civil life to the privations and dangers of a theatre of war. The writer remembers meeting on the train, in the autumn of 1917, a frail-looking French-Canadian nursing sister, very quiet and self-contained, and very reluctant to talk about her work at the front. By dint of patient questionings, he learned that she had been overseas for nearly three years, working most of the time under canvas, assisting at operations until she almost fell asleep on her feet, unable to get a dry change of clothing for weeks at a time, sleeping between wet blankets, and living in an atmosphere of universal mud, noise, and suffering. She had been ordered home for three months' rest — and was counting the days until she could return to duty.

An incident mentioned by Colonel Adami is not without interest, as evidence of the reputation gained by the Canadian nursing sisters among the higher officers of the Imperial Service. It will be remembered that, on one of his visits to the front, His Majesty was seriously crushed by his horse slipping in the mud and falling upon him. Surgeon-General Macpherson, of the British Medical Corps, rode over to the Canadian Casualty Clearing Station at Aire, and selected one of the nursing sisters to look after the King. She attended upon His Majesty for several days at the château to which he had been removed, accompanied him on his journey home as soon as he could be moved, and remained with him at Buckingham Palace until his convalescence was so far advanced that her services were no longer necessary. On the day she relinquished her charge, His Majesty expressed his gratitude for her services by personally presenting her with the M.V.O. Badge, and the Queen gave her autograph copies of the Royal photographs.

No section of the Canadian Army Medical Corps was perhaps more thoroughly appreciated by officers and men of the other armies than the Dental Department.[1] While one would not feel justified in instituting comparisons between other branches of the Canadian Expeditionary Force and corresponding branches of the other armies, one need not hesitate to do so in the case of the Dental Department. It was, indeed, generally recognized that, until the American Expeditionary Force reached the front, there was nothing in the other armies to compare with the Canadian Dental Department, either in the knowledge and skill of the dental officers or the completeness of their apparatus. Of all the corps on the British front, the Canadians alone had a Corps Dental Laboratory. By this means the percentage of casualties was very materially reduced. A bad tooth may be nominally only a very minor casualty, but for all effective purposes it puts a man out of service for the time being. No man can do intelligent work, or in many cases be trusted to do it at all, whose mind is distracted by the maddening persistence of a throbbing toothache. The provision of this laboratory, with all it involved, also meant a great economical saving in transportation and material as well as in man power. In connection with the laboratory there was provided an officers' as well as a men's clinic. It was found that when an officer attended the men's clinic, he was given first place, an arrangement that proved generally unsatisfactory, and the simplest way out of the difficulty was to establish an officers' clinic. This proved an immense boon, not only to our own officers, but to those of adjoining British units. Officers even on duty in the front-line trenches could telephone and make an appointment; and it was no unusual thing for patients to arrive at the laboratory by aeroplane from comparatively remote units. Wherever they were stationed, patients flocked to them from all the surrounding units. The dental officer of the 4th Canadian General Hospital had the distinction of attending to the teeth of the King of Serbia, which were apparently in a very neglected condition. His Majesty was so grateful that he bestowed the Order of the White Eagle on the dental officer, the Order of St. Sava on the anæsthetist, and even the hospital orderlies were rewarded with medals of the Crown Prince's Household. One can readily imagine that His Majesty thought no distinction too high to confer upon the man who had relieved him from the intolerable agony of a bad toothache.

---

[1] See Vol. V, p. 341 et seq.

Reference has already been made to the remarkably low percentage of deaths among the Canadians in the European War, having in view the size of the armies and the exceptionally deadly nature of modern weapons. Much of this favourable result was due to the skill of the surgeons and the excellent organization of the Medical Service generally, but, distinguishing casualties due to sickness from casualties due to wounds, much, perhaps even more, should be credited to the very effective work of the Sanitary Section. For the sake of emphasizing a very important fact, one may repeat what has already been said in the first part of this article, that the sanitary arrangements in the late war were far in advance of anything achieved or attempted in previous wars, with the very gratifying result that while in the past a very large percentage of the deaths was due to preventable disease, in the European War the percentage was reduced to an extremely small figure.

Under conditions that in other wars would have led inevitably to an outbreak of typhoid fever, the water supplies were so carefully and systematically safeguarded that, with the additional precaution of inoculation, — the Canadian Corps, alone of the Allied troops, were one hundred per cent. inoculated, — cases of the disease among the Canadian troops were extremely rare. In fact, out of 100,000 Canadian patients, only one man was found to have typhoid. Whenever any part of the Canadian army moved into a new field, the Sanitary Section immediately obtained samples from all wells, pumps, streams, and other sources of water. The mobile laboratories examined and reported upon these samples, chemically and bacteriologically; and wherever necessary certain sources were labelled as unfit for drinking purposes, and sentries placed over them to prevent their use. Other sources, not polluted to the same extent, were declared fit for use, after chlorination. Samples were taken daily, tested in the laboratory, and the necessary amount of hypochlorite added to the water in the water-carts.

Similar precautions were taken to protect both the comfort and health of the troops in the matter of lice, which had always in previous wars been regarded as unavoidable under the living conditions of an army in the field. As the result of various experiments, a simple but very effective disinfector was put in operation, by means of which steam at a temperature of seventy or eighty degrees was applied to the men's overclothing. By this means the tunics and trousers of from fifty to a hundred men could be thoroughly disinfected, and ready for use again within half an hour. Large bath-houses were installed at the same time, in which a couple of platoons could be given hot baths simultaneously. The men discarded their un-

LATE LT.-COL. JOHN M^{c}CRAE
Canadian Army Medical Corps
"And died not knowing how the day had gone"

derclothing, for disinfection, washing, and mending; got a complete change of underclothing; had their baths; and received their disinfected overclothes when they were through. This system was devised by Colonel Amyot. Another officer of the Canadian Sanitary Section, Major Orr, produced an equally effective system of disinfection by hot air. Both the Amyot disinfector and the Orr huts were extensively used, not only in the Canadian divisions, but throughout the British Expeditionary Force.

It may be noted here that the Canadian Railway Troops, some twelve battalions, although under British administration, had Canadian medical officers and Canadian dental officers. The Canadian Forestry Corps, also under British administration, had hospitals with Canadian personnel — medical officers, nurses, dental officers, and other ranks. This very efficient service was organized by Lieut.-Colonel F. W. E. Wilson.

It remains to say a few words about the service of the C.A.M.C. elsewhere than on the Western front. Canadian Stationary Hospitals, Nos. 1, 3, and 5 sailed from Dover in the summer of 1915, on the hospital ship *Asturias,* for service in the Mediterranean. Nos. 1 and 3 did splendid service at Lemnos, under unusually trying conditions, throughout the disastrous Gallipoli campaign. In 1916 No. 1 was transferred to Salonika, and in the autumn of the following year returned to England, where it became No. 13 Canadian General Hospital, at Hastings. No. 3 went from Lemnos to France in 1916, being utilized for a time in 1918 as a casualty clearing station. No. 5 opened at Cairo, Egypt, and after some months' service there, was transferred to France as No. 7 Canadian General Hospital. Nos. 4 and 5 Canadian General Hospitals, from Toronto University and British Columbia respectively, served at Salonika from the closing months of 1915 until August, 1917, when they were transferred to England, the former opening at Basingstoke, and the latter at Kirkdale. This, with the exception of the Canadian Medical Services attached to the expeditionary forces sent to Northern Russia and Siberia, completes the tale of service of the Canadian Army Medical Corps on the minor fronts.

Figures make rather dry fare, but they suggest at least to some extent the enormous growth of the C.A.M.C. during the war and the magnitude of its achievement. The various units in England have already been summarized. In France and elsewhere, a total of eleven units in 1915 had expanded to thirty-seven units in the autumn of 1918. These embraced six general hospitals, six stationary hospitals, four casualty clearing stations, fourteen field ambulances, five sanitary sections, a depot of medical stores, and a mobile laboratory. The total personnel of the C.A.M.C. in France at the time of the Armistice was 7,204, made up of 681 medical officers, 792 nursing sisters, and 5,731 other ranks. Altogether, the C.A.M.C. at the end of the war had grown, from comparatively small beginnings, to a total personnel of 15,580, distributed among seventy hospitals and other units, or attached to administrative staffs, medical boards, and regimental and other establishments. The bed capacity of the Canadian hospitals, it may be noted, rose from three thousand in June, 1915, to something over forty thousand in November, 1918.

In any final estimate of the exceptionally fine work performed by the members of the Canadian Army Medical Corps throughout the European War, it must not be forgotten that, while regimental medical officers and their assistants were almost constantly under fire, officers, nursing sisters, and men employed in the hospital and other units far behind the lines were not necessarily free from danger. With an enemy like the Hun, not even the Red Cross was respected. In May, 1918, the great hospital area at Etaples was delib-

LT.-COL. F. A. C. SCRIMGER, V.C.
Canadian Army Medical Corps

erately bombed by German aeroplanes, on four different occasions — May 19th, May 21st, May 30th, and May 31st. There were three Canadian general hospitals in this area, Nos, 1, 7, and 9, with a large number of British units. On the first date, the German airmen used incendiary as well as explosive bombs, so that fire was added to the other horrors of the occasion. Not content with this, they flew low and used their machine guns against those who were attempting to rescue the wounded from the burning huts. The Canadian casualties included fifty-three killed and seventy-one wounded among the staff, one nursing sister being killed and seven wounded, two of whom subsequently died. Of the patients, fifteen were killed and sixty-seven wounded. "It was," says the official narrative, "a night of horrors relieved by examples of wonderful heroism. While the raid was still in progress, stretcher parties hastened to remove the wounded to places where they could receive first aid, and while the enemy aircraft still circled overhead the nursing sisters went about their work with perfect coolness."

The raids of May 21st and May 30th fortunately proved abortive, no damage resulting to the hospitals or their occupants; but on the 31st the casualties were again very heavy, No. 9 Canadian Stationary Hospital losing one officer and two nursing sisters, and having fourteen other ranks wounded.

On the night of May 29th, 1918, No. 3 Canadian Stationary Hospital at Doullens was bombed, under circumstances that again placed beyond all question the deliberate nature of the raid. An operation was in progress at the time, and the entire group in the operating rooms — surgeons, nursing sisters, patient, and stretcher-bearers — were instantly killed. Altogether, two officers, three nursing sisters, and sixteen other ranks were killed, while one nursing sister and fifteen other ranks were wounded.

The story of the sinking of the *Llandovery Castle,* then used as a Canadian hospital ship, is too well known to repeat here. No one can ever forget the wonderful heroism and devotion to duty of the Canadian Medical Staff on board, and especially of the fourteen nursing sisters, every one of whom was lost.[1]

General Sir Arthur Currie, than whom no one is better fitted to speak with authority on the subject, has sent the writer the following tribute to the qualities of the men and women who made up the personnel of the Canadian Army Medical Corps, a tribute with which this sketch of the corps may fittingly close:

"Much has already been written, and much more will assuredly be written, about the character and achievements of the fighting branches of the Overseas Military Forces of Canada. What they were and what they accomplished is known to every patriotic Canadian. Their deeds will live forever in the hearts of their countrymen. On the other hand, comparatively little is known of the work of the non-combatant branches of our Overseas Forces, and the public does not perhaps quite realize how absolutely essential that work was to our success in the war. This is peculiarly true of the Canadian Army Medical Corps, whose record is one of which Canadians have every reason to be proud. From D.D.M.S. to stretcher-bearer, the personnel of the corps revealed at all times the same fine spirit of co-operation and self-sacrifice. Labouring under conditions that were nearly always difficult, often enough dangerous, and sometimes such as to tax human endurance to the breaking point, these devoted men and women, surgeons, nurses, and loyal helpers, saved thousands of lives, relieved the suffering of the wounded, kept the fighting troops fit, and, beyond all question, contributed most definitely to the successful prosecution of the war. It is, indeed, not too much to say that the brilliant victories won by our men throughout the war, and particularly their repeated successes against overwhelming odds in the memorable Last Hundred Days, would not have been possible but for the fact that our battalions were kept over strength, and the men absolutely fit, through the splendid organization, efficiency, and unceasing efforts of the C.A.M.C."

---

[1] The writer is largely indebted for much of the information that appears in the foregoing pages to Colonel J. G. Adami's admirable *War Story of the Canadian Army Medical Corps,* Colonel Herbert A. Bruce's *Politics and the Canadian Army Medical Corps,* and the *Report of the Ministry, Overseas Military Forces of Canada, 1918.* Two other books that will prove valuable to anyone interested in the work of the C.A.M.C. at the front are Captain Robert J. Manion's *A Surgeon in Arms* and Major F. McKelvey Bell's *The First Canadians in France.*

CHAPTER IV

RELIGIOUS AND SOCIAL ACTIVITIES

1. The Canadian Chaplain Services

ON appointment the chaplain joined his unit in the ordinary way and became part of the brigade or battalion. He was given the rank of honorary captain. This rank was both a help and a hindrance; it was a help inasmuch as it gave him a definite place in the organization, but a hindrance in that it was a barrier between him and the men in the ranks. He became part of the military machine. Whatever views he or his church might have of the matter, that is what he was.

Napoleon said: "When you have resolved to fight a battle, collect your whole force. Dispense with nothing. A single battalion sometimes decides the day." And General Sir Henry Horne, commanding the First Army, commenting on that maxim, says: "Can there be any doubt that religious enthusiasm on the part of the soldier is the equivalent of many battalions? Such enthusiasm, which is far more than mere fanaticism, is the outcome of sound religious conviction." And because religious conviction is so potent a factor, the military authorities appoint chaplains to produce and maintain it in the ranks of the army.

As soon as he enlisted, however, the padre discovered that his duties consisted of more than Sunday services and definitely "religious" meetings. He had to help and befriend his men in every possible way. The troops to whom he ministered had suddenly torn themselves from home and gone into a world where all things were new. In spite of the long hours of drill and manœuvre, there were long hours of leisure which had to be filled. The fact that the camps were at least nominally " dry " saved some situations, but drink is not the only evil in the world. Fortunately, in all the large camps the Y.M.C.A. was in operation, and the padre found in that organization a medium through which he could work. Every evening there were concerts and Bible classes and cinemas, and athletics which the chaplain could help stage or conduct. Throughout his service, this early training stood him in good stead, for, wherever he went, these things, with minor differences, had to be supplied.

As the men got to know the chaplain, provided, of course, that he was the right kind of man, they came to him more and more for help and advice. They discovered that his position made him a link between them and the combatant officers; that he could adjust things which could not always be adjusted officially, and obtain privileges which could not be obtained in the ordinary way.

To a great extent, the padre became matrimonial adviser in extraordinary to the troops. In time of war Mars and Venus swim into close conjunction, and almost every day the chaplain had to weigh prospective joy or sorrow and then advise.

Before his unit left for overseas, he was usually given charge of men by fond mothers or wives who seemed to think that he was able to take care of men old enough to look after him.

On the troop trains and transports, unique opportunities for work were presented. Most men had a clear idea of what lay ahead and were disposed to take things seriously. In quiet chats, in confidential interviews, it was clearly revealed that what was uppermost in the minds of men was not prospective glory or " delight of battle," but the thought of those who were being left behind. On the boat it was more than ever necessary that the chaplain should be sports organizer, concert manager, and general provider of amusement and entertainment. Then, too, he had the best opportunity ever offered to get to know his men. They thawed out as they had never done in Canada and came to his cabin at all hours of the day. Many of them were very plastic to religious influences, especially if the crossing were rough; and if good resolutions passed when they landed, we need not be surprised.

England gave the Canadians warm welcome and took them to her heart. English girls set out to please, and, as the Registrar-General knows, they succeeded. Most of the Canadian camps were near London, and to that Mecca of the world every good Canadian went. Much has been said and written about the temptations of that city. London was like the rest of the world; there was evil for those who wanted it, and no power on earth can make a man go wrong unless of his own free will. Nothing more than was done could have been done to protect the troops. Medical officers lectured them, padres preached to them, and good women patrolled the streets to see that they did not mistake their home address.

As time went on a special service for the London area was instituted. At Victoria Station an office and inquiry bureau were opened where men could obtain information about places to which to go for amusement, and be told where to stay for their leave. As the number of hospitals around London increased, a staff of chaplains was kept for the sole purpose of visiting the Canadians in these hospitals, arranging drives or theatre parties for the convalescents, and generally giving attention to their wants and needs.

Camp life in England was like camp life in Canada, but intensified. There were drills, drills, and yet more drills; and of course there was rain. If ever spiritual help were needed, it was needed when the troops lived and ate and slept in mud; and if ever it were indignantly rejected, it was then. The wise chaplain gave as much time to concerts as he did to sermons, and took as much care of an entertainment programme as he took of Sunday services. His most appreciated efforts, perhaps, were those he made towards getting invitations for his men to country houses. Most people in England were very anxious to provide the troops from overseas with English hospitality, and the padre was the natural point of approach. Whereever he might be, the local clergyman was almost sure to ask him to preach in the local church, and from that introduction he could easily pass on to obtain privileges for his men. It is probable that these glimpses of home life did as much for the morals of the men as anything else; they kept home memories green.

Scattered here and there throughout England were Canadian hospitals, and each of these carried a chaplain. The day began, officially, at 9 a.m., but before that time the padre had been round the wards, administering Holy Communion and seeing whether anything unusual had developed during the night. Promptly at nine o'clock the doctors began their routine work in the wards, and naturally the padre was better out of the way. In the meantime he usually devoted himself to making arrangements for the day's excursions and outings. Every hospital had a number of convalescent patients who wished to go for drives. The local people gave very generously of their traps and automobiles for this purpose, but the demand for seats was always in excess of the supply. Under such circumstances, the work of deciding who should go and who should stay became rather onerous, especially when the nursing sisters were always sure that their patients got less than their due; and a couple of hours in the morning was all too short in which to see patients, doctors, and nurses in order to arrange which men might be sent. Around eleven o'clock the padre might venture into the wards and talk to the patients. Usually he began hospital work with the idea that there was very little in "visiting," but after a time he usually changed his mind. A ward contains, say, sixty patients; each one is an individual, not a "case," and it is as an individual, with all his rights and peculiarities, that each man must be approached. The constant change from man to man, each making new demands upon sympathy, tact, and understanding, is a drain upon nervous energy such as can be understood only by those who have done the work.

What did the chaplain talk about on such occasions? That depended upon his common sense. If he insisted on talking "religion" in season and out of season, he would soon have discovered that his approach synchronized with an uncontrollable desire to sleep on the part of the men. Usually he had sense enough to recognize the fact that if his spiritual life was developed in certain directions, the spiritual life of his flock was developed in others, and that no class of men can claim a monopoly in religious experience. If he did not recognize that fact then, he learned to recognize it afterwards, when the cheerfulness, the willing self-sacrifice, the patient endurance, and the heroic conduct of the men forced him to see that such virtues are born of God.

After lunch the padre would marshal the men for drives, see that they were put into the proper vehicles or sent to the houses, etc., to which they were invited, and then he would return to the wards. Some time during the afternoon he would look up "talent" for concerts and other entertainments, and make arrangements for the evening's amusement. Later in the war, a Y.M.C.A. officer was attached to many of the larger hospitals to attend to the entertainments, but for the first two years or so the chaplain had to do it all himself.

As can be readily understood, there were a thousand and one little jobs which cannot be recorded — messages for men, letters to their relatives, questions about pay, kit, etc., which consumed time and made the life of a hospital chaplain full from dawn to dark. Every evening saw a concert or cinema of which he had charge, and when that was over his work for the day was done, unless, as too often happened, he was called out of bed to watch with a man at the point of death.

It sometimes happened that when a chaplain was sent to France he was posted to a casualty clearing station instead of being sent straight to the line. In theory it ''broke him in'' gradually, and made the actual warfare easier, but in practice the effect was the reverse. There was no place on all the front more likely to make him dread the fighting than the casualty clearing station. Every day he saw men sadly wounded come from the line; day and night he heard the moans of the maimed; the smell of gas-gangrene was never absent from his nostrils; the pictures of agony never faded from his mind. He learned to think of the front as a place where men were shattered and mangled, for all who came from it had suffered hurt. His work here was much the same as that in a hospital in England, but with differences enough to make a description worth while.

The station was usually situated a few miles behind the lines, out of range of anything except the heavier guns. The patients who came to it had been hastily dressed at the field ambulances or advanced dressing stations; they came to the casualty clearing station for operations or other urgent treatment, and were then shipped to the base. They came at any hour of the day or night, but whenever they came the chaplain had to be on hand to receive them. It often happened that a man would get as far as the casualty clearing station and then his strength would fail and life flicker out. If the chaplain were there he could give the dying man comfort and take any messages he might wish to send. In the receiving-room the patient's regimental number, rank, name, and unit would be recorded in a book; the orderly medical officer would make a rapid diagnosis of the case, chalk the initial of a ward on his jacket, and he would be taken away and put to bed. Before being placed between the sheets, the patient would be stripped and washed, the contents of his pockets turned out and placed in a trinket bag which was hung at the head of the bed. If he were unconscious and, as usually happened, his pay-book did not contain the name of his next of kin, addresses could be found on letters in his pockets and the padre could write to his friends and so forestall the cold official notice. If he died, his effects were sent home. A wise chaplain would go through the letters, etc., before they were forwarded.

The padre in a casualty clearing station, as anywhere else, could make his job what he pleased. If he were so inclined, he could idle through the day; or he could occupy every moment of his time. In the wards there was always something to do, a patient to be eased, a letter to be written for a man too badly injured to do so for himself, besides the more formal duties laid down. He had it in his power to make the hours of suffering easier, and the sights and sounds of suffering spurred most men to work without rest. Few chaplains could do such work conscientiously for many months without a change, and the man who added to his overburdened day by attending to units of fit men in his vicinity was wise. The very sight of men who were sound and whole seemed to give him strength.

One of the hardest tasks laid upon a padre was that of writing to the relatives of the men who died, and a chaplain in a casualty clearing station was never free from this sad duty. If the work of writing to the relatives was so sad that most men would do anything rather than compose such letters, the replies received were more than compensation. The writer spent several months in a casualty clearing station, and at the end of that time had a box full of such sacred writings. In his mind was a conviction that they should be published and given to the world: they would have enriched our literature and in the years to come have made the hearts of men throb and their eyes fill at the thought that the writers were of their race and kindred. The evening before he left the casualty clearing station, he took them out and read them. Many were poor in spelling and artless in form; but all were rich in the eloquence of a burning patriotism and sublime faith. One said: " Our boy is gone. He was the last of our name and we hoped and prayed that he might be spared. But we feel that he died the noblest death a man could die, and we shall not complain." Another said: "Now that my husband has been killed I am the whole support of the family. There are five mouths to feed and what the future holds I cannot say, but I feel that God will not desert us."

By the flickering light of a candle the letters were read, until in the drear dawn of a Belgian morning the reader laid the last one down and wiped the tears from his eyes and was not ashamed. They were burned: for love and grief and patriotism and hope are sacred things, and we must not unveil their sanctities to the eyes of a curious world. But by the loss of those letters the world is poorer, for in all our literature there is nothing to which to liken them.

Besides the casualty clearing stations, there were scattered units on the lines of communication — railway troops, the Forestry Corps, and such like. As the Chaplain Services became better organized, the padres to these units were taken from the Corps Command and given an organization of their own. The work was very similar to that done in England, or even in Canada, — with the exception that an occasional bomb or shell would fall close to their quarters, — and therefore no further description is necessary.

From the casualty clearing station or the lines of communication, the chaplain was usually sent to work with troops in the field. He might go to infantry, artillery, or engineers; but wherever he went his work was much the same. It is significant that, looking back, one finds it difficult to put down what constituted a typical day's work. The padre had to make his day. There is little to report in going in and out among men, chatting and making friends, but that occupied a great deal of his time. His business was to be friendly with every man; to win his confidence and respect so that at any time he would feel free to come to the chaplain for help and advice. At the end of the day, all that the padre would be able to put into his report might be a few brief words — "Visited line," "At the guns," but that short entry would represent a well-occupied day.

Many of the chaplains felt the vagueness of their work; there were no results to show; there were no means of estimating what they did. Some of the more active-minded took unofficial duties such as censoring, writing the war diary, and charge of transport; and there is no doubt that in so doing they gained the respect of both officers and men, as well as the personal satisfaction of being engaged in something which showed tangible results.

Under such circumstances, the social work carried on by the department was extremely fortunate, not only in the service which it rendered to the troops, but in the occupation which a chaplain could find in it. In the fall of 1915, at the request of the Corps Commander, the chaplains hired the theatre in Bailleul and staged afternoon and evening entertainments. Fifteen hundred dollars was borrowed to purchase equipment, etc., and in six months this was paid back from the admission fee of two and a half cents per man. A club was also opened in the town, and so popular and opportune were the entertainments that divisions and brigades asked for extensions. Two tents, each capable of seating a battalion, were purchased in Paris, and the Boy Scouts of Canada provided another. Two cinema outfits were bought, and these were used to crowded houses from the spring of 1916 until the end of the war. Early in 1916, canteens were opened and continued so until the fall of 1918; in them the usual things which a soldier requires could be obtained. The goods sold were purchased chiefly from the Expeditionary Force canteens. The returns, together with the income from the cinema, were the only source of revenue. No public money was asked for or obtained. Receipts rose as high as two million francs for the year, and of this about ten per cent. was profit. This profit was returned to the troops in free supplies of stationery, athletic goods, pictures, coffee, etc. The accounts were audited every three months by the field cashier and published in Corps Orders. Three concert parties operated through the corps, and all such entertainments were free to the troops except when parties were hired from the English divisions.

The most spectacular and certainly a most appreciated service was that of supplying free coffee and biscuits during battles. This was begun on the Somme and continued until the end of the war. At the Somme two big tents were operated on the Brickfields, and four coffee stalls behind the line. One large tent, fully equipped with electric light, was handed over to the Medical Service, and used as a field ambulance. At Vimy the Chaplains' Social Department had three cinemas, seven canteens, and nine coffee stalls in operation. One large tent was partly destroyed by shell-fire and two of the men working in it killed. At Passchendaele a cinema near Ypres and a concert tent at Brandhoek were instituted, besides seven coffee stalls as near the line as they could go. During the open warfare which began at Amiens, only coffee-stall work was done. At every dressing station the familiar boiler was put up and free refreshments supplied.

Whilst the Corps Headquarters was at Camblain l'Abbé in 1918 an Officers' Club was opened. This supplied a long-felt need and was greatly appreciated by those who were able to use it.

One unusual feature of the supplies given throughout the corps was that of reprints of good pictures. Almost every dug-out, billet, and dining-room sported a display of *La Vie Parisienne* studies in anatomy. To counteract the effects of too prolonged attention to these representations of the female form divine, copies of good pictures were bought and distributed.

At Headquarters an excellent library of theological books was carried for the use of the chaplains, who tactfully borrowed them and returned them usually unread. At every canteen a lending library of good fiction was maintained for the use of the troops.

A month before the Armistice an arrangement was made with the Y.M.C.A. by which all social work in the field came under their management. All equipment was passed over to that organization, which, backed by a huge machine at home and generously supplied with money, was in a far better position to carry on the work.

Much of the success which undoubtedly attended the social efforts of the Chaplains' Department was due to the management by Canon Shatford, who had charge of the work from June, 1916, to October of the same year, and then from March, 1917, until October, 1918.

It is difficult to say just what constituted a typical day's work. The following brief description of an actual day, lasting from nine in the morning until past midnight, may give some idea of a chaplain's work when "nothing to report" was happening along the front. The notes were made in August, 1917, when the Canadian Corps was holding the Arras sector, and the places visited are around Liévin. It is a day in the life of an artillery chaplain.

At 9 a.m. he leaves his tent and proceeds to the battery wagon lines to visit the men. The majority of the drivers are out exercising their horses or with wagons on fatigues. Those who remain are cleaning the horse lines, repairing the rough stables, or attending to their harness. The padre wanders from group to group, bidding "Good morning" here and there and discussing the day's news. One thing is immediately noticeable. There is a common ground between the parson and his flock such as rarely obtains at home. He shares their life, their dangers, and some of their discomforts; their anxieties are his anxieties, their occasions of relief the same as his. The consequence is that there is little of that constraint which exists all too frequently between clergy and laity. It may be that having seen him day after day in various circumstances, that awkward divinity which hedges round a priest has faded away and the men realize that he is as human as they.

Presently he comes to a little group of men leaning upon their shovels and hotly engaged in argument. He is called into the discussion and asked to decide. The question involved is: "Why did it rain just before the fight for Zonnebeke, and so spoil the British attack? If the cause of the Allies is right, then God must be on their side. If He is, one would expect some assistance, even in the matter of weather. But the weather seems always in favour of the Boche—our attacks on the Somme, Vimy, and Zonnebeke have all been spoiled by rain. How can we reconcile the positions, our cause right and therefore God's, and His apparent non-intervention on our behalf?"

As every soldier knows, this question cropped up time and time again. The hold it obtained on the imagination of others than those at the front may be seen by reference to the newspapers of that time. The chaplain whose day we are following makes some attempt at an answer by saying that we do not know whether it is or is not advantageous to the final outcome of the war that our plans should miscarry by reason of rain.

After more discussion and conversation, he visits the officers and is given little commissions, such as messages about rations, ammunition, etc., to take to the guns. The telephone wire has been cut by shelling and so he is able to be of service in this way.

En route to the guns he calls in at other wagon lines, ammunition dumps, etc., and then goes on. The enemy is retaliating for a midnight ''shoot'' and heavy shells are ''crumping'' around. As he walks up the road there is a tremendous explosion and pieces of shell come hurtling through the air. Having long since lost that special brand of idiocy which makes inexperienced men walk upright when fragments of steel are whistling by, he ''flops'' in the muddy ditch by the side of the road. It is clear that one of the enemy projectiles has burst on a pile of ammunition somewhere, and caused it to explode. Warily raising his head, he sees the scene of disaster, a battery position away on the left. He races over and finds two guns overturned, men of the gun detachments wounded and some dead. The captain in command is busy with bandages and the padre assists. Whilst they are tending the wounded, an ambulance arrives and carries the sufferers to the field hospital in Ablain St. Nazaire, and then the captain puts the remaining guns on to searching for the battery which has shelled him.

One of his subalterns has been killed: he was one of the best, and obviously the commander is distressed. Almost bitterly he turns to the padre and demands why it is that so often the best men are killed whilst so many whom the world could easily spare are unhurt. The padre does not know: he has asked the same question himself a score of times, but obviously he is expected to know, and in some vague way most men hold the clergy as being partly responsible for "the acts of God." He says he cannot answer the question, and whilst they are discussing it the cook announces lunch. The meal over, he goes on to another battery, which, owing to its skilful camouflage, is difficult to find. At last, however, it is discovered, and here again he spends some time with the officers and men, after which he proceeds to the forward guns, where his messages about rations and ammunition are delivered. Arrangements are made for Sunday services, and as it is now past five o'clock he prepares to return. Before he can get away, one of the gunners insists on showing him a captured German gun which they are about to use against the enemy. He has to wait and see the shoot and then, before the usual retaliation comes, turns his face towards "home." Little units are scattered here and there along his path, and it is well to put his head inside the doors of dug-outs to show that he has not forgotten them. By the time he reaches his own camp, the other officers are sitting down to dinner, and he gets in just on time. When the meal is finished he retires to his own tent and begins to try to catch up with a correspondence which somehow is always behind; but no sooner is he settled than a friendly sergeant comes in for a chat. It is past nine when the sergeant leaves: he cannot very well tell him to go before then, as these little talks are an important part of his work; and just as he is saying "Good night" an orderly comes from the infantry battalion over the way to ask if the chaplain and the doctor will "run over" to the infantry mess. As they are going into the line next morning and putting on a big raid the following night, he calls for the doctor and they go. Soon after eleven he pleads tiredness and escapes, thinking that at last he will get down to his writing in peace, only to discover that in his absence a pile of letters to be censored has been placed upon his table and must be read that night so as to catch the morning's mail. By the time they are all gone through it is half-past twelve, and, tired out, he goes to bed.

There is very little in a day like that. To a man of active and practical mind it seems that most of the time has been frittered away. All that he can put into his report is ''Visited guns and wagon lines,'' and that is all that he has done. The other officers can say that they have taken an exercise ride, a stable parade, a gun-drill, have fired so many rounds of ammunition and destroyed an enemy trench; the very batman who cleans the padre's boots can point to something accomplished; but the chaplain cannot say, ''See, there is the result of my labour,'' for, in the nature of the case, he has no tangible results to show. Put briefly, he has gone to the guns, not altogether without danger, and chatted with various men. It may be that the mere fact of seeing him has brought comfort to a war-weary soul; it may be that when the captain whose subaltern was killed is bitter at the blind waste of life, he will remember the discussion they had; it may be that the sergeant will be kept straight by the friendship which put aside important letters to chat and smoke with him at the end of a tiring day; it may be that when that young infantry subaltern who said ''Cheerio,'' in a voice that meant ''Good-bye,'' is taking his men across No Man's Land in the darkness of the following night he will think of the padre and the padre's God and be comforted. But of these things the chaplain can know nothing. On the report by which most of his work is judged he can put five words — ''Visited guns and wagon lines.''

As a rule all Anglican and Catholic padres began their Sunday duties by Holy Communion or Mass. After breakfast the parade services were taken. Attendance at these was usually compulsory, a fact to be regretted, as most men who served in the ranks will testify. Sermons had to be brief and to the point, dealing with the vital things of life rather than with speculative theology. The services were shortened and otherwise adapted to the time and place; not infrequently they were shortened by the enemy.

Every chaplain was supposed to minister to such units in his vicinity as were without a padre of their own, and so it was no uncommon thing for him to conduct three services in the morning and one or two in the afternoon. In the evening he would usually speak in the voluntary service in the Y.M.C.A. hut, where he could always be assured of a good congregation.

Church services were held in any place available — a trench, a barn, a house, or the open field. Farther back, the "Y" huts were freely lent to all denominations, whilst at Divisional Headquarters a theatre could usually be obtained. The Roman Catholic churches of the country were not open to Protestant use — there was an order forbidding the use even of a ruined church — and so some unusual places were used for services.

Among the rank and file of the chaplains the greatest co-operation and *camaraderie* prevailed. Whereever possible, denominational differences were disregarded and all worked together. Even the Anglicans held open Communions, to which any man of any denomination might come. There have been instances of a Presbyterian preparing Anglicans for Confirmation; of a Methodist arranging an altar for a Roman Mass; of a Roman Catholic chaplain walking many miles to bring a Baptist padre to attend a dying Baptist boy.

Every chaplain respected the faith of another and was more willing to give than to take. The only discord in the harmony was that appointments and promotions went by denomination instead of by merit or seniority; but that was because the denominations at home demanded their full pounds of flesh — each one wanted its full quota of "colonels" and "majors," and they brought pressure to bear upon Ottawa, and the administration overseas had to give way.

Success or failure as a chaplain depended almost entirely upon personality: tact, sympathy, and understanding counted for more than anything else. With these and manliness, a padre could win the respect and confidence of his men; without them he was doomed to fail.

One of the most brilliant men in the Church of England — a man whose name appears on the title page of very learned books — told the writer that he felt himself a failure at the front, and that he was applying to go home. "I cannot get close to the men," he said. "There's something between us which I cannot bridge." It almost broke his heart to go, but he was wise enough to see his limitations, and so went. In his college lecturing and his cathedral preaching he was back in his proper sphere, whilst men with a tithe of his learning and special ability ministered successfully to the troops.

Among Canadian chaplains one man of outstanding personality caught the imagination and won the affection of all denominations and all ranks. That man, of course, was George Frederick Scott, C.M.G., D.S.O., Senior Chaplain of the 1st Division. Poet and scholar, he combined within himself — to borrow the words of a master of description — "a deal of Ariel, just a streak of Puck," much of Sir Galahad, of Francis of Assisi most of all — and something perhaps of Don Quixote.

Wherever things were most dangerous and help was most needed, the canon was to be found. Men worshipped him. He brought more credit to the Chaplain

Services than any other man. His appearance among a battalion or in a crowded theatre evoked such scenes of enthusiasm as are rarely seen. It seemed that he led a charmed life. At Passchendaele he walked through falling shell, looking for wounded where it seemed that nothing could live. An officer, scanning the churning mud before him, turned to his companion and said, ''There's someone out there looking for death.'' The man with him turned his glasses on the wanderer. ''It's Canon Scott.'' ''Oh,'' said the first speaker, ''they can't hit him.'' At last, after four years of gambling with death, the canon was hit, but not seriously.

Being a little lower than the angels, the canon had his faults, the chief of which was an impatience of office routine. He could not see that ''Visited line'' described a day's work, and he was a sore trial to the little official minds who stayed back in safety and made ''Digests of Reports.'' But the reports are forgotten, and the officials, too, whilst George Frederick Scott is enshrined securely in the hearts of men who fought in France and Flanders.

To the men of the Canadian Mounted Rifles the name of Robert Ridgeway, M.C. and Bar, chaplain, is one to be spoken with honour and respect. He lived in the line. His commanding officer is said to have refused to allow another decoration to be given to his battalion until Ridgeway's services were officially recognized — and when they were he forgot to put the ribbon ''up.'' The following story is given at second-hand, but the authority is good. A ''certain person of importance'' had come from England to tell the chaplains in the field how to do their work. ''Get in right with the general,'' he said. ''That's the first thing to do. Get in right with the general and you'll get on.''

''Damn the general,'' said Ridgeway, rising in his seat. ''A chaplain's first duty is to his men.'' And he went out.

The writer may be wrong, and contentedly so, but that expression is more to Ridgeway's honour than many unctuous words.

Another chaplain whom the older C.M.R.'s remember and love is Allan Gillies Wilken, taken prisoner on the Somme in June, 1916. Wilken overstayed his tour of duty in the line to do the work of one who had important business farther back. The Boche came over and carried Wilken off and kept him for nearly two years in German prison camps. He volunteered to go with the rank and file in preference to the officers' camp, to which he was entitled to be sent. Courts-martial and punishments came to him for his efforts on behalf of the prisoners, whilst the man who should have relieved him in the line received promotion and rewards. When the time came for Wilken to be exchanged, the British Government asked him to stay and continue his labours for the men. He remained for some time, and when he came home even the promotion which was his due was denied. It had gone to others with important business farther back. But there are greater rewards than bits of ribbon or steps in rank, and the greatest reward is to feel that one has played the man. Allan Gillies Wilken has that and is content.

Space permits mention of only a few who should be mentioned—E. E. Graham, D.S.O., M.C., recommended for the V.C. for acts of bravery of which a colonel said that he had "never seen any man, drunk or sober, do the like;" William Henry Davies, M.C., killed at Le Quesnel whilst going forward with his men; "Bob" Thompson, M.C., who had the rare distinction — more rare than courage—of refusing promotion three times because he thought that the rank would hinder his work; Arthur McGreer, thrust into command of all the chaplains in the Canadian Corps over the heads of many older and more experienced than he, and who did his work well as an A.D.C.S. and never recommended himself for a decoration; and John Almond, C.M.G., C.B.E., who left the line to go to London to reorganize the Chaplain Services, and had to wrestle with ecclesiastics and powers and politicians in high places in order to get the department on its feet. It is unfair to pick out names. None but God's bright angel knows how many toiled faithfully and honestly, day after day and month after month, and whose record no man knows. There is glory in obscurity sometimes — when men forget to "get in right with the general" and are satisfied to serve: did not Ben Adhem's name lead all the rest?

No true chaplain strove for honours and rewards, and very few of them — looking around on the men in the ranks, those great soldiers who went over the top in the drear dawn of day, or who held a dirty ditch whilst Death twined his fingers round their throats — thought that they deserved them. Far more than any other on the front, the padre was in a position to realize that the big man out there was the "buck private," he who endured mud, misery, and the risk of being maimed, — grousing, cursing, but patient and long-suffering, and without swank. He got very few rewards or honours, and he cared nothing for that. His job was to "get through and get home," and it was honour enough to any man to be privileged to do his bit in such brave company.

This narrative began by saying that the chaplain was part of the military machine, appointed to produce and maintain religious conviction as a help to victory. He was, but he was more. Machinery is great, but humanity is greater, and the padre had to forget the machine in his care for men.

He was the soldier's friend, or he was a failure.

To him was given the high honour of holding the chalice to the lips of heroes; of giving them God's stirrup-cup as they went out to battle, or crossed to where the trumpets sounded victory over death. He was a priest of God: but the glory and the sacrament of his high calling were not in his office, but in the fact that men who knew him could call him "Friend."[1]

2. The Canadian Y.M.C.A.

Forty-three years before the Great War, the Canadian Y.M.C.A. had instituted military work in the camp at Niagara. When the South African War broke out it sent representatives to work on the veldt. But its big opportunity came in 1914.

A few days after the formation of Valcartier Camp, permission to operate Y.M.C.A.'s there had been granted by the Minister of Militia. The association was already on the ground and in some sort of working order, but permission was necessary to place it on a military basis. Under the direction of F. T. Best — a veteran of the South African War — and A. W. Forgie, of the National Council of the Y.M.C.A.'s Staff, a most desirable location was secured in the central part of the great camp grounds, and five marquees and ten bell tents were erected. A post office, reading and writing tents, canteen, barber shop, shoeshine parlour, and huge entertainment marquee were opened; religious services were held nightly, and the Y.M.C.A. quickly gained the confidence of the men.

When the First Contingent sailed for England there were with it six "Y" officers, with the honorary rank of captain, whose one idea was "Service to the Troops." They were H. A. Pearson, H. Whiteman,

---

[1] 426 Canadian chaplains served overseas. The following honours and awards were gained by the Canadian Chaplain Service: C.M.G., 5; C.B.E., 3; O.B.E., 6; D.S.O., 9; M.C., 36; Bar to the M.C., 2; D.C.M., 1; M.M., 3. Mentioned in despatches, 32; Home Service Mentions, 13. Two chaplains were killed in action, one died of wounds, two died of sickness while on active service, and one was drowned when the *Llandovery Castle* was torpedoed.

A. W. Forgie, A. Pequegnat, C. Graham, and Oscar Irwin. In those days the "Y" men felt their way gingerly, for they were breaking new ground. All commanding officers had not yet realized that the association was something more than a luxury, and that its ministrations in the days to come were to mean so much in maintaining the *moral* of the troops. The Y.M.C.A. officer had few definite duties, and the high position he won in later days was secured by "making good" at the first.

In England the work done at Valcartier was repeated. Huts and tents were erected and a "Y" programme put on. There was rain, there was mud, there was spinal meningitis, and in the midst of all that misery the secretaries toiled indefatigably.

And then — France!

When the Canadians crossed the English Channel the real difficulties began. All troops in France came under General French, the British Commander-in-Chief, and the British War Establishment obtained. This establishment made no provision for Y.M.C.A. officers and so none could officially be carried. Somehow they crossed to France and somehow they stayed, and when a staff officer was sent from G.H.Q. to investigate the irregularity he recommended that it continue.

An extract from an early report will show where the "Y" officer stood then: "The relationship of the Y.M.C.A. to the Army was a doubtful one. Add to this the fact that the association, like other branches of the Service, was quite unprepared to cope with the task on hand; that there was no organization, no equipment, no special duties and no precedent, and you have some idea of the situation." The writer of the report goes on to tell of the march into Kemmel Shelters. The officers were billeted, the men were billeted, but the "Y" man wandered uncared for and forlorn. None knew where he should go or what he should do. At last he "found a cold tiled floor and tried to sleep with his boots for a pillow." The next day someone took compassion on him and helped him to get "fixed up."

This is in marked contrast with the latter days of the war, when the Y.M.C.A. officers were official members of the staff at Brigade, Division, and Corps Headquarters; when brigadiers sought their services, and commanding officers of units and their men protested vigorously if they were neglected.

So also is there a contrast between the business of those days and later on. Then "there was one connecting link in the person of Captain Lee, who represented the Canadian Y.M.C.A. in London, and whose duty it was to provide the officers in France with one thousand sheets of writing paper and envelopes each week, and to purchase for these officers certain supplies which could be sent by parcel post."

At the time of the Armistice the Canadian "Y" had a business turnover of more than six million dollars for the year; it had 250 branches scattered around the globe wherever Canadians were to be found; it had set up 1,200 different places for the troops in France within twelve months; it had in the same time given 291 free concerts and cinemas, conducted innumerable athletic meets at a cost of $486,000, and contributed $297,000 in cash, stationery, smokes, and drinks. Not only that, but from the half dozen officers who crossed with the First Contingent had sprung an organization which consisted of at least one thousand officers and men, carried upon military establishment, and over five thousand civilian volunteer workers, both men and women. Its ramifications extended to France, Belgium, England, Scotland, Palestine, Northern Russia, Siberia, Holland, and, after the Armistice, to Germany.

Formal authorization for the establishment came in May, 1917, when provision was made for 114 officers and 265 other ranks in England and France. In little more than a year from then the personnel of the "Y" was 140 officers and 745 other ranks.

Although the most spectacular work was done in the battle areas, yet the service rendered in training camps, hospitals, and leave centres was of equal importance. Beginning with Valcartier, the Red Triangle was set up in every training camp throughout Canada.

During the entire period that men were being trained the Y.M.C.A. was with them at the numerous military centres covering the Dominion from coast to coast. Not a single soldier reached the other side without experiencing the helpfulness of the "Y."

When the wounded began to return home, the Red Triangle met them at Montreal, Quebec, and Halifax with its programme of welcome and cheer. At each of these points special staffs were maintained, and towards the close of the war, when returning men arrived in ever-increasing numbers, these staffs were augmented to cope with the enormous task of ministering to their welfare. The policy of free drinks and refreshments that had proved of so much benefit in the war area was continued at the Canadian ports of debarkation.

Further developments of the service for returned men consisted of transport and troop-train work. Secretaries with special equipment travelled on all transports carrying the troops home. It was the duty of these men to organize entertainments on board, and to conduct bureaus of information whereby soldiers were advised as to Government arrangements for veterans and where information of peculiar interest to returned men was supplied.

A similar work was done on the troop-trains, the Y.M.C.A. representatives being business men and others from the districts to which the men were returning. The trains were accompanied to their destination by the "Y" men, most of whom were voluntary workers. In many cases the work on both troopships and trains consisted of ministering to the welfare not only of the soldiers but of their wives and children as well. The cost of the troop-train service, which included periodical free distribution en route of candies, fruits, and cigarettes, as well as literature, averaged one hundred dollars per train.

Getting the men home did not end the obligation of the Y.M.C.A. It was found that thousands of the veterans congregated at the large centres of population. To care for these men, many of them waiting for discharge, thousands of them unsettled in mind as to their final destination, became a further charge upon the association. What were known as Red Triangle Huts or Clubs were established at strategic points. These buildings, either leased or built for the purpose, became veritable soldiers' hotels where returned men could find bed and board at considerably less than current prices charged for such privileges elsewhere. Each Red Triangle Club became a rendezvous for soldiers who found there a warm welcome from the staff and voluntary women and lay workers, and where through the Service Bureau thousands of men found employment and saved thousands of dollars in adjustments of pay and pension through the expert advice tendered them.

It is interesting to note that when, owing to lack of funds, it was proposed to close the Red Triangle Club in Toronto, a special petition, signed by fourteen hundred returned men, was presented by a deputation, headed by the mayor of Toronto, asking that the club be kept open. As a result the National Council decided to continue operating the club until April, 1920. This policy was extended to all the Red Triangle Clubs throughout Canada.

General Sir Arthur Currie, speaking at a banquet given by the local officers in his honour at Toronto in

August, 1919, went out of his way to pay a special tribute to the work of the "Y." He said:

"We must not forget the Y.M.C.A. All of us know the splendid service which that organization rendered at the front. There is no need for me to say anything to you about it. You who were there know the magnificent work it did. I want to say that I am prepared to stand on any platform in this country and tell those who contributed funds to that splendid institution that their money was well invested and wisely spent."

In the beginning of its operations in England the Y.M.C.A. had but nine centres; before the end of 1918 it had grown to embrace eighty-four. When the recruit came, fresh from Canada, the association provided him with facilities for amusement and additions to his comfort. A round of entertainment was provided, canteens were open for his use, athletics were organized and encouraged.

In the Canadian hospitals throughout England the "Y" did much excellent service. For instance, the theatre at the Canadian Military Hospital at Orpington was turned over to the association and used as a reading, writing, and recreation room. In other hospitals work was done in the wards or as circumstances allowed.

The Canadian Forestry Corps, scattered as it was through Great Britain, in many cases far from towns, was provided with a full "Y" programme which went far towards relieving the monotony of camp life.

London attracted the Canadian on leave, and the "Y" was there to look after him. Information bureaus, kit stores, tourist agencies, dances, and, not least, the Beaver Hut were provided. At any of the bureaus the soldier would be given such information about places, trains, hotels, theatres, churches, etc., as he might require; at the kit stores he could deposit his pack and equipment until the end of his leave; at the tourist agencies he could arrange a tour to any part of the British Isles, and at the Beaver Hut he could make himself at home.

The Beaver Hut. It was after long consideration of the needs of the men in London that the site of the old Tivoli Theatre was taken over by the Canadian Y.M.C.A. For a year and a half a little information bureau had stood there, but permission to erect a larger building was difficult to obtain. Only buildings which could be regarded as necessary from a military point of view were allowed to be erected, but the authorities at last were convinced that a home of their own for Canadian soldiers came under that category, and so the Beaver Hut came into being.

The hut consisted of a rotunda, lounge, quiet room, billiard room, kitchen, dining-room with a capacity for three thousand meals per day; dormitories with 165 beds; kit storage for seven hundred kits; lavatories, shoe-shine parlour, and barber shop. A bed cost eighteen cents per night and included towel, soap, use of lavatories, shower baths, and kit room. A rationed meal cost eighteen cents. The building was open day and night, and all soldiers of the Allied forces were welcome. Every day an orchestra played from 3 p.m. to 10 p.m. in the lounge, and entertainments were given in the Little Theatre, adjacent, at intervals from 2 p.m. to 10.30 p.m. In the hut a staff of eight hundred Canadian and English women, under the superintendence of Miss Helen Fitz-Randolph, of New Brunswick, assisted by Lady Beaverbrook, cared for the men. In the ranks of this staff were women of title, and women who earned their daily bread in office or factory or store. They were one in their desire to serve the men of Canada.

Every effort was made to acquaint the men of the Canadian Corps with the facilities for clean entertainment and amusement provided in London for them. The following advertisement was inserted in

Canadian Official Photograph

OFFICERS OF THE 26TH BATTALION, 1918

the *Canadian Daily Record,* the official newspaper for the troops:

CANADIAN Y.M.C.A. IN LONDON

CENTRES

Beaver Hut, 66, Strand, including Dormitories, Restaurant, Billiard Room, Theatre, Kit Store, Barber Shop and Shoe Shine, Shower Baths, 2,500 meals served daily. 160 beds available. Theatre every afternoon and evening.

C.A.P.C. Hut, Millbank — 3,900 meals daily.

Kit Stores, Victoria — Medical Service and Viséing Offices in building. 50 yards from Victoria Station. Accommodation 3,000 kits.

Officers' Hut, Eaton Square — Canada Wing, an addition to Queen Mary Hut for officers. Cubicles, smoking-room, bathing facilities.

Leave Department — All information *re* Tours and Hospitality in Great Britain.
Address inquiries to O.C. Leave Department, Beaver Hut, Strand, London.

Recreation Grounds, Chiswick — London Polytechnic grounds, boat-house. Tennis, cricket, football, baseball. Track and field athletic equipment supplied free.

Officers' Clubs. Whilst the man in the ranks has always come first in consideration, yet the officer has not been neglected by the "Y."

Many junior officers, recently promoted from the ranks, found London hotel prices beyond their means. Not only that, but accommodation was limited and many a man, fresh from the front, was compelled to spend the first night of his brief leave in wandering from place to place seeking shelter.

To meet this need a Canadian wing was added by the Y.M.C.A. to the Queen Mary Hut for officers in Eaton Square; information bureaus kept lists of places where accommodation might be obtained; and finally a large, modern, and convenient hotel in Bloomsbury was taken over.

In the camps — Seaford, Bramshott, Witley, and Rhyl — Officers' Clubs were opened and did much to relieve the monotony of life spent so far from towns.

In France, Officers' Clubs at Villers au Bois, Neuville St. Vaast, Château de la Haie, Hersin, Bully Grenay, Ecoivre, and Ecurie were established and proved an inestimable boon.

Canteens. One of the first "extras" demanded by men in France was a canteen where supplementary rations could be purchased. As a rule units conducted their own canteens and used the profits which accrued to augment regimental funds; but the scheme was not always satisfactory and under mobile warfare it failed entirely. Railheads changed their locations; Expeditionary Force Canteens — the official supply depots for canteen stocks — could not always keep up with the troops; supplies were often hard to obtain and more and more the canteen business passed into the hands of the more mobile Y.M.C.A. From the modest arrangement already mentioned whereby one Canadian Y.M.C.A. officer sent from England a thousand sheets of paper and envelopes per week, and such parcels as mail-boats permitted, the canteen business grew to such gigantic proportions that, as already stated, its turnover in the last year of the war for France and England was nearly six million dollars. Of course, profits were made. No canteen was allowed to sell goods in France at more or less than the price laid down by the Expeditionary Force Canteen's Committee, which sat at the War Office. Price lists were published and hung in every canteen where customers could see them.

What was done with the profits? A fixed percentage (five per cent. of sales, or about twenty per cent. of the gross profits) was returned in cash to unit commanders to be used as they thought fit. In this way $163,368 was handed over in 1918. This money went into regimental funds and was used for extra food, rubber boots, straw for billets, and other comforts for the men.

When fighting was in progress the men going up to the line could halt at a "Y" coffee stall en route and obtain free hot tea or coffee. The same arrangement obtained on their return. During battles, extras, such as chocolate, cigarettes, and matches, etc., were distributed free.

Transport Difficulties. One of the greatest difficulties found by the "Y" in France was that of transport. Supplies could be carried to the ports and shipped to railhead in the ordinary way, but often railhead was some distance behind the main body of the troops and the problem was how to carry the goods from railhead to the corps.

The Y.M.C.A. had no transport of its own; the one or two light cars upon its strength were absurdly inadequate to the task, and so it became necessary to borrow lorries and wagons for the work. In stationary warfare this was not very difficult: the mere fact that it was "Y.M.C.A. stuff for the troops" was enough; but when the corps moved the real trouble began. Every available vehicle had an allotted load and none could be spared for extra work. It was often necessary to go outside the corps — to Army Troops or even to another army altogether — before transport could be obtained. Obtained it was in every case without fail, often to the complete mystification of the Department of Supply and Transport.

Problems of Personnel. In March, 1917, the Canadian Y.M.C.A. was placed upon the official establishment and a certain number of men from each division allotted to the work. Many of these men were magnificent — and some were not. It was not to be expected that commanding officers would let their best men go, and it sometimes happened that men with records which rendered their absence from their own units desirable, were drafted to the "Y."

Some well-founded criticism was directed against the organization by men who were perhaps not well served by these enforced servants of the association. It was difficult to discriminate between the actual "Y" workers and those drafted into it by the military authorities, whose business it was to keep the best men for the line.

Entertainments. No man can estimate the part played by the "Y" in maintaining the *moral* of the men in the field. Concerts, cinemas, sing-songs, athletics, etc., all contributed to keep them from going stale.

A man could come out of the line, change and wash at the divisional baths, and then proceed to any one of half a dozen places of entertainment to forget the sights he had so lately seen and the deeds he had been called upon to do. Not only did the entertainments preserve *moral;* they saved many a man's sanity.

Great emphasis was laid upon athletics. The Canadian "Y" had fully qualified physical directors attached to each division, and every "Y" man had been trained to stage athletic games. Baseball, football, tennis, cricket, etc., were scheduled and leagued, whilst track athletics received marked attention. The entire equipment, including costumes, required for these sports were supplied by the "Y" on a free-loan basis.

One of the most spectacular events ever staged in the athletic world was the Canadian Championship Meet on Dominion Day of 1918. At the little town of Tinques on the Arras front over 35,000 troops gathered to witness the finals of the events in which they had been competing for weeks. Had it not been necessary for some troops to hold the line the whole corps would have been there. As it was, almost the whole corps was represented. It was estimated that about 70,000 men competed in preliminaries and finals. For months past the scheme had been prepared, and as soon as permission to go ahead was given, over $100,000 worth of athletic equipment was distributed on loan by the "Y" to the troops. Philip Gibbs, the famous war correspondent, wrote at the time: "It was one of the most remarkable scenes I have ever seen. It was a holiday in war-time, and every man knew that in another day or two, or in another week or two, he might be in the midst of battle, so that his jollity had a sweet spice to it. And all those men looked so fine and hard and splendid, that to see them gave one a sense of safety, and of victory in the fighting that must come." Representatives from all the armies in France attended; Canada's Prime Minister and the Duke of Connaught came also. The meet cost the Canadian Y.M.C.A. 44,560 francs. What it was worth in increased *moral* none can estimate.

Huts. The Red Triangle on a thousand huts, tents, barns, billets, and dug-outs forms one of the few pleasant memories of the years of war; to quote a writer in a previous volume in this series: "In three years, the Y.M.C.A.'s Red Triangle became almost as well known as the Red Cross as a sign denoting an expression of the good will of the people at home towards the men of the forces."[1] It has stood for the thought of the people in Canada, who, by their generous and often self-sacrificing giving, have made the work of the association possible; it has stood for the helping hand and the cheery welcome — the one place where men could escape from the soulless machinery of war and relax as in the house of a friend.

Wherever possible huts were erected. In them there was light and warmth, books and magazines to read, writing paper and pens at hand all day. In the evenings they were the scene of concert or cinema or a short religious service. On Sunday mornings the huts were loaned to the chaplains for parade services, regardless of denominational difference. It meant much for men to escape from dug-outs or uncomfortable "bivvies" into such places.

---

[1] See Vol. II, p. 204.

From the base to the front the Y.M.C.A. was with the troops, striving to do them service. The association followed them on leave whether in the British Isles or France. Something has been said of the work in London; a similar work was undertaken in Paris. Many men, realizing that a priceless opportunity was to hand, elected to spend their leave in the French capital; but there were few facilities for such an experience except at great expense. Hotel charges outrivalled those in London; there were no welfare agencies such as so happily obtained in England — and Paris had temptations all her own. The Americans had placed the city out of bounds, and the Canadian authorities seriously considered as to whether it would not be wise for them to follow their example. Then the Canadian Y.M.C.A. stepped in, took over the Hôtel d'Iêna and ran it for the troops. It was a first-class hotel, with silken hangings, beautifully carved furniture, and every modern luxury. The rates for the private soldier were from 75 cents to $1.00 for a bed, or from $2.50 to $3.00 for room and three meals — a striking contrast with the prices prevailing in Paris at the time. The hotel was the centre of a series of excursions and entertainment; men went to Versailles and Fontainebleau, saw the things worth seeing, and came away satisfied with what they had seen. Theatre and opera parties set out each evening, special terms being given to the Canadian troops. From the time the Canadian Y.M.C.A. took over the work in Paris there was no mention of placing the city "out of bounds."

Prisoners of War. Special efforts were made to assist prisoners of war. In September, 1918, Lieut.-Colonel Birks visited Holland and found 375 Canadians interned. Accordingly, a "Y" officer was sent there in the next month and was able to do much for the men, both before and after the Armistice. At the Hôtel d'Iêna in Paris many returned prisoners found a warm welcome and a wooing back into the ways of free men. Service was provided for prisoners of war returning through Mons and Valenciennes. A special service of free milk, coffee, chocolate, and biscuits was supplied to French refugees from evacuated areas and also to the starving people left in the wake of the retreating Hun. The French Government expressed their warm appreciation of this service.

In Far Fields. Among the Canadian troops in Russia, — at Archangel and on the Murman Coast, — as well as in Palestine, where they worked among the Canadian Railway Troops, the Y.M.C.A. built up a much appreciated work. To men so far from home, amid climatic conditions so trying, and in countries where intercourse with the natives was almost out of the question, the ministrations of the Canadian "Y" were doubly welcome. Wherever the Maple Leaf has gone the Red Triangle has accompanied it.

The Armistice. With the cessation of hostilities the need for entertainment and diversion increased. There was a sudden reaction from the strain of war which let loose energies which had to be guided into proper channels. The Y.M.C.A. redoubled its efforts and put on the largest and most comprehensive programme in its history. In the occupied territories concerts, cinemas, and sing-songs were in full swing every day and night. In Germany and in Belgium local theatres were taken over, sometimes with their staffs, and operated by the "Y." Two divisions and the Corps Troops went to Germany; for one of these divisions alone twelve theatres and fifteen canteens were opened. The part that these canteens played is shown by the fact that in thirteen days the troops spent more than $50,000 in them. In one brigade alone four cinemas were operated, 2,500 men being entertained in one night to a cinema show, a supper, and a variety show.

Back in Belgium, where two divisions remained, and where the Canadian troops from Germany retired on demobilization, similar entertainment was provided. Special tours to Brussels, Waterloo, Antwerp, Bruges, Ostend, and Ghent were arranged. In one month nearly fifteen thousand men went to these places under the auspices of the Canadian "Y." In Liège and Brussels entire divisions were entertained free.

At Havre, special efforts were made to fill the wants of the returning soldier. One feature was a cinema, to seat 1,500, which cost $15,000.

At the base camps at Etaples and Aubin St. Vaast the usual activities were carried on. Aubin St. Vaast boasted an athletic ground containing in one area a football field, five indoor baseball diamonds, a running track, three quoiting pitches, five tennis courts, tug-of-war ground, boxing and wrestling rings, jumping pit and fields for lacrosse, cricket, badminton, and mounted events.

One interesting feature staged was that of the Canadian Citizenship Campaign. Special speakers were brought from Canada to address the troops on the various phases of demobilization, repatriation, and conditions prevailing at home. The service was greatly appreciated by men who had been for so long a period out of direct touch with Dominion affairs, and many were able to decide their after-the-war vocations and to settle business at home because of the information given.

Another pleasing service was in the bringing to France of two star Shakespearian companies which rendered Shakespeare's magic art as many had never seen it rendered before.

When the move was made to England, the "Y" was able to attach a canteen car, with a library and gramophone, to each train en route to Havre. At every stop throughout the long journey of four days, hot drinks and other refreshments were provided and athletic equipment brought out to relieve the monotony of the trip.

For the long wait in England, previous to embarking for Canada, a huge programme of entertainment was put on. The Leave Department was taken advantage of as never before. In one month (March, 1919) 13,934 men were sent on tours of Great Britain by the International Y.M.C.A. Hospitality League, whilst the Beaver Hut alone sent 1,000 in the same period.

Almost from the beginning chaplains and Y.M.C.A. officers had made individual efforts to interest and instruct the men when off duty. Bible Study Classes gave the idea of study classes in other subjects, and so keenly were these taken up that a whole educational field was seen to be open. Then again, the popular lectures which were so important a feature of Y.M.C.A. entertainment suggested popularized college lectures.

In 1917 Dr. H. M. Tory, president of the University of Alberta, was sent overseas by the National Council of Y.M.C.A.'s to investigate the situation and report upon the possibilities for a plan of popular education in England and France. Whilst Dr. Tory was back in Canada, laying before the universities the scheme which he had outlined, the study classes which were carried on in the different areas were given official recognition by the military authorities and a committee of Y.M.C.A. officers and chaplains, together with a representative from Headquarters, was appointed. Under this committee the educational work was carried on by means of Khaki Colleges and Battalion Schools in England and a series of Battalion Schools in France. A Correspondence Department was also maintained for soldiers living under circumstances where local organizations were not practicable.

In France General Lipsett had undertaken the organization of educational work among the men, and the University of Vimy Ridge[1] came into being. Necessarily, the work done was occasional, but it had the important effect of keeping alive interest in educational matters.

Later on an Advisory Council, representing the universities of Canada, was appointed, with Dr. Tory as educational director, and the whole organization was legally constituted by Order-in-Council of the Dominion Government, and financial support was provided by the Government and by the Y.M.C.A. In its 1918 campaign the National Council of Y.M.C.A.'s of Canada raised $500,000 towards the support of the Khaki University, and this sum was handed over to the University Board.

Casual reference has been made to the unselfish labours of the lay voluntary workers, both men and women, without whose constant, efficient, and ungrudging service the work of the Red Triangle could not have been accomplished. To the women in particular a word of more than praise is due. Without their assistance as waitresses in the Red Triangle Clubs, the moderate charges that prevailed in these institutions would not have been possible; but beyond the monetary value of their services was the wholesome atmosphere they brought to these busy centres. Whether enjoying a cup of coffee or a chat at the "Mother's Corner," soldiers were brought into direct contact with the uplifting influence of a gracious womanhood from which they had been separated too long.

It is impossible to enumerate even the outstanding instances of busy business men who not only gave unstintingly of their means, but also rendered long and valuable personal service on committees of management. Such men formed not only the personnel of the National Council at Toronto and other centres, but also that of innumerable committees throughout the land.

---

[1] See Vol. V, pp. 27-31.

At the risk of appearing invidious, mention must be made of three who served overseas: Lieut.-Colonel Gerald W. Birks, Montreal; Mr. Abner Kingman, Montreal; and Captain David Corbett, a Canadian Scot from New York. These three men severed important business ties and went overseas to serve the Canadian forces under the ægis of the Red Triangle. Colonel Birks, as General Supervisor, Mr. Kingman, as Chairman of the Overseas Committee, and Captain Corbett, as Business Manager, contributed, at their own cost, a service to the Canadian Y.M.C.A., and through the association to the soldiers, that no word of acknowledgment can adequately express.

3. Knights of Columbus "Catholic Army Huts"

This association — a war activity organized by the Canadian Councils of the Knights of Columbus — came into being as a result of representations made to the Ottawa Council by Major the Rev. J. J. O'Gorman, when invalided to Canada in the winter of 1916-17. It set out (1) to provide chapels for Catholic soldiers (i.e., to furnish or equip the military hutments ceded by the Army, or to construct buildings when necessary), and (2) to provide social and recreational facilities for all troops, irrespective of creed. The first funds, donated by the Ottawa Council, were supplemented by drives, successfully organized in 1917 and 1918. To these drives all citizens of Canada were asked to contribute, and their response showed that they appreciated the clean-cut programme of the organization.

The gross expenditure overseas was £61,004, the apportioning of which was as follows:

Equipment and maintenance of huts and tents	£50,431
Recreational supplies to military huts	5,806
Religious supplies to military huts	2,384
Cables and postage	304
Free stationery	1,827
Office, express, salaries, and transportation	252
	£61,004

Bramshott Camp. The first important activities of the association in England were at this camp, where a chapel and adjacent recreation room had been built by a British Catholic association for the benefit of Canadian troops in the latter part of the year 1916. In the fall of 1917 this property was taken over by the C.A.H. and the Recreation Hut continued its good service with the valuable co-operation of the Catholic Women's League of England. These ladies deserve the grateful thanks of the people of Canada for their admirable work in connection with the C.A.H., as also for the welcome which was always afforded to Canadians in their own hut near Westminster Cathedral. Through their efficiency the Bramshott Hut, with its spacious canteen, its billiard tables, and its general atmosphere of homelike comfort, became increasingly popular among the troops, and it is worthy of note that, when H.M. the King of England visited the camp in 1918, the refreshments for the Royal party were provided by this hut at the request of Canadian Headquarters. The buildings, enlarged and improved from time to time, were used until demobilization closed the camp.

London Area. The incessant problem of accommodation and recreation for troops on leave in London, demanded the contribution of the C.A.H. to its solution. From the fall of 1917 a chaplain, whose expenses were partly defrayed by the C.A.H., lived near the C.W.L. hut at Westminster, and did his best to bring Canadian soldiers into the radius of decent quarters, and honest recreation. It was at first proposed that the C.A.H. should enlarge the C.W.L. hut, but this was found impracticable, and the directors were eventually able to obtain possession of fine premises at No. 24 Grosvenor Place. This building, divested of its superfluous furniture and works of art, was adapted to its new purposes and opened to the troops at the beginning of May, 1917. An electric sign, bearing the inscription "K. of C. Catholic Army Huts. All Sailors and Soldiers Welcome," and the Maple Leaf sign, with its monogram of the Holy Name, brought a full house at once. When H.E. Cardinal Bourne, assisted by Sir George Perley, Sir Edward Kemp, General Turner, and others, formally opened the club on the 21st of May, it was already an assured success. Within a few weeks a second mansion was rented at No. 31 Grosvenor Place. The sleeping accommodation was then increased to 127 beds, and each house had spacious rooms for recreation. At No. 31 a continuous canteen of the highest quality was maintained at a low tariff, and in this, as in every C.A.H. institution, all possibility of profit was excluded by order of the directors. The original premises at No. 24 contained a private oratory for the convenience of Catholic soldiers and a room for the chaplain. Of all C.A.H. ventures this was naturally the largest and most important. During the thirteen months of its existence, it offered continuous welcome, shelter, recreation, and food, not only to Canadian but also to American and all Allied troops. The high standard of its appointment met with the complete approval of all military authorities and also with the deep appreciation of the troops. It closed its doors at the end of June, 1919.

In the fall of 1918 the London directors decided, in spite of uncertainties as to the future, to extend the C.A.H. work to the Waterloo district, which was in need of further accommodation. The large premises known as St. George's Hall, near Southwark Cathedral, were rented and adapted under great difficulties.

About Christmas, 1918, the new club was opened by Sir Robert Borden, and its intensive career of usefulness from that date until the end of May, 1919, showed that it met a real need.

Witley. During the long and tiresome formalities which had to be gone through before the erection of a C.A.H. establishment, the directors did their best to help the existing military huts. A magnificent new hut was, however, completed in time to render real service during the demobilization period.

Seaford. The C.A.H. was able to give great help to the original Catholic Soldiers Club managed by a local priest. In the fall of 1918 a new and splendidly appointed hut was built in the South Camp and maintained the C.A.H. and C.W.L. standard until the end of demobilization.

Bexhill and Cooden. Cadets from the neighbouring school and wounded soldiers from Cooden Hospital were well looked after in a club, which, at first locally managed, was at length adopted by the C.A.H. In the neighbouring hamlet of Cooden Beach a large tent was provided in summer and subsequently replaced by a hut which became a remarkable success.

Frensham Pond. At this segregation camp a marquee was provided and subsequently replaced by a C.A.H. hut which did service later at Rhyl.

Epsom. After a delay which was not imputable to the C.A.H., this hospital was provided with a long-needed chapel and recreation hut in 1918.

Kinmel Park. This huge demobilization camp received its hut in March, 1919, only. Its short career was marked with complete success.

Ripon. The troops sent from Bramshott for convenience of demobilization found the C.W.L. at work, and here again the C.A.H. renewed a partnership which had always been successful.

Buxton. This centre, comprising the original discharge depot and three hospitals, was served by the erection of a unique and comfortable "down-town" hut, which did excellent work right on to the winter of 1919-20.

The record of the C.A.H. in France shows that much good work was done during the latter part of the war in spite of its lack of military establishment, transport facilities, etc. The bulk of the work was therefore conducted by the Catholic chaplains, comparatively few in numbers and already hard-worked.

At the Front. A chapel tent was sent to the 22nd Battalion in January, 1918, and did good work for that notable unit. In February four more tents were erected behind the lines in the Lens sector. In all, eleven tents were thus despatched and used, though one marquee sent to the 12th Brigade was never delivered.

Belgium and Germany. In the course of the move towards Germany, the 11th Brigade were provided with a C.A.H. club at Boitsford, and the 4th Brigade Engineers with one at Nil St. Vincent. The 72nd Battalion were provided with a Christmas dinner en route. When the Canadian troops arrived in the Rhineland the 22nd Battalion and the 2nd Brigade had clubs near Bonn. To other units frequent supplies of cigarettes, writing paper, sport material, and devotional articles were sent.

Railway Troops. These scattered troops were provided at different times with four chapel tents and the usual supplies.

Hospitals. Chapel tents were provided for the 1st Canadian Casualty Clearing Station and the 2nd Canadian Stationary Hospital. A chapel and reading-room were provided at Le Treport and a chapel at Etaples. After some difficulty a chapel tent was given to No. 3 Canadian General Hospital (McGill). The hut built for No. 8 General Hospital was delayed by transportation difficulties and finally used at Le Havre. The hut provided at No. 6 Canadian General Hospital

(Laval), at Joinville, was inspected by General Turner, who, in December, 1918, declared it to be "the most complete hut" he had seen.

At the Base. In Etaples the Oratory Hut, an English Catholic concern, was taken over by the C.A.H. and free drinks provided to over two thousand men each day.

The biggest and best achievement of the C.A.H. overseas was attained at Le Havre in January, 1919. Here the main stream of demobilization was met by two huts, one outside the camp and one within. In the first hut, during February, 1919, the daily average of free hospitality given was fifty gallons of coffee and cocoa, fifty boxes of biscuits, and two thousand cigarettes. When the second hut got into operation more than double quantities were served. By May 11th it was calculated that 120,000 bowls of tea, coffee, and cocoa, 8,000 pounds of biscuits, 570,000 cigarettes and 6,000 boxes of matches had been disposed of free of charge to Canadian troops leaving France, as a token of appreciation from the people of Canada through the medium of the C.A.H.

In addition to the work done in England, France, Belgium, and Germany, the activities of the C.A.H. extended to far Siberia, where the Canadian Expeditionary Force was accompanied by the K. of C. Secretary, who, from headquarters at Gournostia, distributed a million cigarettes and a hundred thousand packages of gum. Moreover, plentiful supplies of "comforts" were placed on transports returning from England and distributed under the supervision of commanding officers.

The work of the association was carried on without military establishment. Through the courtesy of Canadian Headquarters the Overseas Secretary-Treasurer had a convenient centre at Argyll House, within easy reach of the Chaplain Service. The office files show that no reasonable request was ever refused and that no line of denominationalism was ever drawn. This intensive work was carried on by a staff of four, and it is especially worthy of note that the cost of administration to the Canadian public for the whole period of activity was $1,300.

Demobilization. Coincident with the beginning of preparations for the demobilization of the Canadian Expeditionary Force, the need of caring for returned men, during and after the period of their discharge from the Service in Canada, became apparent, and the necessary steps were immediately taken to cope with the situation. The organization's funds at this time consisted of the balance of the original $1,100,000 raised for the work, after the deduction of expenditures overseas.

Lieut.-Colonel Clarence F. Smith, of Montreal, was appointed Comptroller of the Knights of Columbus Catholic Army Huts, the military authorities were consulted, and a chain of huts thrown open right across the Dominion, covering the dispersal areas selected by the Department of Militia and Defence. Local committees were appointed to take charge of the work in the various centres, and in an incredibly short space of time the machinery of the organization was ready for the reception of the home-coming troops.

The C.A.H. in Canada adopted as its chosen motto the words "Everything for the Returned Man," and set out to do the maximum amount of good for all soldiers and sailors, regardless of colour, race, or creed.

In the Huts. In all the Catholic Army Huts, recreation and writing-rooms were placed at the disposal of the men, and free beds and meals provided for them for the first few days following their discharge. After this, they were accommodated at greatly reduced rates, cases of genuine need being invariably looked after gratis.

The element of personal interest was brought into the work in every way possible, both through the services of the secretaries and their staffs, and through the thousands of volunteer workers who devoted themselves to the interests of the demobilized men throughout the country. The efficient serving of meals and the work of many of the necessary committees in connection with the huts, would have been impossible without the army of women who formed themselves into ladies' auxiliaries in the various centres and effectually handled many branches of the work.

Assistance and advice in military and civilian matters were given free of charge to all comers at the various inquiry counters. Correspondence was conducted for the men with the various naval and military offices and government departments, and matters of gratuity, land settlement, vocational training, pensions, and so forth looked after for them. The great question of employment was also dealt with to a limited degree.

An idea of the extent of the work done may be gathered from the official records, which show that from the time of their opening until March 21st, 1920, the Catholic Army Huts in Canada provided 225,934 beds and 926,857 meals for returned men; 57,260 beds and 246,481 meals being given free of charge.

Reception Committee. Beyond the regular work of the huts in providing food, shelter, and comfort for all comers, the returning soldiers were looked after at all the landing ports and important railroad stopping-places, en route to their final destinations. Reception committees under the administration of the various huts served all these points and kept the men well supplied with all kinds of recreational materials and comforts and refreshments, and also saw to the free despatching of their letters and telegrams, a service that was much appreciated by the soldiers.

Hospital Work. The care of those who would otherwise have been unable to avail themselves of the privileges and services of the huts, was always an important feature of the C.A.H. work, and the last of its activities to be suspended. Hospital committees were formed in connection with every hut, for the express purpose of caring for every military and naval "case" in the locality. In places removed from the larger centres, members of the Knights of Columbus and other energetic volunteers took charge of the work and attended to the distribution of comforts and recreational supplies provided by the Catholic Army Huts. The providing of entertainments for the sick and wounded also came under the administration of the hospital committees, and included all kinds of amusements, from motion pictures to concert parties. Special donations were also made to hospitals in the shape of gramophones, stereopticon sets, motion picture machines, games of all kinds, and, in cases where they could be put to good use, canoes, boats, and motor-launches were also placed at the disposal of the military patients.

Not the least appreciated of the services of the hospital committees was the regular visiting of the hospitals and other institutions, which was the means of not only cheering the men up generally, but of settling their various difficulties for them, cases being taken up by the visitors and handled direct by them where possible, or referred to the K. of C. organization for settlement.

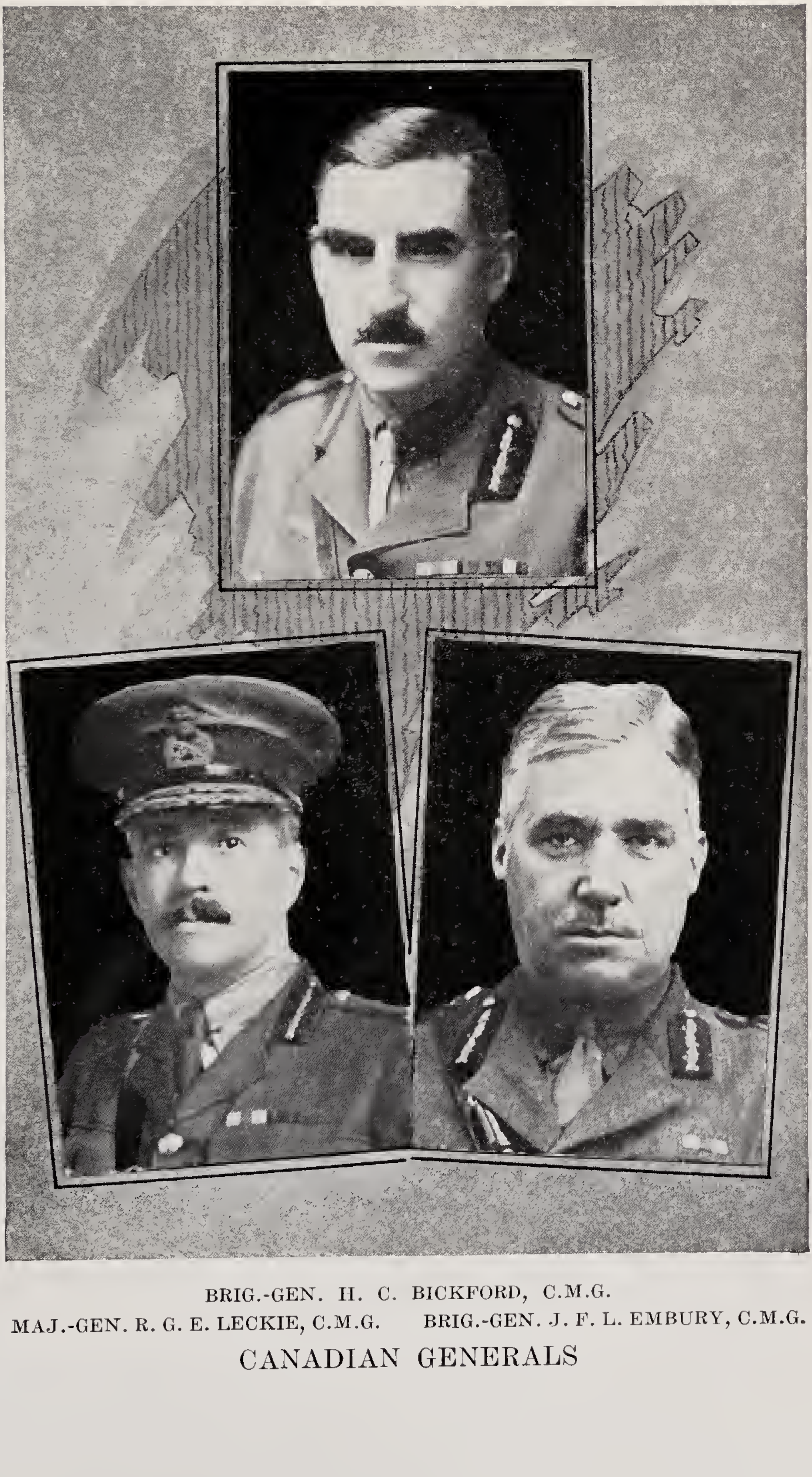
Probably one of the most historic shipments of presents on record was made by the Knights of Columbus at Christmas, 1919, when ten thousand individual gift packages were shipped from Montreal, for distribution by C.A.H. workers and members of the Knights of Columbus, to patients in all the military and D.S.C.R. hospitals in the country, in accordance with the official lists of these institutions and their inmates, supplied by the authorities.

The work of the hospital committees, thus briefly summarized, was considered so important that it was continued after the closing of the other C.A.H. activities in the spring of 1920.

Reconstruction and Employment Service. In the fall of 1919, when demobilization was practically ended, it was seen that while certain of the huts could be dispensed with, there was much good work still to be done along other lines, towards the satisfactory reestablishment of the returned men, more particularly in aiding them through inquiry offices. The various councils of the Knights of Columbus were called on for their co-operation, and the Knights of Columbus Reconstruction and Employment Service came into being. This new branch of the work called for the further development of the inquiry offices in the huts in the larger centres, and for the establishment of new offices, often in the council building of the Knights of Columbus in the smaller places. In this manner nearly one hundred branches were put into operation in the course of a few months.

The work done, outside of the regular office activities, consisted in looking after the general welfare of returned men in the various districts, in all lines, including entertainment and hospital work. By means of the new offices, the work was spread to localities formerly more or less out of reach of the Huts' activities, and many men helped who might otherwise have been unable to gain any benefit from the work of the organization. The records show that up to the month of March, 1920, 4,500 men were placed in positions, and over 3,300 cases taken up in writing for discharged soldiers and sailors by the Reconstruction and Employment Service.

Volunteer enterprise was again largely responsible for the success of this branch of the work; for though paid secretaries were installed at various points, many other places were cared for by volunteers, and



BRIG.-GEN. H. C. BICKFORD, C.M.G.
MAJ.-GEN. R. G. E. LECKIE, C.M.G. BRIG.-GEN. J. F. L. EMBURY, C.M.G.
CANADIAN GENERALS

in all cases the work was superintended by Returned Soldiers' Committees, formed in the various councils of the Knights of Columbus throughout Canada, whose members gave their time and energies to the work without remuneration.

Throughout the spring and summer of 1919, eighteen huts were kept in operation by the C.A.H. in Canada, all the way from Charlottetown, P.E.I., to Victoria, B.C., looking after the welfare of the returned men.

Charlottetown, P.E.I. Every detachment of soldiers returning to Prince Edward Island was met on the mainland by representatives of the Knights of Columbus, and looked after until demobilized. A hut opened on Dorchester Street rapidly became a landmark for returned Prince Edward Islanders, and was the hub of Catholic Army Huts' activities.

Halifax, N. S. This was one of the first points at which the returning troops got in touch with the K. of C. Catholic Army Huts. The work was started by the local Knights of Columbus, as soon as the numbers of returning troops were sufficient to warrant organized receptions, and from the very start of demobilization all troop-ships were met by committees of Halifax citizens and war-activity organizations, which included many C.A.H. workers in their ranks. In this way it is calculated that well over 200,000 soldiers and their dependents were cared for. More than 15,000 men availed themselves of the hut opened for them on Barrington Street, while a Hospital Comforts Bureau looked after the various local hospitals.

St. John, N.B. Cliff Street Hut was a busy spot during all the demobilization period, and the reception committees on the wharves were worked to capacity, day and night, till the closing of the military activity of the port in May, 1919.

Quebec, Que. The work of the C.A.H. and the K. of C. in the ancient capital of Canada was carried on through various citizen organizations for the welfare of the returned men. Generous donations were made by the Catholic Army Huts to the various institutions, and many volunteer workers provided. The council and hall of the local council of the Knights of Columbus were also placed at the disposal of returned men and of American sailors visiting the port, and a number of highly successful entertainments given.

Montreal, Que. Two huts were put into operation here, one on Phillips Square, in the heart of the uptown district, and the other at 354 Sherbrooke Street, East, in the premises of Lafontaine Council K. of C. The Phillips Square Hut was one of the last huts to be closed down at the suspension of the organization's activities. It did sterling service, both during the period of demobilization, and, later, during the winter of 1919-20. In addition to the regular work of the hut, its spacious rooms were the scene of many pleasant evening entertainments for returned men. The hospitals, both in the city and at St. Anne de Bellevue and St. Agathe, came under the care of the Montreal Hospital Committee of the Knights of Columbus Catholic Army Huts.

The hut on Sherbrooke Street, East, installed to serve as an overflow from the bigger hut during the busy days of demobilization, rapidly became popular with returned men in the eastern section of the city, and eventually became the headquarters of the French-Canadian branch of the local Great War Veterans Association.

Montreal was also the veritable headquarters of the C.A.H. work throughout Canada, the Comptroller's office being located in the Drummond Building, throughout the period of the association's activities.

Ottawa, Ont. By means of a hut located in a very central position, Ottawa took an active part in the C.A.H. activities, both in the regular work of the hostel and in caring for the returned men generally through the various committees appointed to take charge of the different branches of the work.

Kingston, Ont. A permanent garrison and also one of the chosen dispersal areas on the demobilization programme of the Canadian Expeditionary Force, Kingston found plenty of returned men and Service men ready to avail themselves of the hut established at 338 King Street. This hostel was kept open until the very end of the K. of C. activities, and had a fine record of work, both for itself and its various committees.

Toronto, Ont. The Queen City, with a first-class hut at the corner of King and John Streets, in premises formerly occupied by the Arlington Hotel, was perhaps the busiest point on the plan of the K. of C. Catholic Army Huts' work. The building was admirably suited to club work, and hundreds of thousands of returned men patronized the hostel, which was one of the finest in the country.

Outings for the sick and wounded were a feature of the activities, and the excursions to Hanlan's Point and Scarborough Beach, and trips on the lake and to various points of interest, will go down in the post-war history of the city. Thousands of "casualties" were entertained in this way, through the energies of the Hospital Committee and those who devoted their time, and in many cases their automobiles, to the success of the work.

The attendance at the hut might have been even larger had it not been for the fact that thousands of troops demobilized at the Exhibition Grounds spent only a few hours in Toronto whilst waiting for train connections. Even under the actual circumstances the Toronto Hut held the attendance record for Canada.

Hamilton, Ont. Gould's Hall was the scene of the work of the Catholic Army Huts in Hamilton. The hut, with its staff composed entirely of returned men, and its spacious dormitories and cafeteria, rapidly became the hub of the city's post-war activities, and the headquarters of the local Great War Veterans Association, which fact in itself speaks volumes for the institution's popularity with the returned men of the vicinity.

London, Ont. In London, Ont., a spacious hut on Richmond Street, with committees to look after the various branches of the activities, was the centre of the K. of C. work. This hut was kept open until the very end of the C.A.H. work in the spring of 1920, and accommodated thousands of veterans during its career.

Winnipeg, Man. A hundred-bed hut was thrown open for returned men in Winnipeg, in the Forrester Block. In addition to the regular activities, this hostel was responsible for the finding of over a thousand civilian positions for ex-soldiers.

Brandon, Man. Shelter and accommodation for returned men of the army and navy were provided at the hostel opened by the C.A.H. in the premises formerly occupied by the Imperial Hotel. Here, as at other points, committees were placed in charge of the various departments, and all lines of the K. of C. programme followed up.

Saskatoon, Sask. A soldiers' home, in every sense of the word, was conducted by the K. of C. at the corner of Third Avenue and Twentieth Street. The well-furnished hut, with its first-class accommodation, rapidly made its presence felt in the community, and was the home of most of the veterans of the neighbourhood, and the centre of many returned soldiers' activities.

Province of Alberta. The situation in the Province of Alberta at the commencement of the Catholic Army Huts' activities in Canada was found to be different to that in other localities, and, after a thorough investigation, it was decided not to establish huts, but to open offices for the assistance of the returned men.

Secretaries were accordingly installed in Calgary, Lethbridge, Edmonton, and Medicine Hat, and the work carried on through their offices, all branches of the work being developed, and hospital, employment, and repatriation work generally looked after. Thus, though by different means, the end of the C.A.H. was accomplished, and the slogan of the association, "Everything for the Returned Man," carried into effect in the Prairie Province.

Revelstoke, B.C. A small hut was established here, when Revelstoke was chosen as a demobilization point. The changes in the plans of the military authorities, however, called for the dispersal of men from this section at points further east. After doing good work among such returned men as needed its services the hostel was closed down in the fall of 1919.

Vancouver, B.C. This important demobilization point was served through a spacious hut in the Riggs-Selman Building. While the numerous Government offices in the city were well able to cope with the work of aiding the returned man in his post-demobilization difficulties, the hut was the home of thousands of veterans, and the assistance of the secretary and his staff appreciated by all who visited it.

Victoria, B.C. The Ritz Hotel, taken over by the C.A.H. at the outset of their work, became after a few necessary changes one of the best and most popular returned men's institutions in the Dominion. The accommodation was excellent, and every comfort provided. Hospital service, information and assistance work, and the various other branches of the K. of C. programme were developed, and, until the closing of the hut in common with the general cessation of activities in the spring of 1920, the Victoria Hut proved itself one of the most used and hard-worked branches of the work in Canada, and a real benefit to returned soldiers and sailors on the Pacific Coast.

While the Catholic Army Huts cannot and do not claim the honour of early arrival in Europe, they do claim, in all sincerity, to have done their very best, in the time and with the means placed at their disposal by Canadian generosity, to lighten the lot of the rank and file, to encourage and console, to feed and recreate, and to maintain the dignity of the men who, throughout the work, proved themselves loyal coadjutors and grateful friends.

4. The Canadian Salvation Army

The Canadian Salvation Army played an important part in the Great World War; but as its work overseas was done largely in conjunction with the British Salvation Army, it is impossible to give a detailed account of its operations. It kept few records and was more intent on service than on reporting its activities.

Immediately the war broke out the Salvation Army of Great Britain began its labours in the war-smitten areas. It so happened that Brigadier Mary Murray, daughter of Major-General Murray of the Imperial Army, was in Brussels on the eventful August 4th, 1914. This officer had had valuable experience during the South African War. She had been decorated for her services in that war and was to be awarded the coveted Mons Medal for her work in the Great World War. She at once rushed to the help of the Belgian refugees, driven from their homes by the ruthless Hun. The small staff at her command was totally inadequate to cope with the situation, and she sent out an S.O.S. for more helpers. Her cry reached Canada and the Salvation Army there responded with the zeal it ever displays when suffering is to be relieved.

From small beginnings there sprang up a tremendous Salvation Army organization of huts at the front, canteens at the base, and hostels in France and England, which accommodated tens of thousands of men. It was estimated towards the close of hostilities that about three hundred thousand soldiers and sailors attended Salvation Army institutions of one kind or another *daily*. About two hundred huts were used for the comfort of the men and also for religious meetings in the camps in England and France. It is said that the Mary Booth Hut at Etaples, named after the General's daughter, during four years of war had pass through it 6,500,000 men from different parts of the Empire. On the Vimy sector one Salvation Army Hut supplied an average of four thousand eggs daily. On another part of the front, after a major engagement, one Salvation Army clearing station, hastily equipped, fed and refreshed thirteen hundred men on their way from the fight. The Army had also forty Rest Rooms, where papers, magazines, writing paper, etc., were supplied. It maintained ninety-six hostels for the use of the soldiers and sailors close to the large stations or landing-places, having accommodation of 5,317 beds. Long before the war ended forty-nine Salvation Army motor ambulances, manned by Salvationists, had conveyed over one hundred thousand wounded soldiers from the battle-field. In this gigantic scheme of military social service over twelve hundred officers and uniformed workers were engaged, while about forty thousand Salvationists took part in the war in one way or another.

In all this work the Canadian Salvation Army played its part. The canteens managed by it were popular institutions, and its huts, particularly a famous one at Etaples, were always crowded with soldiers. It preached effectively the "Gospel of the Frying-pan" and refreshed thousands of war-weary men, bracing them spiritually, mentally, and physically for their trying tasks.

The Salvation Army chaplains were ideal padres.

They laboured incessantly and with excellent judgment for the men of the units to which they were attached, and it was not unusual to see a Salvationist padre marching along with the men, burdened with cooking equipment. Needless to say, their patient self-sacrifice was greatly appreciated. One of the most indefatigable of the padres was Chaplain-Captain Penfold, who endeared himself to thousands of the boys by his work on their behalf. Others worthy of special mention were Captains Steele and Robinson, among the first chaplains to sail from Canada. These pushed their way right up to the fighting line and ministered to the soldiers under fire, fearlessly risking their lives. Robinson had fighting blood in his veins and when man shortage threatened the cause of the Allies he resigned his chaplaincy and became a combatant. He won the Military Cross for valour on the battle-field and was killed at the Battle of the Somme in 1916. Captain Steele ''carried on'' in looking after the creature comforts of the men and went through a long and strenuous experience right up on the firing line. Writing to Commissioner Richards, of Toronto, immediately after the Battle of Passchendaele, he said, in part:

''The men going to and coming from the trenches were served at our coffee stalls, and it was indeed interesting to see these men, especially those returning from the line, so caked with mud that it was almost impossible to identify them as human beings, standing in long lines waiting their turn to receive a mug of steaming hot coffee. Frequently German prisoners going down, seeing our men drinking at the coffee stalls, would make their way over and, of course, receive their share. It speaks well for the spirit of our men that, after just having fought the Germans, they were the first to hand over cigarettes and coffee. After careful calculation it was estimated that fully ten thousand soldiers were served every twenty-four hours and not less than twelve hundred gallons of hot drinks issued every day.''

During his three and a half years of service Chaplain-Captain Steele was through most of the heavy fighting and was gassed and wounded.

In Canada the Salvation Army was extremely active. When the first appeal for help was made, one of the things most urgently needed was motor ambulances. Canada responded with a promise of six, and these were dedicated in an immense Salvation Army meeting in Massey Hall, Toronto.

As battalion after battalion was raised, there was soon a scarcity of bandsmen. Regimental bands were few in number, but the Salvation Army was to do much to meet the situation. In all about seven hundred Salvationist bandsmen enlisted in Eastern Canada alone. One of these, Bandsman Christmas, of the Kingston Salvation Army Band, had the distinction of being the first bandsman to cross the Rhine, when he led his band over the bridge at Coblenz. But members of the Canadian Salvation Army were in nearly every Canadian battalion and in not a few of the Imperial regiments. Many of them had enviable military records, one Canadian Salvationist winning the V.C., while others were decorated with the M.C. and other marks of honour for valour and service.

If the work in France and Belgium was extensive and important, that done by the Army in the various camps in England and the hostels in London was no less so. Chaplain-Captains McGillivray and Walton rendered splendid service to the Canadians in some of the camps and also in London. The pitfalls and sources of temptation were legion, as we know from information that reached this side of the Atlantic from time to time, and the work done by the chaplains in this connection is beyond estimation.

As has been stated, it is difficult to give statistics of the work done by the Canadian Salvation Army, as, in addition to the activities of the chaplains and others sent from Canada, the Canadian Headquarters financed work done by British officers on behalf of Canadian troops. Also when the British Government commandeered many of the largest hotels in London, and put them under the direction of the Salvation Army for the care of troops on leave, one of these was reserved for Canadian troops and financed by the Canadian Headquarters. Thousands of Canadian soldiers, therefore, found restful and congenial surroundings in the heart of the world's metropolis provided by Canadian money. Only those who know how precious those days of leave were, and their relation to the question of morals, can realize what this accommodation meant. Of even greater importance than this, perhaps, was the protection afforded by the moral atmosphere of these institutions. Then there was the large number of wounded Canadians in the London area, and these had to have attention. One of the special services our chaplains rendered was to take the T.B. cases once a week for a motor trip, or some other form of outing. The chaplains, moreover, distributed thousands upon thousands of dollars' worth of comforts among the Canadian troops, especially the wounded and convalescing.

The work that was being done at home was scarcely less important than that done overseas. A splendid service was rendered by the Army's Home League branches throughout the Dominion. Tens of thousands of articles, such as socks, underwear, Christmas parcels, and the like, were forwarded through Mrs. Commissioner Richards to our chaplains overseas. Chaplain-Captain Steele in one of his letters wrote:

"I cannot express my appreciation of what the Canadian Home Leagues have done in the way of providing comforts. The parcels that were sent to me were most welcome. The socks were a positive blessing to the men, especially during the rainy weather, when they would get their boots soaked through with the wet mud. I arranged for the socks to be distributed from the most forward coffee stall for the use of the men in the front line. To let them know that socks had arrived I put up a big sign worded as follows: 'Canadians, if you need socks, ask for them. Donated by Salvation Army Home League.'

"Sixty thousand sheets of note-paper and twenty-five thousand envelopes bearing the impress of the Salvation Army were also distributed each month from the canteens."

Another feature of the work in Canada was that of visiting the homes where the news had come that a loved one had made the supreme sacrifice. The visit of a sympathetic woman at such a time was much appreciated by those who had received the sad tidings from the front.

It was early realized that, after men had been kept under discipline for one, two, or three years, living in an atmosphere of excitement, certain safeguards and helps would be necessary in the steadying-down process leading to repatriation. So when the troops began to return in great numbers the Army had its staff established at the ports of landing, and arrangements were made for providing refreshments as soon as the men came ashore. A cardboard box containing candy, fruit, the day's newspaper, a copy of the "War Cry," etc., was handed to each man. Unwittingly the Army had hit upon a great advertising scheme, for the empty boxes were seen beside the railway tracks from the seaboard to the prairie reaches of the West.

Another need soon became apparent. The returned men, especially the unmarried or those away from home, could not content themselves in an atmosphere altogether foreign to that in which they had lived so long. They wanted to associate with their kind, and this was realized by the Army, with the result that the Commissioner decided to establish a series of hostels.

Within a short time there was a chain of these institutions between the two great seaboards of the Dominion.

The Toronto Hostel had its accommodation taxed to the utmost, and thousands of men all over Canada remember with warm gratitude the cheerful service rendered in connection with this institution. Invariably the men wanted to pay, and when they were told that there was no charge for the first twenty-four hours they felt that there were grateful hearts — not confined to the Army alone — who appreciated the magnificent part they had played in protecting the rights and freedom of our civilization.

Not only on his return to Canada was the soldier provided with free meals or bed, but, — as unfortunately has happened to hundreds of discharged soldiers, — should he through sickness, lack of employment, and various causes be "up against it," he was taken care of until some arrangement had been effected whereby he could get on his feet again. In this the Army acknowledges the splendid spirit evinced by Government and military officials, who always manifested a desire to know where there was need, and to assist in meeting it.

The foresight looking to the need of the returned soldier by different organizations was remarkable. But in the great task involved in this, until the close of the war no provision had been made for the married soldier when he and his dependents were suddenly coming back in great numbers. Within fifteen minutes of the arrival at Toronto of a train from New York with about five hundred women and children aboard one Sunday afternoon, a military officer rushed into the hostel almost breathless, asking what could be done to provide accommodation. The Army's military secretary — Major Southall — happened to be there at the time. When the train arrived a whole brigade wearing the well-known bonnets and caps with red bands were carrying babies and baggage, getting refreshments, and so on. After a few similar experiences a meeting was called by the mayor at the City Hall, and other organizations began to assume a share in the greater responsibility that increasing and more frequent arrivals entailed. The Rotary Club, especially, should be mentioned in this connection, and also the Patriotic Fund organization.

Mrs. Colonel McMillan, wife of the Chief Secretary, developed a very fine organization to handle this work, and with tireless energy, in all kinds of weather and at all hours, carried on a work that has received the highest commendation from municipal and military sources.

There quickly developed the need for organized social service work among soldiers' families. Four district visitors were appointed by the Commissioner to visit the homes of soldiers. Soon difficulties of all kinds were met with, and it required trained and experienced women to give wise and sympathetic counsel in the hundreds of cases which had to be dealt with. The far-reaching influence of this work, which kept together many homes that otherwise would have been totally wrecked, cannot be estimated.

The Army continues to ''carry on'' in its great Military Social Service work on the lines mentioned, and there is no question that its beneficent service in its many-sided operations will be an important factor in solving the social problems that will confront us until ''repatriation'' is fully accomplished.

CHAPTER V

CANADIAN WOMEN IN THE GREAT WAR

1. General Activities

WHILE it is true that, in the strictest military sense, Canada was unprepared for war when Germany struck, something else was equally true. That element which is worth all the technical accoutrements of war put together, that without which even the finest plans come to naught, was fully alive and ready for action. Patriotism was not slumbering.

In those first days of August, 1914, many men declared that the contest would be a brief one. While Canadian women hoped the prophecy a true one, they knew that their part began at once. Even the briefest war summonses women to the colours, and their share of war's indemnity is always collected unfailingly and without discount, whether the issue is peace with victory or defeat with loss of national prestige. Theoretically, women are unfitted for war; in actual practice they are the real supporters and approvers of war. It could never be waged were it not mothered by women.

True to the traditions of their sex and true to their inheritance as daughters of the British Empire, Canadian women reported for instant service. Before their men had started for camp, the women were busy making comforts for the soldiers. That line of work was never abandoned during over four years of warfare and it grew to amazing proportions. In a short time it became an accepted fact that knitting was allowable in church. Knitting was a sedative for the heartache and nerve-racking anxiety that could not endure inaction. But the days soon came when those who could not stand the strain of constant knitting were offered countless lines of service. Each new outrage by the Hun, each new disaster, caused the armour to be tightened with a stubbornness that boded ill for the enemy. The natural executive ability of Canada's women asserted itself and their men will never know the extent of their debt to the women at home who laboured tirelessly and to fine purpose every day and all day and half the night.

How they managed to keep their home fires burning clear and bright and to keep every boat that crossed to England and France loaded with the things so urgently needed, not even the women themselves can understand. But they did it. They made heroic sacrifices of time and money; they worked to the point of physical exhaustion; they made willing surrender of comforts, all that Canada's cause and the cause of the civilized world should triumph. Supremest of all was the giving up of their first-born, their best beloved, the ones who had been counted on to make Canada a name of which to be eternally proud. What they planned in peaceful days came to pass in fullest measure, but it was at Ypres, Vimy Ridge, Passchendaele, Arras, Cambrai, and Mons that undying glory was won for those brave women who volunteered in August, 1914.

Perhaps Canadian women have a genius for systematizing their work; perhaps it is a talent that belongs in an unusual degree to capable women the world over. However that may be, the first tasks were reduced to system and intended results were evolved in orderly fashion. As each new service presented itself it was analyzed and systematized into perfect working shape. For the majority of women this whole-hearted acceptance of war's burden meant a different kind of work for six days out of seven or the same kind of work with different groups. Club women did a wise thing in those days. They attended their clubs whenever possible because of the needed relaxation, but club work was in the background of life. The members, for the most part, destroyed the identity of the club as knitters and Red Cross workers and patriotic club visitors, because these activities were carried on in church and neighbourhood groups or in central work-rooms. This explains why prominent clubs are not listed among the doers of war work. There were tens of thousands of women in Canada, buried in obscure places, on lonely farms, isolated from the enthusiasm and encouragement that come from numbers, who, nevertheless, ''carried on'' valiantly and were no mean factors in securing that amazing total of comforts and Red Cross supplies and, later, in the greater production which was an absolute necessity if the Allies were to be fed. There are any number of such women who can show a record of hundreds of pairs of socks which they knitted with their own hands. Their work was sent overseas directly and acknowledged by an illuminated card when the total reached one hundred or more pairs. Thousands of others sent their work to large centres in Canada, from which tremendous shipments were made overseas. In their eagerness to serve, these various workers neglected to keep a record of their output. That is one of the reasons why the work which Canadian women did in war time can never be reckoned. But a still greater reason is that no one has ever yet found a method of computing whole-souled devotion and reducing it to figures.

Keeping in mind the fact that devotion cannot be reduced to mathematical expression, it is still comparatively easy to give an idea of what Canadian women did in England during the trying years of the war. What would the home folks have done without the

Information Bureau established by the Red Cross in London? The idea was clearly worked out in the mind of its originator, Lady Drummond, before she left Montreal for England in the early days of the war. The perfection of her planning is shown by the fact that the bureau opened in London the day after the 1st Canadian Contingent landed in France. The wonderful vision and sympathetic understanding which suggested the plan is best realized by those who received the infinite comfort that is always afforded by the knowledge that everything possible is being done to share and lighten one's personal sorrow. When the Atlantic divides one from the place where one longs to be, it is easy to see what a blessed proxy the bureau was for Canadian women whose men were exposed to the happenings of war. A full account of the workings and staffing of the bureau has already been given in this series.[1]

Lady Drummond was identified with other highly important measures for helping Canadians in London. She came into personal touch with Canadian soldiers and their families, securing employment, when that was necessary, and assisting those in trouble through illness or death. She was the means of making the period of leave a happy time to Canadians, through the hospitality offered by the King George and Queen Mary Maple Leaf Club, of which she was the founder and president. In time this club came to occupy fourteen commodious buildings and two large huts. The Canadian I.O.D.E. furnished funds for equipping these club buildings.

Those Canadians who happened to be living in England when war was declared, organized themselves into a Canadian War Contingent Association, with the idea of looking after their countrymen who arrived for military service. It was due to them that the Queen's Canadian Military Hospital was established in Beachborough Park, Shorncliffe. The Freemasons of Canada co-operated in every way with the association.

---

[1] See Vol. II, Chapter X.

A Ladies' Committee was formed at once, with Lady Perley as convener and Lady MacLaren Brown as honorary secretary. Money for the thousands of comforts sent to the trenches, as well as for the garments and linen needed in the hospital, was subscribed in Canada, and from first to last the hospital was looked after by the Ladies' Committee. In the same way they attended to the forty odd hospitals established in other places by the C.W.A. In addition, there were clubs, hostels, and other agencies for the comfort of soldiers. Relief work for the Allies was also carried on.

Canada's Field Comforts Commission began work in Canada, but soon transferred its activities to England, two Canadian women meeting the First Contingent on its arrival at Salisbury Plain and taking charge of the distribution of comforts. Later their base was moved to Shorncliffe. Captain Mary Plummer was in charge of this work, with Lieutenant Joan Arnoldi as second officer. Devotion to duty and efficiency in its discharge caused both to be mentioned in despatches. Associated with them in work were Miss Leonore McMeares, Miss M. I. Finn, Miss M. R. Gordon, and Miss S. S. Spencer. These ladies were all commissioned and gave their services voluntarily. At least two hundred other women were identified with the department as voluntary workers at various times during the war.

Two Ottawa ladies, Miss Winnifred Lewis and Mrs. Sandford Fleming, opened a convalescent home in England for Canadian soldiers in June, 1915. A second home becoming necessary, Miss Lewis raised the funds required and secured Clarence House, Roehampton. The hospital confined itself to amputation cases as long as these were treated in England; after that the greater part of the work was the treatment of heart and lung cases. From the first, Miss Lewis was honorary commandant. Qualified Nursing Sisters and several V.A.D.'s from Canada composed the staff assisting the medical officer.

As more and more men were called to the trenches, opportunities for unusual lines of service opened up for women. Mrs. W. D. Ferris, B.A., of Edmonton, trained inspectors in bookkeeping at the Westminster Technical Institute in London. This was necessary owing to the taking over of regimental canteen work by women. Mrs. Ferris's next task was as area superintendent over a district which involved the supervision of two hundred and twenty-five canteens. Later, as superintendent of the Women's Corps, she organized the work of the N.A.C.B. in Ireland, establishing schools for the instruction of workers in Irish canteens.

A striking and very necessary form of war work was the introduction of the idea of Women's Institutes in England. It was the grafting on to English village life of an entirely new feature. Credit for this belongs to Mrs. A. T. Watt, M.A., M.B.E., of Victoria, B.C. From her long and effective service in the cause of Women's Institutes in Canada in peaceful years, Mrs. Watt was eminently fitted to be the teacher of that idea in England at a time when contentment with village and farm life meant the salvation of Great Britain as far as home production was a factor. Luckily, Mrs. Watt was in England when war was declared and, luckily, also, she grasped at once the importance of greater production. After a year of more or less discouragement in attempting to rouse the women in rural districts into active efforts to win the war, she received recognition from the Agricultural Society and was made chief organizer of Women's Institutes and began to train organizers. Rural women were brought into direct touch with the great needs of the day and made to realize their opportunity as well as the country's need. The result was far greater than the securing of increased production. Village life was vitalized, old industries revived, and the future of English rural life was assured on a higher plane than ever before. Instead of ceasing with the war, the work begun by Mrs. Watt will continue to grow in importance and value.

Mrs. Watt was ably assisted from the first by Mrs. F. Tyrell Godman, of Victoria. As president of the Sussex Federation of Women's Institutes, the latter was responsible for eighty organizations noted for unusually good work.

For three years, from 1915 to 1918, Canadian women in Folkestone maintained a club for aiding their soldiers. Their activities took many forms. Visiting military hospitals and reporting to the Information Bureau in London, providing revolving huts for Moore Barrack as well as a recreation room, reorganizing a club previously started by the English and christening it "Maple Leaf Club, Folkestone," were the important things accomplished by the members. Literally tens of thousands of men were provided with beds and meals, and help of all kinds was extended to the men and their dependents.

Canadian women staffed the I.O.D.E. Club for nurses in London. Lady Perley attended to the organization and was assisted by Lady MacLaren Brown, Mrs. J. G. Ross, Miss Boulter, and other Canadian women in the city.

Canadian women also assisted at the Canadian Y.M.C.A. centres in the British Isles. Their most important work was done at the Beaver Hut in London. Miss Helen Fitz-Randolph, of St. John, N.B., was lady superintendent and head of the voluntary workers, who numbered about six hundred.

The Yukon did admirable service during the war. Mrs. Black, wife of the Commissioner, Captain George

Black, acted as administrator of funds raised in the Yukon for its overseas soldiers. Mrs. Black sent parcels to Yukon men wherever located, did their shopping when so requested, and made payments to the Prisoners of War Department and to dependents in England entitled to allowances from the Patriotic Fund.

To Mrs. Lacey Amy belongs credit for work that possessed the same economic value as that done by Mrs. Watt in that its results must, of necessity, be felt and continued in peace time. Mrs. Amy went to England as Mess Sister for the Massey Harris Convalescent Home at Dulwich. Before the end of the year she accepted a position under the Ministry of Munitions at a factory at Walthamstow. She was transferred in a few months to an important post at Acton, London, N.W., where she was lady superintendent and had entire supervision of over three thousand women and girls. In addition, she engaged workers, attended to rate contracts for service, and organized her staff with an eye to the preservation of discipline. On this staff were a welfare worker for both day and night, three nurses, a canteen supervisor, three policewomen, several clerks, and a private secretary. Three times there were strikes at neighbouring factories, but those under Mrs. Amy's care stood at their posts. Certainly Mrs. Amy richly deserved the M.B.E. which was awarded her in the King's Birthday List for 1918.

Canadian women were to be found outside their own organizations. They were enrolled in the ranks of the W.A.A.C.'s, the "Wrens," the Women's Royal Air Force, the Scottish Women's Hospitals, the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry ("Fanny's"), as nurses in the British Nursing Service, and in government offices throughout the British Isles. Their service was always valuable, and in some cases, where conspicuous bravery was displayed, they were mentioned in despatches.

One Canadian woman achieved the unique distinction of becoming a member of Parliament. This honour was conferred by the soldiers and nurses overseas and she became their representative in Alberta. Miss Roberta MacAdams, the subject of this honour, was attached to the Quartermaster's Department at the Ontario Military Hospital, Orpington, Kent, and acted as dietitian. In 1918 she resigned to organize the women's staff of the Khaki University. When she returned to Canada to attend the session of the Provincial Parliament, she was asked by the Canadian Immigration Department to report on the need of co-operation on the part of women in order to handle wisely the matter of emigration of women to Canada.

When it comes to telling what Canadian women did in France, the task is as hopeless as is the case at home. It was true there, as at home, that scores of women toiled without thought of recognition. Their work won, but their record was not preserved. Then, too, most women who served in France in any other capacity than that of Red Cross nurses were required to sign up with one of the British organizations of women. The individual thus became merged into the greater body.

Probably the most notable exception to that condition is the South of France Relief Association, financed in Montreal and throughout the Dominion. It was formed in March, 1915, owing to the initiative of Mrs. Wilfred Drew, and was staffed by voluntary workers, who set about to assist the hospitals of France, which were poorly equipped to care for the wounded. As the war advanced they took over the care of orphans and refugees, attended to crèche and garderie work, and looked after soldiers on leave. Mrs. Riddett of Cannes was made president. Associated with her were women of great ability, who devoted themselves body and soul to the work. They underwent the necessary training and frequently took entire charge of hospitals. Some were under shell-fire, and one of them, Mrs. Katherine Weller, who served continuously from 1915 to the end of the war, was awarded the *Médaille de la Reconnaissance* by the French Government.

A form of work very similar to the last was that organized by Miss Grace Ellison to supply nurses to French hospitals. The appeal which she sent to Canada was answered by volunteers. Miss Helen McMurrich, of Toronto, was given the *Croix de Guerre* for three years of service, some of it under bombardment; Miss Madeline Jeffray, who served for twenty-three months until severely wounded, also received the *Croix de Guerre.* Miss Margaret McIntyre served with distinction for more than two years, and a number of others for shorter periods.

The bulk of canteen work for soldiers passing to or from the front was in the hands of English women, and many Canadian women volunteered, some of them financing the work directly or through friends.

Several Canadian women identified themselves with the French War Emergency Fund movement, which was under the patronage of H.R.H. the Duke of Connaught, with headquarters in London. The well-known ability and faithfulness of Canadian workers caused them to be employed readily by this organization. The committee appointed Mrs. W. M. Dobell honorary secretary for Canada, with a position on the executive. Previous to this, Mrs. Dobell had served for five months as depot worker. Miss Kerr, of Toronto, served as chauffeuse for some months. She was also inspecting delegate to the hospitals of the interior. Mrs. Barclay, of Quebec, served in one of the canteens at the front for several months. Miss Smart, of the Maritime Provinces, served first as depot and then as canteen worker at Triage, near the front. Another who served in similar capacities was Miss McLachlin, of Ottawa.

From funds collected by *La Presse,* Montreal, a hospital for French wounded was established in Paris. Miss Katherine Wallis, of Peterboro, volunteered in December, 1914. Her work won a letter of appreciation from the late Director of Medical Services in France, and she was also given the medal of the Golden Palms with the Red Cross. Mrs. Gordon Monro, of Toronto, was similarly rewarded.

An exceedingly important war work undertaken by Canadian women in France was the organization and management of Canadian Red Cross Recreation Huts in hospitals. Concerts, theatricals, and all sorts of recreation suited to convalescents were provided by willing and competent workers. First to undertake this work were Miss Helen Mathewson and Miss Marguerite Strathy, of Montreal.

When the Canadian Red Cross decided to open a rest house in Boulogne for its nurses, Mrs. Gordon Brown took charge and did a great part of the work for a year. In the following year the work was enlarged to include Nursing Sisters of the Imperial forces, and Mrs. Brown was given charge.

The name "Corner of Blighty" is familiar to those who followed with any interest what was being done for soldiers on leave in Paris. To Miss Lily Martin, a native of Ireland, is due the credit for the idea and its working out. All British soldiers on leave in Paris could obtain at the comfortable rooms, free of charge, tea, writing facilities, and pleasant employment for a leisure hour. Miss Martin was assisted, for various periods, by a number of Canadian women who acted as guides to parties on leave and helped in many other ways.

Under permission from the French Government, helpful work was carried on at the Porte Dauphine, Paris, from which point excursions were made into the Aisne Department and assistance was given to the inhabitants of eleven devastated villages. Refugees in

Paris were also helped and work-rooms were opened, where over thirty women were employed. This work was under the direction of Mrs. Hamilton Gault.

In the Lycée Pasteur, Neuilly, Paris, a large American hospital was opened and maintained through private subscription. Canadian nurses were among the staff, and, of the sixty enrolled at various times, three — Miss Rosalind Cotter, Miss Beatrice Page, and Mrs. Eaton — were awarded the 1914 badge. The staff also included fifteen V.A.D.'s, who did excellent work, involving much more responsibility than was assigned to V.A.D.'s in either English or Canadian hospitals.

Miss Rachel Webb, one of the fifteen, after serving in the hospital for sixteen months, spent three months at St. Raphael, organizing a dressing station for coloured troops. In 1918 Miss Webb served in a hospital for French wounded in the Château d'Anel, helping to evacuate the wounded in March. Later she returned to St. Raphael and worked until the end of May, being under bombardment throughout all that period. During June she worked in an immense French evacuating hospital. The next two months were spent at Beauvais, under regular bombardment. She did subsequent nursing at various points in the war zone, some of it in an American Hut Hospital and some in the Argonne Forest. In the last week of 1918 Miss Webb was sent to Germany to organize diet kitchens in the hospital at Trèves.

Closely related to the establishment of the Recreation Huts in connection with French hospitals was the work started in the Pépinière Barrack by the Canadian Y.M.C.A., with Miss Marguerite Strathy and Miss Jessie Dennison in charge, assisted by Mrs. L. G. Mowrer, of Regina, who finally became director. When the leave club was opened at the Hôtel d'Iêna, Paris, Mrs. Mowrer was assisted at various times by a large staff of Canadian women.

To Mrs. J. F. W. Ross, Miss Burnham, and Miss Tate belongs the credit for putting into operation the idea of a convalescent home in France for Canadian officers. Mrs. Ross was president of the financial committee and Mrs. Herbert Burnham honorary secretary. Money was secured through voluntary subscriptions, a grant from the C.R.C.S., and by the payment of a small billet and ration allowance for each patient of the Imperial forces convalescing there. From the first, the home was under military supervision and did fine work. During the last year it was transferred to the summer residence of Baron Henri de Rothschild in the Trouville Hospital District. The staff had a sanctioned strength of ten Canadian women, all voluntary workers, with the exception of one professional nurse and a masseuse. The Home was superintended at first by Mrs. William Douglas and later by Mrs. Christopher Robinson.

Some Canadian women qualified for that arduous, exacting, and heroic work, the driving of motor convoys. Miss Jessie McLachlin, of Ottawa, was decorated by the French Government because of devotion to duty. Canadian women also did admirable service as ambulance drivers in England, France, and elsewhere, some of them operating machines as far away as Serbia. Several of them were mentioned in despatches.

Fifty-seven women of Canadian birth connected themselves with the staffs of American Red Cross military hospitals, and of these five were still on the staff at the close of hostilities, the others serving for very short periods.

Two of Canada's young women, Miss Evelyn Gordon Brown, of Ottawa, and Miss K. J. Snyder, of Vancouver, identified themselves with the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry and received decorations for bravery under shell-fire. Miss Ella Scobie, another V.A.D., was mentioned in despatches.

Miss Jane Whitman, of Nova Scotia, volunteered early in the war, went to France, and worked untiringly providing comforts for the men and at the French *cantine* at Gare de l'Est, at which place she died of spinal meningitis in May, 1917.

Other women who worked in various capacities were: Miss Foster, Miss McTavish, and Mrs. Peter Lyall, who acted as official representative in Paris of the Manitoba War Relief for France; Miss Eleanor Fleet, who worked at No. 9 B.R.C. Hospital and at the same place when it became a casualty clearing station for the Second Army; Mrs. Paul Watel, who founded a hospital for French soldiers at Giungamp at the beginning of the war; Mme. Bergas, who directed the casualty hospital at Dinard and afterwards worked in other French hospitals; Mlle. de Foras, of Winnipeg, who also worked at Dinard until incapacitated by illness, which proved fatal; Miss Davignon, of Knowlton, P.Q., who was assistant in the Juviy hospital for French wounded and during the last year of war worked in a French canteen; Mme. Chase-Casgrain, who directed refugee work in the *Œuvre pour les Hôpitaux Militaires,* and also collected money in Canada for French Relief and was awarded the *Médaille de la Reconnaissance.* Misses Mabel and Edith Kerr, of Hamilton, devoted time, money, and talent to the relief of soldiers without family. Miss Leah McCarthy, of Toronto, and Miss Flora Taylor, of St. Catharines, did work in the American canteen at Arlier. Mlle. Thérèse Brazeau organized concerts for soldiers. Mrs. W. R. Thomas worked for a year in the Russian hospital in Nice. Mlle. de Longueil, of Montreal, organized house-to-house visiting of consumptive soldiers and trained nurses for service at Besançon, 1916-17. Miss Edith Morris, of Toronto, did clerical work continuously from May, 1917. She served the British Y.M.C.A. at Etaples and Abbeville, and then the Franco-American Y.M.C.A. at Foyer des Soldats.

Mrs. Henshaw, of Vancouver, was made captain early in the war and was sent on a tour of inspection of the war zone in France; later she organized a *Service de Blessés et de Réfugiés* attached to both the army and *Service de Santé*. Much of this work was carried on under shell-fire and won for her the *Croix de Guerre* with citation for coolness and skill in danger. During the summer of 1918 she did work with the staff of the C.R.C.S. motor drivers in Paris.

ursing
isters

A whole chapter might be devoted to Canada's Nursing Sisters, without giving fulsome praise. Wherever the troops went, there were the Sisters. The same perils on land and sea that confronted the troops were met by the Sisters. The same bravery that was displayed by the men was conspicuous among the Sisters. By agreement of all civilized nations, Nursing Sisters and the wounded are immune from attack and therefore are not protected as are regular soldiers. Nursing Sisters and their charges were doubly at the mercy of the Hun, because their location was plainly indicated. Those who were, in a measure, free from the danger due to perfidy on the part of the enemy were, nevertheless, exposed to hardship which carried danger in a different form. Wherever placed, these noble women did their whole duty and did it well.

Canadian nurses went to England, France, Salonika, Mudros, Russia, Egypt, and Gallipoli. They were on hospital ships between England and France as well as between England and Canada, and on ambulance trains. They nursed the wounded of the Allies in Canadian hospitals as well as those from all parts of the British Empire. At the time of the signing of the Armistice, there were in England, on total strength, 1,107 Canadian Sisters, and 795 in France.

All the world knows the story of the *Llandovery Castle,* that monument to Hunnish barbarity. Fourteen nurses lost their lives at that time. One was killed in action, four were killed in raids on hospitals, one was drowned, and eighteen died "from natural causes," and six were wounded.

Because the Sisters received the rank and pay of officers, they were eligible for certain decorations. Eight received the Military Medal for conspicuous bravery, forty-three were awarded the Royal Red Cross Medal, first class, 149 the Royal Red Cross Medal, second class, and 152 were mentioned in despatches. Principal Matron E. K. Redley, R.R.C., was made Commander of the British Empire, and Matron B. J. Willoughby, R.R.C., was made Officer of the British Empire. Several nurses served the entire period of the war. In Canada, 527 Nursing Sisters were on duty in convalescent homes.

In reply to the request of the British Red Cross Society and Order of St. John of Jerusalem, 324 official V.A.D.'s sailed from Canada for overseas service. They served wherever Nursing Sisters served; some under the British Red Cross and others in the Anglo-French Hospital. Some drove ambulances in the countries of the Allies; while some took charge of recreation huts or formed part of the staffs of various homes. Two of the V.A.D.'s were mentioned in despatches. Another body, not official, enrolled to the number of 180 in the Imperial Canadian V.A.D.'s, founded in 1918, with Lady Perley as commandant. They wore the regular uniform, with "Canada — R" as a shoulder badge.

There was but one death among the V.A.D.'s, Miss Dorothy Pearson Twist, Shawnigan Lake, B.C., dying of influenza pneumonia. She was buried with full military honours at Aldershot.

In common with the other Allies, Canada was compelled to face and overcome new conditions in every department of life. Shortage of men would have spelled the disruption of the entire social and economic fabric had there not been a willingness on the part of Canadian women to step into the breach and a like willingness on the part of the business world to employ women where previously only male help had been considered capable. This is popularly referred to as substitution and dilution of labour. While it is true that at first women replaced men with something like mathematical exactness, it became true, later, that women took over work that had not been done previously by men for the simple reason that the work was not in existence when men would have been available. War increased business enormously in certain directions and women made it possible to carry that increase. In a double and very important sense, therefore, they substituted for the men called to the colours.

Another thing to be kept in mind in giving proper estimate to the entrance of women into the unfamiliar world of business is that for the most part women were entirely untrained and it was impossible for one untrained worker to replace entirely one trained man. The trained workers who were left had to be distributed among the untrained in such a way that the labour of all should keep up the standard of the output. This was dilution. Over ten thousand women stepped into business life. They filled positions of responsibility and applied themselves in such a way that the close of war found many retained because their services were valuable in a strictly business sense.

Banking, railroading, insurance, the making of munitions, farming in its many branches, dairying, tramway conductors, motor drivers, operators in aeroplane factories, every one of these and countless other occupations were undertaken by women who allowed nothing to come between them and winning the war. It seemed, in the main, that the only limit to the kinds of work that women could do was their lack of physical strength and their inability to stand great nervous strain. It frequently happened that women overcame some of these handicaps by suggesting improved methods of handling material. This was especially true in the making of munitions. It was the women who saw that by simply changing the position of a certain machine they could handle heavy shells with ease. There were other shells which even men could not handle. For a long time it was thought that women could not make the 9.2 shell, but one manufacturer thought differently and within five weeks from the time he began instructing his four hundred women workers they were turning the shells out according to standard and performing every operation up to and including the shipping. Too much weight cannot be given to the fact that an element which aided English manufacturers was lacking in Canada. No woman, as operator, had ever set foot in a metal-working factory in Canada before October, 1916. Neither were Canadian factories under national control. The splendid loyalty of organized labour caused both those possible obstacles to disappear.

Every community had its own peculiar problems along welfare lines and, in each case, the need was solved. Throughout the war Canadian men and women worked hand in hand in every enterprise. Both gave unstintingly of their money; both gave without stint of their leisure and of their ability. There was splendid co-operation. In no work was this more apparent than in the management of the Patriotic Fund. Because of the magnitude of the demands made upon the fund, the Montreal office, for example, had need of a staff possessed of the best that was forthcoming in the way of executive ability, devotion to duty, and special equipment for work. All of this, and, if possible, more, was found. The executive work was in the hands of Miss Helen R. Y. Reid, a Lady of Grace. The eighteen departments into which she divided the work were looked after with marvellous efficiency by voluntary workers, sometimes numbering ten to a department. They looked after an area of about 178 square miles and attended to the daily needs of about forty thousand persons. Not only were pressing needs attended to, but the future was kept in mind and thrift encouraged by practical instruction. Thousands of families are, to-day, better fitted than ever before to live within their incomes and save a little besides, all because of the patient, practical, sympathetic way in which their problems and worries were understood by the main office. Training in this work resulted in the transfer of many workers to voluntary service overseas.

Women's Institutes in Canada played an important part in helping to win the war. This is one of the groups of organized women who will never receive their due meed of praise as war workers. The members belonged to the I.O.D.E. and the Red Cross,[1] sometimes to more than one group, and were credited where they worked.

In their own particular line they gave material help in the campaign for increased production on the farms, often furnishing the needed labour themselves. They contributed generously of material and then, by working at the canning centres, put it into shape for shipping overseas.

Many a sick boy in hospital in France was cheered by the faithful service of one woman, and what she accomplished shows how much good one person can do when really in earnest. Mrs. Rachel de Wolf Archibald, of Wolfville, N.S., filled and packed, with her own hands, an even five thousand jars of fruit for the military hospitals in France. This was done in a tiny bungalow and by a frail little woman whose only son was overseas with the Imperials, R. E. Black Watch. She "carried on," without compensation, as valiantly as any soldier. She had a mother's heart for every sick soldier. One summer, in order that pneumonia throats and gassed lungs might be eased, Mrs. Archibald and her daughter travelled over a hundred miles gathering blackberries. She invented her own methods of packing and not one jar was lost, not even in the North Station in Halifax on that fatal day, December 6th, 1917. As the scope of her work increased, the Halifax Red Cross and friends who were in sympathy with the work furnished fruit, jars, and sugar.

---

[1] See Vol. II, Chapter X.

The Canadian W.C.T.U., like so many other organizations, did its war work, for the most part, in Red Cross and I.O.D.E. groups. Special work was undertaken by the Toronto district and over $3,000,000 which did not go through provincial channels was subscribed for war work. The Ontario district organized for systematic war work and contributed $31,526.28 for war causes. Other districts did valuable service.

One of the ways in which Canada was kept closely in touch with the affairs of the Allies was through the Women's Canadian Clubs. Speakers from abroad were secured and many causes were presented for aid by this means. Splendid generosity was shown by the clubs in spite of the fact that they were generous supporters of the Red Cross, the I.O.D.E., and frequently of special causes dear to certain communities. At the same time these clubs did fine home work, devoting their time and money towards the needs of their own community. They visited for the Patriotic Fund and organized work that had a direct bearing on repatriation. Notable among such movements is the work done by the Women's Canadian Club at St. John, N.B. The club had a membership of nine hundred and expended for war purposes $18,000. The members did a tremendous amount of excellent work meeting the English brides of Canadian soldiers who came over at the close of the war. Other clubs did equally fine work, but on a smaller scale, because the need was not so great.

Almost inseparable from the workings of the Patriotic Club, and yet filling a niche of its own, was the Soldiers' Wives' League. The mother league, organized in Montreal during the Boer War, grew by leaps and bounds during the Great World War, numbering twenty-four branches when peace was declared. It carried on three distinct lines of work: Relief for soldiers' dependents; management and up-keep of Osborne House; work of its branches. Sympathy with the soldiers' dependents is at the foundation of the league's work, and this has always been shown in fullest measure and in practical ways. During the last year of the war the league's expenses were $21,667.87, with a monthly expense account at the close of the war of $2,000. Its income for the same period was $26,759.93. Every important war measure was aided by the league.

Canadian girls did their "bit" on the land, leaving the city to help on berry and fruit farms. They did dairy work and planted and harvested crops, attended to stock and took over the care of the house, in order to release women who could fill pressing vacancies elsewhere.

Too much cannot be said in praise of the farm women themselves, who were in serious difficulty because of the shortage of farm labour. They worked at regular farm work throughout the summer.

Like hundreds of other organizations, the Y.W.C.A. in Canada worked zealously to alleviate local needs arising from war conditions. This took the form of supplementing, in every possible way, the work carried on by the Red Cross Society and various bodies looking after soldiers in Canadian hospitals and after dependents in Canada.

War work which was national in character concerned itself with looking after women working on the land and in fruit camps, the establishment and management of canteens, hostels, and hostess houses, and the support of several workers in France. During 1917-18 the association supervised fifty camps in Ontario and placed 333 house mothers and helpers in these camps and in others opened in various parts of the Dominion.

Four canteens for war workers were established by the Y.W.C.A. and operated for a year, or less time. They served a daily average of fifteen hundred girls and were operated by about four hundred voluntary workers. Two hostels were operated for short periods for war workers, and hostess houses were maintained in the R.A.F. camps and at the artillery and military camps in Ontario.

One worker was supported for service with the British Y.W.C.A., one with the American Y.W.C.A., and a Canadian Y.W.C.A. hut at Honfleur, in charge of a Y.W.C.A worker, was presented to the Army.

With the splendid record made by Canadian women in standing shoulder to shoulder with their men when that was the thing needed, marching along, doing without comforts and leisure and peace of mind in order that justice might endure on the earth, no one need fear that the future of Canada will be neglected. The same spirit that conquered the menace of the past has turned to the serious problems that must be met in order that Canada shall fulfil her destiny. Her women are already "carrying on" and marching under the banner "To-morrow."

2. The War Work of the I.O.D.E.

Women may not be called upon to sound a battle-cry to arms, but there are bloodless battles to be won, as essential to the stability of a great empire and the uplifting of its people as the victories of the battlefield. Women's work in strengthening and preserving the fabric of the British Empire and safeguarding its ideals was thus visioned by Mrs. Clark Murray, of Montreal, at the time of the South African War. But the same search-light of vision did not reveal the titanic part it was destined to play in the Great World War.

On February 13th, 1900, a new bond of Empire was created among women living under the British flag, when a society was organized for the promotion of patriotic undertakings. Not only in every town and city of the Dominion of Canada, but in all parts of the Empire, were the links of patriotism to be welded. Primary chapters were to be federated into municipal, provincial, and national chapters, and ultimately an imperial chapter with headquarters in London, which would centralize this organization, whose far-reaching influence would be felt to the uttermost parts of the Empire.

After a year's strenuous work of organization, Mrs. Clark Murray relinquished the future of the order into the hands of capable Toronto women. Mrs. Samuel Nordheimer was elected first president, and the first National Executive was composed of Mrs. MacMahon, Mrs. H. S. Strathy, Mrs. Arthur Van Koughnet, Mrs. John Bruce, Mrs. A. E. Gooderham, and Miss Macdonald. In 1901 the organization was incorporated as the Imperial Order of Daughters of the Empire and Children of the Empire.

The badge of the order is a Union Jack centering a white, seven-pointed star on a blue ground, encircled by the name of the order, on white relief, the whole surmounted by the Imperial Crown. The motto of the order is "One Flag, One Throne, One Empire." Imperial unity is its corner-stone, upon which chapter after chapter has been founded. Seven years after its inception 118 chapters existed in Ontario; the following year Western Canada responded with the formation of twenty-nine new chapters. A year later and the Maritime Provinces were marshalled into line. At the present time, every province in the Dominion of Canada has its various chapters. Besides the National Chapter of Canada, national chapters now exist in Bermuda, Newfoundland, and the Bahamas. The order also thrives in Australia and New Zealand and is active in the United States.

Towns, cities, provinces, and autonomous dominions were creating parts of a machinery, whose ensemble and co-operative force were to be put to the severest strain.

The order in Canada, in its fourteen years of existence, had broadened and strengthened in preparation for its stupendous war effort. In four hundred towns and cities there were twenty-four thousand members. Mrs. Gooderham, associated with the order from the first, after having filled the offices of Councillor and National Secretary and Treasurer of the South African Graves Fund, succeeded to the presidency. Four years' experience had thoroughly familiarized her with the rôle of leadership. Thus stood the I.O.D.E. on the eve of war, with a president equipped with a working knowledge of the machinery of the whole, which was to prove a telling factor in the continued organized work of hundreds of voluntary workers.

The aims and objects of the order were each tested in turn and firmly interwoven in the fabric of Imperial service. The first two: "To stimulate and give expression to the sentiment of patriotism, which binds the women and children of the Empire around the Throne and the persons of their gracious and beloved sovereign," and "to supply and foster a bond of union amongst the Daughters of the Empire,"—were essentially fulfilled at the outset. It remained for the third to be tested by an Imperial crisis: "To provide an efficient organization by which prompt and united action may be taken by the women and children of the Empire, when such action is desired.''

Immediately upon the declaration of war in August, 1914, while the War Council discussed matters of grave import, in which the destiny of Canada was involved, the National Committee of the I.O.D.E. called an emergency conference, representative of all nationally organized women's societies, to discuss what might best be done for the national cause.

Women's thoughts naturally tended to the alleviation of the suffering that must inevitably come, and to supplying comforts and meeting all the calls of mercy, for which the sacred symbol of the Red Cross stands.

Many and varied were the suggestions forthcoming to meet the issue, and after due and careful consideration a fully equipped Hospital Ship was thought to be the most fitting gift that Canadian women could make to the Motherland. This suggestion was made by Miss Mary Plummer, who eventually became secretary of the General Committee. Mrs. John Bruce, an efficient and experienced worker, was elected treasurer of the proposed fund. The idea of a floating hospital appealed to the public mind and the Hospital Ship Fund was instituted with an objective of one hundred thousand dollars. For this first war purpose the machinery of the I.O.D.E. was set in motion. Each chapter immediately became a centre of vitalized energy. Long before the allotted three weeks were up, Halifax and Dawson City had answered from the eastern and north-western extremities of the Dominion. Through the channels of women's organizations, money flowed in from every part of Canada, until the objective was exceeded and the high-water mark, $282,857.77, was attained.

Meanwhile the disposition of this sum had become the subject of correspondence with the Admiralty and the War Office. The central committee learned that it would be best to send the money without stipulation as to its expenditure. The gross receipts accordingly were placed in the hands of H.R.H. The Duchess of Connaught. The sum of one hundred thousand dollars was presented to the War Office and without delay twenty motor ambulances were bought and shipped to France, while others were purchased for use in England. The Admiralty received $182,857.77, which they desired to use in a way that would cause the gift to be permanently remembered. Wings were built to the Naval Hospital at Haslar, near Portsmouth, for the use of the nurses. Here the buildings will long remain a monument to Canadian women's loyalty to the British Empire. Thus at the instigation of the I.O.D.E. was inaugurated and accomplished Canadian women's first organized war effort.

As soon as England had declared war, the British Reservists hastened back at the call of the Motherland. Their families were visited and kindly attention shown to them by members of the I.O.D.E. in all parts of the Dominion. In Edmonton, alone, sixty volunteer visitors were looking after the welfare of some two hundred families before the local contingent had left. This was one of the most faithfully sustained services, in which another object of the order was fulfilled: "To care for the dependents of British soldiers and sailors during war, in time of peace, or under sickness, accident or reverses of fortune."

By the time the bugle aroused the stillness of Valcartier Camp to martial life and the white tents of our first volunteers dotted the plain and their bridges were thrown across the tawny tide of Jacques Cartier river, women were busily devising comforts to lessen the accustomed rigours of camp life. Sleeping-caps, mufflers, wristlets, cholera-belts, socks, and numerous other articles were sent in large shipments, the ever handy little housewife equipped with mending necessities proving a boon to every soldier.

Wherever there were military camps, recreation and reading rooms were organized, and temperance canteens, often instituted and frequently served by members of the I.O.D.E., established. Knitting, the almost-forgotten accomplishment of our grandmothers, was revived.

In order to purchase wool and other materials and to establish canteens, money must be forthcoming and plans of every kind were conceived for raising funds for the ultimate use of the fighting men. "Ship Day" was followed by "Flag Days" and "Tag Days," concerts, lectures, carnivals, and bazaars. In short, all old schemes were repeated and many new ones devised with a versatility and inventive genius born of the times.

The first C.E.F. soon entrained for Quebec. In the broad blue waters of the St. Lawrence lay the armada which was to carry "Canada's answer" back to the Motherland. Upon the khaki-clad men crowding the decks, the Plains of Abraham looked down, — historic heights where once their forebears so vigorously contended. On October 3rd, 1914, the gray transports moved slowly seaward on their momentous voyage, convoyed by women's prayers.

Women now felt that Canada had thrown aside the habiliments of Peace and had taken up the gage of Battle in reality. At this crisis the National Executive of the I.O.D.E. evinced a splendid power of leadership. Their keen foresight and systematic planning prevented much overlapping and a harmonious concerted action realized a maximum of effort, — one enthusiastic chapter, bent on attaining the greatest possible working power, going so far as to carry out a registration of its members.

The unwritten law of the order was that which Field Marshal Earl Haig wrote in his final despatch on discipline: "True discipline demands as much from officers as from men, and without mutual trust, understanding, and confidence on the part of all, the highest form of discipline is impossible.''

Provincial, municipal, and chapter regents directed their allotted part of the general campaign with an almost military promptitude. Co-ordination was also essential on the part of the chapters, which, in orderly manner, marched into action like disciplined units, marshalled and drilled.

When the C.E.F. reached England the order at once began working for the comfort of the troops. It showed particular energy in providing Christmas cheer for the men. Many busy hours of planning, buying, making, and packing were represented by each overseas box — rivalled only by Pandora's box of blessings. Military units were remembered by some chapters, while others addressed their boxes to men who had gone from their own locality. The Princess Mary Christmas Fund was but one of many outlets for generosity, which afforded expression of the I.O.D.E. Christmas spirit.

The first war Christmas was a never-to-be-forgotten one by the Canadian soldier. The carefully hung stocking of expectant childhood never divulged a more infinite variety of surprises than his first parcels from home. Gifts of all kinds, descriptions, and uses — food, clothing, and amusement — had crowded the holds of steamers, which followed in the wake of transports. On this first war Christmas, though bitter seas rolled between, separating families and loved ones who faced the dread uncertainty of war, the Motherland and Canada clasped hands in a spirit of deeper affection and truer understanding than ever before.

War had proved a great impetus to the growth of the order. In 1915 one hundred and seventy new chapters had come into existence. Five hundred chapters and thirty thousand members had now to be manœuvred.

At the Annual Meeting the I.O.D.E. War Clasp was introduced by Mrs. Gatewood, of Vancouver, in the following resolution: "That a bar or clasp be placed on the badge of those members of our order who are wives or mothers or both of men who are on active service on behalf of their country, the bar to be of blue enamel in the case of a husband, or crimson enamel in the case of a son, the bar to be a line of blue and one of crimson enamel when a member has both husband and son or sons serving with the colors; across the bar to be placed, in gold letters, the date '1914,' the bar to be suspended by two small gold chains over the badge." Later, this privilege was extended to mothers of nurses serving overseas, in which case the bar was white. No military decoration was ever worn by our gallant men as reward for their heroic exploits as proudly as the slender red, white, and blue bars worn on the breasts of Canadian women.

Not only women of East and West united under the order, but it also proved a strong cumulative force, breaking down for the first time barriers of religion and social caste. Mrs. MacDougald, of Montreal, records the significant fact in the following words: "The women of Quebec have without distinction of race or creed for the first time worked together under the direction of the I.O.D.E. The good sisters of the Roman Catholic order and the church guilds of various denominations have joined hands in a way that has been most inspiring." Regardless of creed or social difference, the gray-garbed nun of the cloister and the fashionable woman of the world, the shopgirl and the millionaire's daughter, worked side by side, folding the white surgical dressings, sewing the khaki shirts, or knitting the soft gray wool into soldiers' comforts, mindful only that they were working for the same sacred cause.

Valuable help was received from an active chapter in the United States under the able regency of Mrs.

Josephine M. Langstaff. In addition to two motor ambulances and a truck, large shipments were made from New York to London of hospital supplies so greatly in demand and often so difficult to obtain — chloroform, ether, ammonia, iodine, rubber sheeting and tubing, adhesive plaster, cases of castor oil, and atomizers. The variety of gifts was infinite and included respirators, hot-water-bags, sand-bags, ambulance rugs, blankets, bandages of all kinds, fracture pillows, air pillows, feather pillows, linen old and new, cases of surgical instruments and electric torches.

Many personal gifts were also made and sent, not least among them the bedside comfort bag on which the sick soldier cast a contented eye of proprietorship. Both American and Canadian branches of the order seemed to doubt the renowned virtues of the English plum-pudding, for the home brand was inevitably included. Such games as cards and chess and puzzles were also sent. Victrolas with their records of music, sacred and secular, grave and gay, wiled away many a weary hour in hospital, but, to the man on the march or in the trenches, there was nothing appreciated like the individual performance of the mouth-organ. This little pocket instrument, sent overseas in large quantities, saved many a situation, enlivened the fighting man's spirit and cheered him when he got into a tight corner. In Tommy Atkins' own words: —

> "O, there ain't no band to cheer us up, there ain't no Highland pipers
> To keep our war-like ardure warm, round New Chapelle and Wipers:
> So since there's nothing like a tune to glad the heart of man,
> Why, Billy with his mouth-organ, 'e does the best 'e can."

While our men fought the Germans on the battlefields of France and Flanders, a foe as insidious as the deadly poison-gas endangered their homeland. In an attempt to precipitate a premature peace, propaganda was scattered broadcast under the favourite guise of Christianity, threatening the country with the paralysis of pacifism. This, however, was powerless to shake the loyalty of the I.O.D.E., who carried on a vigorous offensive. Peace without victory was not on their official programme.

Despite the censor, stories of prisoners languishing in disease in vermin-ridden camps began to filter through, of poor wrecks of humanity often inhumanly treated, sometimes without necessary food and clothing, existing under conditions which often made death more to be desired than life. As soon as word was received of their deplorable plight, the hearts of Canadian women burned within them and their hands compassionately reached out to alleviate their sufferings and render some comfort, meagre though it needs must be. Food and clothing were sent in quantities dictated by the enemy. The Prisoners of War Fund was inaugurated, and in support of this the I.O.D.E. were most generous and active.

Picture those first gifts arriving for starving, ragged men, penned in dirty prison camps, suffering gross indignities at the hands of an inhuman foe. Memory surged over their hearts as they realized that the women of Canada had not forgotten them. Food sustained their strength, but remembrance reinforced their courage. Hundreds of Canadian prisoners of war gratefully attribute their very lives to the parcels from their own loved land which came as providential manna.

When the first disabled veterans returned to Canada, work on their behalf immediately began. As they continued to arrive in an ever-swelling stream, Veterans' Homes were established for them in many cities and fitted with every means of comfort and recreation. For those disabled or convalescent, cots in military hospitals were endowed, wards were equipped, and convalescent homes were established.

The order as a whole and its units contributed to all kinds of war work intended to ameliorate the lot of the fighting forces — hospitals in England, Belgian, Serbian, French, Russian, and Polish relief, the Sailors' Aid Fund, and the Red Cross. One ambitious chapter, while already maintaining a returned soldiers' convalescent home, undertook to provide an annex for Canadians to a London hostel.

Methods of raising funds were as numerous as the needs for which they were required. This exacting and important work was carried on with unflagging zeal. Tea rooms, box collections in shops and hotels, sales of home-made cakes and confectionery and of fancy and useful articles, dances and golf tournaments were some of the ways employed. By such means it was possible to open and maintain local reading and recreation tents, supply churches with honour rolls for the names of men who had enlisted, make contributions of beds to Canadian hospitals, present flags and flagpoles, and give aid in numerous other directions.

Women all over Canada prepared a delectable dainty in the form of home-made jam for the overseas troops — a decided luxury and welcome change from the inevitable "plum and apple," which unquestionably did its "bit" in the Great World War.

The necessary work of making and sending forward field comforts went steadily on. Busy needles were plied in cottage and mansion. Women sewed and knitted untiringly to make socks, shirts, mufflers, mitts, and helmets. Every soldier's comfort and War Relief garment sent overseas by the I.O.D.E. bore a tag on which was woven the crest of the order surmounting the word "Canada." Tens of thousands of these tags were used and their significance is referred to by Lady McLaren Brown, who writes as secretary of the Canadian War Contingent Association, "which received and distributed literally to the four corners of the earth vast supplies of field comforts. And month by month and year by year, as I counted and sorted and checked, I used to marvel at the ever increasing supplies sent by the Daughters. How I used to watch for their cases and rejoice when I saw them, for their little white badge with its letters of blue stitched to the garments and stamped on the parcels was always a guarantee of 'the best.'

"Sometimes I wonder if all the pathos and romance of the faring forth of that little badge of the order has ever been fully realized even by the members themselves. It is known in camps, the barrack, the hospital, the trenches, and on the battle-fields. Across those grave-strewn fields of Flanders it marched with our men. It rested on their bodies when they went down in the holocausts of France. It lay with them on the blood-soaked deserts of Egypt and Palestine. In the terrific places about Salonika, in the wastes of Mesopotamia, in the dark jungles of Africa, — wherever a man of the British breed went to make his fight for righteousness, the emblem of the Daughters of the Empire went too. Aye, it went with him even down to the grave, where he sleeps his last sleep.

"That badge of white and blue, do you know how it has helped and comforted and blessed? I knew a boy, lying in a hospital, whose first faint gleam of interest in life came back when he caught sight of it stitched to the corner of the sheet which covered his broken body. He came from a small town away 'at the back of beyond,' where 'all the girls' had belonged to the chapter, and to him it was a living thing. . . . An Indian soldier, dying far from his native hills, pointed to the white coverlet and smiled when a Canadian girl explained, as best she could, what those little blue letters stood for, 'One Flag, One Throne, One Empire.'

"Sometimes I have helped with the cases being made ready for the 'foreign reliefs.' I used to wonder if the *poilu* would notice the I.O.D.E. badge stitched inside his sock, and what the brave Alpini, who watched in the lonely mountains, would make of it; and whether if, in far-off Serbia, where a well-nigh hopeless people still stood erect, they would speculate about the meaning of the badge fastened to the garments and the linen which helped to cover their nakedness!''

At the sixteenth annual meeting of the order, the president, Mrs. Gooderham, remarked that its growth had been phenomenal. It was now immeasurably the largest women's organization in the Empire, and its leadership in patriotic work had become everywhere recognized. She eulogized the voluntary recruiting spirit, but declared that the time had come for a change of system as in England.

The order did much to stimulate recruiting. One Western chapter held a ''Silent Recruiting'' week for one of the battalions, each member wearing a badge urging enlistment. Resolutions were unanimously passed in favour of military training in the schools and a petition was sent to the Dominion Government to prohibit the importation of enemy goods after the war.

One of the most outstanding war efforts and the most corporate work of the order during the year had been the founding of the Annexes of the King George and Queen Mary Maple Leaf Club in England. This most praiseworthy piece of work was inspired by the need of the Canadian soldier on leave who was without friends in England and lacked comfortable quarters during his brief respite from the trenches. The cheery atmosphere of these comfortable headquarters filled a long-felt want, and was gratefully welcomed by thousands of Canadian soldiers.

Canadian women volunteers, many of whom were members of the order, looked after these buildings and gave the desired touch of ''home.'' H.R.H. the Princess Patricia of Connaught, now Lady Patricia

Ramsay, usually appeared at the supper hour and graciously assisted in waiting on the tables. An especially cordial greeting was bestowed upon any lucky wearer of the P.P.C.L.I. badge, who was gallantly sustaining the colours worked by her own hands.

The year 1917 was ushered in with no signs of the ominous war-cloud lifting. The order had now settled down solidly and patiently to its work and even tried to exceed its previous stupendous efforts. Eighty-four new chapters with active membership had been enrolled. It could now boast the magnificent membership of forty thousand.

Some idea of the year's work may be gleaned from the report of the treasurer, Mrs. John Bruce: Ordinary receipts for the year $11,069, and special contributions of $2,314 for Canadian Red Cross, $3,005 for Secours Nationale, $5,830 for Y.M.C.A. overseas, $3,607 for British Sailors' Relief Fund, $2,623 for St. Dunstan's Home for Blind Soldiers, $2,196 for Prisoners of War Relief, etc., with $753,601 raised by the various chapters of the order for war work in general.

The welfare of orphaned children of soldiers killed during the war was a subject for serious consideration. The establishment of homes for their care was embodied in a resolution sent to the Federal Government.

The order, with the soldiers' interest at heart, petitioned the Government to grant furloughs to all men of the first Canadian Expeditionary Force, those who had borne the brunt of battle and were still overseas.

The convalescent homes for soldiers had proved a great boon. One Western home, alone, reported that 3,545 had enjoyed its care and hospitality.

Food was the second line of defence. Food became the universal topic, although Canada did not suffer from a food shortage as did the Motherland. Food conferences were held to consider what help might be sent overseas. As a result members of the I.O.D.E. pledged themselves to abstain from the use of potatoes two days each week, also to observe two meatless days, that these commodities might be shipped overseas. Thrift campaigns were launched among Canadian women in general.

The women of Canada emulated the splendid spirit shown by the women of England and France. They freed men that they might fight in the Empire's defence and hundreds of the order laboured as farmerettes, munitionettes, and filled positions in banks, offices, and in countless ways did their best to exemplify that there was no sacrifice which they would not voluntarily make, nor any hardship they would refuse to undergo to help toward the goal of ultimate victory.

The thoughts and activities of the chapters were abruptly directed to a home disaster. A ship loaded with high explosives blew up in Halifax harbour, shattering the harbour-front and causing a deplorable loss of life. Help was rushed into the stricken city from all directions. Special trains with nurses and doctors hastened to the scene, where many of the homeless inhabitants were suffering not only from shock and injury but from loss of sight caused by the shattering glass.

In the wake of the fire, which inevitably broke out, followed a blizzard which demolished the temporary quarters of the sufferers. Many women's organizations sent food and clothing. The National Executive of the I.O.D.E. issued an appeal for the establishment of a "Halifax Fund" with the intention of founding a home for unclaimed children. Normal conditions revealed, however, that the number of little ones rendered homeless was not so great as at first anticipated, and the money upon advice was used for the establishment of a Home for Mentally Deficient Children. Thus directly through the war was established this first home of its kind in the Dominion of Canada.

Another undertaking of which the order is justly proud was the founding of the Daughters of the Empire Red Cross Hospital, which British authorities pronounced to be one of the finest in London. The building was located on a beautiful site opposite Hyde Park. Its complete equipment was generously provided by Colonel and Mrs. Gooderham, with the exception of the operating theatre and X-ray machine, which were gifts of the primary chapters.

The hospital was formally opened by H.R.H. Princess Louise, Duchess of Argyll. Their Majesties King George and Queen Mary paid a friendly visit of inspection to the institution and graciously commended the work of the I.O.D.E. in general. Instituted for the exclusive accommodation of officers, it was always filled to capacity. Within its walls torn and shattered men were restored to fight again in their country's defence, or, in the case of the more serious cases, were passed on to convalescent homes. The genuine gratitude of the patients was expressed not only for the tender care and excellent skill of nurse and surgeon, but for the order which had devised and worked to make possible the establishment of this institution.

In 1918 lowered the darkest hour before the dawn. In this year General Haig issued his historic order: "With our backs to the wall and believing in the justice of our cause, each one of us must fight to the end. The safety of our homes and the freedom of mankind depend upon the conduct of each one of us at this critical moment."

Upon individual effort the outcome now depended. The unyielding spirit of our dauntless men, who stubbornly fought on with the characteristic tenacity of the British breed, was emulated generally by Canadian women. One of Germany's greatest mistakes was in reckoning on the detachment of the Dominions. The Prussian War Lords queried as to what the men of Canada might do on an issue, but the women's part was quite unthought of or was considered a negligible quantity. Canadian women had to be reckoned with. Without martial bands or banners they quietly recruited everywhere, and women of every age, class, and accomplishment, without ostentation, continued to step into the men's places in office and factory, and on the farm, that men might be released for military service, and did their utmost to help carry on the business of the nation. Premier David Lloyd George has eloquently testified that it was the women of the Allied nations who made victory possible.

The I.O.D.E. had not only energetically "carried on" in every field of war effort but, be it recorded to their everlasting honour, they faithfully sustained all pre-war responsibilities. The noble and widely recognized work in safeguarding public health against the inroads of the white plague was as loyally carried on and as generously financed as though no world war had been raging.

In addition to these multitudinous activities, the order courageously launched still another enterprise. Second only to the soldier's welfare and comfort were those of the nursing sister, three members of which profession were being supported by the order. Annexes and clubs had proved such a boon to overseas Canadians, that the order confidently made a general appeal for funds. As expected, it met with a ready response, sufficient to enable the Committee of Management to install a club for Canadian nurses in most desirable quarters at 95 Lancaster Gate, London. This was the town house of Lady Minto, wife of a former governor-general of Canada. Every comfort and convenience were available at a nominal cost and these attractive headquarters afforded the longed-for home touch.

H.R.H. Princess Patricia officiated at the opening ceremony, nurses in uniform attending as a guard of honour. A rapidly increasing membership testified both to the great need met by this club and to the appreciation of the nurses of the advantages it afforded. The honorary secretary of the Committee of Management observed that: "In their long record of splendid achievement, the I.O.D.E. never accomplished a more useful project."

A lively interest was taken by many of the chapters in the St. Dunstan's Home for Blind Soldiers, to the support of which they liberally contributed. They keenly appreciated the work being so splendidly accomplished by the institution for our sightless heroes, who, deprived by war of their most precious sense, had yet a longer, harder, and less glorious battle to wage alone. Sir Arthur Pearson, the head of the institution, who won a notable victory over his own loss of sight, was specially fitted to inspire our men to surmount their heavy handicap, to restore their shaken self-confidence, and to train them to become competent in their various chosen paths of life.

War clouds began to lighten and the radiant vision of Peace dawned suddenly upon a wondering world. The guns of battle abruptly ceased and the day for which all had worked and prayed came with a suddenness that outdistanced the expectations of the most sanguine.

It is impossible to give an adequate idea of the multiplicity of activities of the I.O.D.E., whose scope was wide as the Empire. Recognition of the services of individual chapters would be an endless task, but a brief compilation is embodied in the following from Headquarters Reports:—

Out of funds raised entirely by members of the order, nineteen ambulances, three motor trucks, eighteen machine-guns, two automobiles, and thirty-two field kitchens were donated to the army. Similar undertakings under other auspices have also been liberally contributed to, such as the motor ambulances from Southern Alberta, Saskatchewan, Manitoba, and the Lady Ross Fund for Ambulances. Twelve operating tables, one electrical massage apparatus, twenty-two wheel stretchers and invalid chairs were donated to various hospitals, and six sterilizing outfits sent to Serbian hospital units.

Military hospitals were the object of much attention on the part of the order, who furnished completely thirty-six wards and endowed or equipped nine hundred and forty-two beds. Three huts for convalescent soldiers were donated and four convalescent homes established. Twelve soldiers' and sailors' clubs and also eleven club rooms stand to the credit of the primary chapters. Most of this work thus begun will require continual support.

On Armistice Day, November 11th, 1918, there were four provincial chapters, twenty-four municipal chapters, six hundred and forty-two primary chapters, eighty junior chapters, making a grand total of seven hundred and fifty chapters in the Dominion of Canada.

Since the outbreak of war the order has followed with keenest interest the work of the British navy, the "Silent Service." The Navy League of Canada, in recognition of the services of the I.O.D.E., many of whose chapters record frequent and generous gifts, recognize the local chapters of the order wherever organized, making their officers ex-officio members of the Navy League branch. Mrs. Gooderham, the president, was elected to the first vice-presidency of the Dominion Navy League. In recognition of personal services rendered and interest generally shown in matters pertaining to the navy, a service medal was bestowed upon her. *Why Britain Rules the Waves* was the title of a pamphlet contributed by her to the series of valuable navy pamphlets issued by the Navy League. Hundreds of pictures commemorating the Empire's great naval events and innumerable gift and prize books recording naval history have been distributed throughout the Dominion, especially in the provinces bordering on the sea.

In addition to the funds already launched for French Relief, a movement was set on foot to re-establish homeless French refugees in the districts devastated by war, to which plan Madame Chase-Casgrain bent her energies and in the interests of which she toured Canada. Various chapters felt that the duty owed France was inseparably linked with the remembrance of the men who fought and gave their lives on the Western front. They could conceive no more fitting memorial than the restoration of the area laid waste by the rude hand of war. The magnificent subscription of $10,000 from the Ontario Government and lesser sums from a few interested individuals opened this worthy fund. The work of restoration and relief began and huts and houses were built and furnished in the districts that had been laid waste by the ruthless German army. Those who inhabit these homes built as a gift of Canadians will learn to feel that there exists a link of warm human understanding between the countries whose men fought for the same cause.

The fund grew so rapidly that it was soon possible for the directing authorities to set aside a distinct section in the war-swept area which was to be designated as "The Daughters of the Empire Sector." The plan will be completed by placing in a church or public building, in the restored portion, the names of contributing chapters and individuals who relieved the distress of living France and remembered the Canadian heroes who fell fighting that the French people might continue to enjoy the blessing of liberty.

Thus did the order help to ameliorate the lot of those sorely smitten by war and at the same time "to cherish the memory of brave and heroic deeds and last resting-places of our heroes and heroines, especially such as are in distant and solitary places, to erect memorial stones on spots that have become sacred to the Nation through great struggles for freedom and battles against ignorance, and by events of heroic and patriotic self-sacrifice."

The close of the Great World War did not end the activities of the I.O.D.E. The future had to be considered and plans were laid for education along National and Imperial lines.

This is the bond to which the order now set its seal: That a fund be raised by the I.O.D.E. in Canada to promote the educational work of the order as a memorial to the Canadian men and women who have died so gloriously in the defence of the Empire during the present war, this fund to be expended in the following ways:

1. To found scholarships of sufficient value to provide a university education or its recognized equivalent, available for and limited to the sons and daughters of: (a) a soldier or sailor or man of the Air Force killed in action or who died from wounds or by reason of the war prior to the declaration of Peace; (b) the permanently disabled soldier or sailor; (c) the soldier or sailor who, by reason of injuries received in service overseas, dies after the declaration of Peace while his children or any of them are of school age. In those provinces where other organizations or institutions have made similar provision, these scholarships will not be given.
2. Post-graduate scholarships from a national fund, to be distributed among the provinces.
3. A travelling fellowship, to be competed for by the I.O.D.E. provincial scholars.
4. A lecture foundation in Canada for the teaching of Imperial history.

5. To place in schools selected by the Departments of Education of every province, some of the reproductions of the series of Canadian War Memorial Pictures, painted for the Dominion Government by leading artists of the Empire, to commemorate Canada's part in the war, so that in every community the children of Canada may be constantly reminded of the heroic deeds of the men and women whose sacrifices saved the Empire and its cherished institutions.

6. To promote courses of illustrated lectures, free to the children of Canada, on the history and geography of the Empire.

7. To place, within the next five years, in every school in Canada, where there are children of foreign-born parents in attendance, a Daughters of the Empire historical library.

Thus will be immortalized the glorious sacrifice of men and women, in all branches of the Service, who exemplified a true Imperial spirit even unto death. The pageantry of war is past, but ''Peace hath her victories not less renowned than war.'' Many bloodless battles still must be waged, wherein education should prove as effectual a weapon as did the sword of the Allies on the battle-fields of the Great World War.

CHAPTER VI

THE CAMPAIGN IN NORTHERN RUSSIA[1]

IT was not until May, 1918, that the Entente Allies decided to send a military expedition to Northern Russia. Looking back over the progress of the Russian revolution, it may seem strange that such a decision was not arrived at many months sooner. However, there were probably what seemed to be very excellent reasons for the delay. Be that as it may, the time chosen eventually was one of the most perilous that confronted the Allies during the whole war. In Russia, German propaganda had succeeded to an amazing extent and greatly outbalanced the material assistance which the Allies sought to render the anti-Bolshevik forces. Following their success in demoralizing the Russian military power, the Germans concentrated their efforts on crushing the Allies on the Western front. Their offensive, commenced in March, was, by May, plunging its way toward Paris in a tremendous effort to reach that goal before the American armies in France had become sufficiently large and well trained to constitute a serious obstacle. The chaotic condition of Russia made it possible for them to transfer troops from their eastern frontier to the battle-line in France at the rate of six divisions a month. At no other time in the whole titanic struggle, with the exception of the period preceding the Battle of the Marne, was the need of the Allies for men on the Western front more urgent. In spite of that, however, and to some extent because of it, drastic action with respect to Russia had become imperative.

---

[1] The writer acknowledges the courteous assistance rendered him in the preparation of this article by Colonel C. H. L. Sharman, C.M.G., C.B.E., who kindly loaned maps, diaries, reports, and other documents relating to the campaign in Northern Russia.

The half-hearted policy of shipping munitions and supplies to the anti-Bolshevik forces had not only proved entirely inadequate when matched against German intrigue, but it had added yet another danger to those existing already. Vast stores of Allied munitions and other war material had been collected at the port of Archangel, on the White Sea, to assist the loyal Russians who were offering armed resistance to the baneful German influences and the Bolshevik revolution. But the astonishing success of the revolution, coupled with the apparently friendly relations existing between Germany and the Bolsheviki, made it more than a possibility that the supplies at Archangel would fall into the hands of the enemy. Again, there was real danger that the Germans would attempt to occupy the port of Kola, on the Murmansk coast, for use as a submarine base. Had the enemy secured control of that port and the railway running south to a point near Petrograd, it would have been possible for them to outflank the great mine barrage that the American and British navies were constructing between Scotland and Norway. Further, it was a matter of honour, as well as of expediency, that an earnest effort should be made to establish communications with, and to assist as much as possible, the forces in Russia that were still loyal to the cause of the Entente Allies.

The expeditionary force was drawn from British, French, Italian, Serbian, Canadian, and American units. Including the Russians who joined the force after its debarkation, it totalled only about twenty thousand men. Canada's initial contribution was not large. Some fifty Canadian officers and non-commissioned officers went along as instructors for the Russian units that it was proposed to recruit. These Canadians had all seen active service in France, a number of them from early in 1915. Their work as instructors soon proved to be but a portion of their duties. They were called upon to supervise the transport of supplies on their section of the front, and they had a hand in the fighting as well.

Both the Murmansk coast and Archangel had been occupied by the Allies early in August. Delay in reaching the latter place, however, enabled the Bolsheviki to remove practically all of the munitions and other military supplies that had been stored there. It was a serious and galling loss, for during the following winter the Bolsheviki used the guns and shells against the Allied force.

After occupying Archangel small forces were sent up the Dvina river and the railway connecting Archangel with the trans-Siberian railway near Petrograd. A small flanking party was sent up the Pinega river for a few miles above its confluence with the Dvina. The other, or western flank, had been provided for, after the occupation of Kola, by the seizure of Kem and Onega, on Onega bay. There were, therefore, three main lines of advance, with the flanks at the outset well over one hundred miles apart and about three times that distance at the ultimate fighting front. The railway force had met with stiff resistance, but managed to advance about sixty miles to Obosertskaya, which proved to be the farthest point reached in that direction. The force on the Dvina had met with greater success. With the assistance of two monitors it was able to proceed some three hundred miles up-stream to the junction of the Dvina and Vaga rivers and then up each of these for forty and seventy miles respectively. Obviously, this was a long way to extend so small a force from its base, especially in a country more than half the inhabitants of which were secretly, if not openly, hostile. Besides, the Bolsheviki were beginning to realize that the forces opposed to them were not formidable and, consequently, their resistance steadily increased. In addition to rallying their land forces, they had brought together a number of barges and steamers, upon which they mounted field-guns and howitzers. The Allies, therefore, decided to halt their advance and to strengthen the positions they had already occupied, so as to be in readiness for a winter campaign.

The situation evidently caused some concern at the British War Office, for late in August reinforcements were ordered and Major-General E. Ironside, formerly of the 4th Canadian Division, was made Commander-in-Chief. The Canadian military authorities sanctioned the formation and despatch, with these reinforcements, of the 16th Brigade, Canadian Field Artillery. Colonel C. H. L. Sharman, who was then in charge of the Canadian Reserve Artillery at Witley, was given command of the new brigade. His first step was to call for volunteers from the officers and men in the Reserve Artillery who had seen service in France. There were plenty of applicants. Few of the men were keen on returning to France, but they were weary of the ennui and routine of camp life in England, and saw in the Russian expedition an opportunity to vary their military careers. Major F. F. Arnoldi, D.S.O., and Major W. C. Hyde, D.S.O., were selected to command the two six-gun batteries. All the combatant officers, with one exception, as well as the gunners and a number of the signallers and drivers, had seen active service in France. The others were drawn from the Reserve Artillery, and, in spite of their lack of experience in actual warfare, played their part in the campaign in a very creditable manner. To the usual establishment of an artillery brigade headquarters was added a signal personnel corresponding to an engineer signal company, but the members were all artillery signallers who had received their training in France early in the war. Medical, Dental, Veterinary, Pay, and Y.M.C.A. officers were carefully selected by their several branches of the Service. Colonel Sharman demanded the selection of men who, in addition to departmental fitness, were strong, healthy, and optimistic. The wisdom of insisting on these additional requirements was amply proved during the long, trying winter campaign in Northern Russia. A reinforcing party of five officers and fifty men also accompanied the brigade all the way from England to the battery positions. They performed very valuable services during the winter, for during that period not a single wounded or sick man who was once evacuated to the base ever returned to the lines, owing to difficulties of transport and other kindred reasons. The whole brigade was given as thorough training as time permitted in the handling of machine guns and trench mortars and also in infantry tactics.

Although the brigade was ready to leave England on the 7th of September, it was not until the 19th that it entrained at Witley for Dundee, from whence it sailed on the S.S. *Stephen* two days later. Some thirteen hundred Canadian, British, and French troops were packed in a boat which had accommodation for about two hundred. Consequently, the nine days' voyage was extremely hard on officers and men alike. An escort of destroyers was provided as far as the Shetland islands, after which no other ships appeared on the cold, deserted waters until the convoy had reached the Murmansk coast. Influenza and pneumonia broke out, chiefly amongst the French troops, and intensified the anxiety of those in charge. The Canadians were free from sickness other than *mal de mer,* a circumstance largely attributable to regular physical drill while on shipboard and later on when travelling on barges up the Dvina river. The Americans, for example, had lost sixty-five men from disease in Archangel before the end of September. Field-guns were mounted on the forward part of the ship for use in the event of a submarine attack, and also to give the artillery gunners some drill in direct ranging from the decks of a rolling steamer.

The convoy anchored in Archangel harbour on the evening of September 30th, but the Canadians were not disembarked until the 3rd of October. Colonel Sharman received orders on landing to move the Canadians up the Dvina river for some three hundred miles to support the troops that had landed two months previously. It was necessary to obtain barges and tugs to convey the equipment up-stream. This was accomplished after a day's delay and the long, tedious struggle with currents and sand-bars and crippled tugs commenced. On the evening of the 7th, the brigade reached Yemetskoe, a small village near the junction of the Emtsa river with the Dvina and about one hundred and fifty miles from Archangel. It was near this point that two sections of the 68th Canadian Battery, under Major Hyde, first went into action. The Canadian military authorities had intended that the 16th Brigade of Artillery should operate as a unit. Actual conditions soon indicated the folly of attempting that in Northern Russia. The physical features of the country, the political turmoil in which the inhabitants were involved, the small numbers of troops holding a large and semi-hostile area, and the shortage of artillery, each and all tended to preclude the possibility of a brigade of artillery operating as a unit.

During the first half of October, the campaign along the railway went badly. The Russian and Polish artillery in that region was neither efficient nor reliable. With a view to strengthening the position a party of three Canadian officers and twenty-six men were detailed from Colonel Sharman's command to take over the armoured train on the railway. This train had been captured intact by the British a few weeks previously and was equipped with field-guns and 155-m.m. howitzers. The work of the Canadians in that exploit called forth high commendation from the Commander-in-Chief, and although no further advance was made along the railway the gains already made were not again seriously questioned.

About the same period another action was carried through between the Dvina river and the railway. Its purpose was to outflank the Bolshevik troops along the railway and to establish a line between it and the river, which might be requisitioned for the transport of supplies after the river had been frozen over. The operation was in charge of Lieut.-Colonel Gavin, formerly an officer of the 4th Canadian Division, and the artillery work for the engagement was carried out by two sections of the 68th Canadian Field Battery.

Meanwhile the remainder of the Canadian artillery proceeded up the Dvina and reached Beresnik, near the mouth of the Vaga river, on the 10th of October. At that time the Bolsheviki were carrying on a determined attack on the Dvina column about forty miles farther up-stream. They had brought together a formidable fleet of river steamers, barges, and rafts, upon which they had mounted several field-guns, 130-m.m. guns, and 6-inch howitzers. To meet this array of water craft the Allies had one monitor, which was still at the confluence of the Dvina and Vaga. At an informal council of war at which the force commander, Lieut.-Colonel Jocelyn, the naval officer in charge of the monitor, and Colonel Sharman were present, it was decided to send the 67th Canadian Battery up the Dvina to the support of what was known as the River column. The section of the 68th Battery still not in action was to proceed up the Vaga to the Vaga column — the two columns comprising the "Dvina force." Men were at once despatched to Tulgas, a few miles up-stream and about ten miles from the front line, to purchase horses to haul the guns. The peasants, although only recently set free from the Bolsheviki, were unwilling to sell their horses, but after much persuasion some twenty-eight ponies were secured at an average price of eight hundred roubles, the equivalent of about seventy-five dollars at that time. Meanwhile the barges with the guns of the 67th Battery proceeded to Gunner's Bridge, a point two miles south of Tulgas, and the scene of several local struggles during the following months. There, all final arrangements were completed for landing, and on the night of October 13th one barge was moved up to Selzo, where the battery was unloaded and placed under cover, as, in daylight, the Bolsheviki had complete observation from the opposite bank. Rifles had been issued to every artilleryman and Lewis machine guns to each of the batteries. This provision, so contrary to artillery regulations early in the war, made it possible to save the field-guns from capture on more than one occasion, and enabled the gunners to give invaluable assistance to the infantry where the latter were hard pressed.

For several days previous the infantry defences had been subjected to such heavy shelling from the long-range guns of the Bolsheviki that the column commander decided to retire at once and issued orders for the field artillery just disembarked to be moved back to Tulgas that evening. The withdrawal of the River column, consisting of British and Americans, though necessary, was carried out with too great haste, which resulted in the loss of considerable quantities of supplies, and the column commander was relieved of his position shortly after. Allied infantry held the village of Kurgomen, directly across the Dvina from Tulgas, and also the village of Topsa, situated on a cliff about eight thousand yards from the river. This latter position afforded an excellent view of the Dvina valley for several miles, but it had to be abandoned for lack of a sufficient number of troops. Guns were ferried across the river to support the infantry in the village of Kurgomen.

On the 18th of October the 68th Battery, which had been delayed because of lack of transport, was able to proceed up the Vaga river to Shenkursk, a journey that occupied three days. This town was the only one that the Canadians assisted in garrisoning in Northern Russia, where the citizens had taken the initiative in driving out the Bolsheviki. A series of blockhouses was in course of erection about the town when the Canadians arrived and good fields of fire laid out. Two Russian batteries were assisting to defend the place, but their discipline was quite demoralized and their guns and stores were in a hopeless condition, for the Russian gunner possessed a perfect genius for losing equipment. Both batteries were taken downstream to Beresnik, where an artillery school was established for their benefit.

During the succeeding three weeks every effort was devoted to getting ready for the winter campaign. Trenches were dug, wire entanglements put out, and work on log blockhouses pushed forward as quickly as possible. In order to create some measure of efficiency in the Russian batteries, Canadian officers were given administrative control of them until, later on, British liaison officers assumed this duty. Canadian fitters kept all the guns in repair, — Russian as well as Canadian, — and in the same manner Canadian shoeing-smiths shod all the horses. This plan was rather hard on the Canadian personnel, but it was the means of keeping several guns in action during the winter, that otherwise would have been quite useless.

In the meantime the enemy artillery had been very active against the River column. Their gunboats had succeeded in sinking the scow with the only 130-m.m. gun possessed by the column. The six Canadian field-guns were now the only artillery supporting the infantry at Tulgas and Kurgomen. On Armistice day, the Bolsheviki staged a heavy attack on the two villages. Infantry advanced along both banks of the river and their artillery and gunboat fire swept both villages. Suddenly from out of the woods on the Tulgas bank and only a few hundred yards from the village, a party of some five hundred Bolsheviki rushed the rear portion of the village, which was occupied by the hospital. No resistance was offered and they advanced to the artillery billets. The gunners were, of course, busy in repelling the frontal attack and were still unaware of the danger in their rear. But a veterinary sergeant and twenty-three drivers quickly formed a line of defence. Although hopelessly outnumbered, they poured a heavy rifle fire into the ranks of the Bolsheviki. The latter wavered long enough to make it possible to warn the Canadian gunners of their danger. The drivers then fell back to the guns. For nine hours the fight continued. Machine guns, rifles, and even bombs were requisitioned. The frontal attack kept the field-guns busy most of the day and the machine-gun fire prevented the gunners from turning their guns. Finally, at dusk, two guns were turned and gun fire at shrapnel zero was poured into the Bolshevik ranks. In addition, high-explosive shells were dropped into the billets which the enemy had seized in the morning. That completed the overthrow of the attacking force. About twenty prisoners were taken and nearly two hundred Bolsheviki wounded were treated in the hospital. Many other wounded perished in the woods in an effort to escape. It was learned by later reports that very few of the attacking force ever rejoined their own ranks. The policy of issuing small arms to the artillery and training the men in their use was thus clearly vindicated.

For a few days the enemy artillery continued to pound the Tulgas position. Winter was unusually late in setting in and their gunboats and barges, bearing guns having a range of 8,500 yards or more, came into full view and poured 1,000 to 1,200 shells into the village every day. The Canadians' field-guns, with a range of only 6,000 yards, could only retaliate by shelling the enemy infantry. By means of skilful rapid fire, too, an effort was made to puzzle the enemy as to the number of guns in action. This ruse was successful. A few days later a Bolshevik officer deserter came into the Allies' lines. On being questioned, he referred to the six field-guns which the Canadians had on the Tulgas side of the river. There were in reality but two.

News of the Armistice in France had tended to lower the fighting spirit of the Allied troops in Russia. But this determined activity of the Bolsheviki aroused the men and did much for Allied *moral.*

With the coming of winter the enemy's gunboats retired well within their own lines. All thought of forcing the enemy farther back had to be abandoned. The lines of communication were already dangerously long and further reinforcements were refused by the War Office. In addition, the British troops on the Dvina, although of high *moral,* were in a low category physically, for they had all been casualties in France. Throughout the winter, however, there was but little activity on the River column front. There were occasional minor bombardments, but the Allies maintained a moral superiority which was much enhanced when a section of British 4.5 howitzers reached the River front in January. The shells used by these guns were fitted with very sensitive fuses and detonated with exceptional violence. Consequently, the Bolsheviki soon learned to have a very wholesome respect for them.

Although there were no important engagements on this front, the critical situation on the Vaga front, farther to the west, during the winter made it imperative to carry out detailed reconnaissance work back of the lines. Positions were selected to which the several units might retire, in case either a forced or a voluntary retreat became necessary. Ammunition was carefully distributed at such positions, so that in case of a hasty or prolonged retirement a minimum would be lost. Such comprehensive reconnaissance work demonstrated that the Russian military maps were hopelessly inaccurate and incomplete. To remedy this, maps were prepared in the field. In spite of a lack of proper facilities for such work, these maps were drawn to scale and showed very many important details that were not indicated on the Russian maps.

The gun emplacements used during the winter were substantially constructed of logs. They were kept as nearly as possible at a temperature of 50 degrees F., in order to avoid the effects that wide variations of temperature would have on the ammunition. The occasional need for firing the guns in any direction was provided for by constructing wooden tracks from the gun-pits to open ground several yards in front, so that the guns could be run out quickly and their fire directed at targets on any point of the compass.

During the winter the Canadians brought three 60-pounder howitzers from Archangel to the position occupied by the River column at Kurgomen and to the Vaga column at Mal Beresnik. It was a task that seemed well-nigh impossible under the conditions that prevailed in Northern Russia. British and Allied officers were frankly sceptical, but at the same time it was agreed that the experience during the autumn proved the assistance of long-range guns to be an absolute necessity in the spring. Without them, the Allied forces would be at the mercy of the big guns that the Bolsheviki had mounted on their gunboats and scows, for the breaking up of the ice in the upper portions of the rivers would enable them to get into action several days sooner than the British monitors farther down-stream. Early in the winter, therefore, Captain Gillis and a farrier sergeant, both of the 67th Canadian Battery, were sent to Archangel to make an attempt to bring the 60-pounders up the river. These guns had reached Archangel in the autumn, but no attempt had been made to send them up-stream while the river was open, as the ammunition for them had been lost at sea. The guns were dismantled and divided into loads of about two tons each. Special sleighs were constructed, and after much hard labour two of the guns were safely transported to the River column and mounted at Kurgomen, and a third at Mal Beresnik, with the Vaga column. The transportation of the ammunition was an even more nerve-trying problem. It did not leave England until March 1st and it required the aid of four ice-breakers to bring the ammunition ship through the White Sea. However, excellent transport was arranged by General Headquarters, and in nine days from the time the boat reached Archangel, 2,500 rounds were at the guns, three hundred miles up-stream.

If the River column was comparatively free from attack during the winter, the Vaga column was scarcely so fortunate. At the end of October this force was supported by one section of the 68th Battery, Canadian Field Artillery, some fixed defence guns manned by Canadians, and a section of a Russian field battery. The fighting front was about seventy miles south of the confluence of the Vaga and Dvina in the vicinity of the small town of Shenkursk. As on the River front, the defences were stoutly built, log blockhouses with wire entanglements surrounding both the infantry and artillery positions. This latter precaution was rendered necessary because the infantry force was too small to attempt any defence of the guns in positions where attacks might break from the forest on any quarter at any time. Owing to successive retreats during the winter, it was impossible for the artillery with the Vaga column to keep its ammunition at a uniform temperature, as was done in the excellent blockhouses built by the River column. This caused the cordite to deteriorate, so that it lacked uniformity and reliability. Early in the winter an attack was planned on a Bolshevik stronghold about fifty miles east of Shenkursk. The little expedition was in charge of Captain Mowat, of the 68th Battery, whose force consisted of small parties of Cossacks and American and Russian infantry with one 18-pounder field-gun in support. The plan was to advance on the stronghold simultaneously from three sides, the Cossacks to attack the front and the Americans and Russians the respective flanks. Each of the parties was to notify Captain Mowat in writing when they were ready to proceed. The firing of the field-gun was to be the signal to attack. The Russian infantry carried out its task, but the Cossacks were much less steady, although they succeeded in advancing to the outskirts of the little town. The Americans did not advance. Instead, they made their way to the rendezvous three miles in the rear and from there were reported to Captain Mowat as ready to return to Shenkursk. Captain Mowat was thus forced to withdraw all his little force without having captured the stronghold.

The succeeding month was quiet — ominously quiet, for it preceded a better organized and more vigorous series of attacks than had been made by the Bolsheviki up to that time. As a result, the Allies of the Vaga column were forced back over sixty miles, to within a short distance of the junction of the Vaga and Dvina rivers. The enemy was completely successful in concealing his plans. The Allies' Intelligence Service was in ignorance of all the preliminary movement of troops, guns, and ammunition that must have been necessary, a circumstance that indicated the difficulties of fighting in a semi-hostile country. The first attack opened on the 18th of January. Heavy bombardments preceded each of the infantry thrusts, for the Bolsheviki had concentrated a large number of guns with abundant ammunition. The troops holding the outposts a few miles south of Shenkursk were steadily driven in by weight of numbers. Another field-gun, under Captain Mowat, was moved forward to strengthen these troops, but the gun was put out of action by shell fire and the whole crew either killed or wounded. Captain Mowat, who was among the wounded, died a few days later. Shenkursk had to be abandoned after being badly wrecked by shell fire, for the Bolsheviki were surrounding the town with an overwhelming number of infantry and almost succeeded in capturing the entire Allied force at that point. One complete company of Russians deserted in a body during the progress of the attack. The Russian aviators did excellent service. In spite of heavy casualties and weather about forty degrees below zero, they flew low over the enemy troops, pouring machine-gun fire into their ranks as well as bringing back very valuable information.

The column fell back some twenty-five miles to Shegovari, whither quantities of blankets, food, and other supplies were rushed from points further down the river. As Colonel Sharman was temporarily in command of the column during the absence of the commander at that time, he was prevented by the urgency of events from visiting his own brigade headquarters at Piander, a few miles below the junction of the Dvina and Vaga rivers, for several days. The Canadians there, acting on their own initiative, therefore organized a refugee relief station, which performed a fine service in assisting the starving and freezing inhabitants who had been forced from their homes by the enemy.

For some weeks the enemy did not press their advantage other than to bombard the Allied positions at intervals. This lull made it possible to strengthen defences and to generally re-align the troops and the officers for the next attack. One of the British 4.5 howitzers was moved from the River to the Vaga column during this period.

Late in February the Bolsheviki again launched an attack, preceded by a heavy and remarkably accurate artillery fire. The entire force at Vistafka was surrounded and the Canadian gunners resorted to rifles and machine guns to defend their positions. The enemy were finally forced back in the rear and communication was re-established. But they were successful in driving in the frontal defences. An emergency section of mountain guns manned by Canadian and Russian gunners had to be abandoned on the position being evacuated by command of the British officer in charge. Vistafka was evacuated and a position taken up farther to the rear. Fighting continued at intervals during which the new position was destroyed by shell fire and a further retirement of about ten miles was made necessary. This proved to be the last important attack during the winter. It was learned some weeks later that the enemy losses had been so serious that their troops refused to continue on the offensive. It had been anticipated that as soon as the ice moved in the upper river in the spring the enemy would bring their water craft into action in an attempt to force a decision before the Allies' gunboats and monitors could ascend the river. Consequently everything possible had been done to prepare for a defensive fight during that period. However, on the night that the ice went out of the Dvina, the infantry at Tulgas, which was exclusively Russian, killed many of their officers and handed the town over to the enemy. The Russian artillery at Tulgas remained loyal and even turned their guns on the mutinous infantry that deserted to the enemy ranks. Help could not be brought across the river because of the moving ice, but a covering artillery fire from the opposite bank enabled the Russian artillery to withdraw seven miles to Shushega, where they were under the protection of the artillery at Pless and also where they could receive infantry support. However, the enemy held Tulgas, from which they had easy observation of the Allies' position in Kurgomen. Their artillery observers took every advantage of this and their guns poured a heavy fire into the Kurgomen defences. Fortunately, the Canadian gun positions were exceptionally strong and were able to withstand the bombardment remarkably well. The 60-pounder howitzers received much attention from the 130-m.m. guns of the enemy fleet, but by almost continuous firing they were able to keep the water craft of the Bolsheviki from closing to decisive range. Major Arnoldi's brilliant handling of the guns at his disposal kept the casualties reduced to a minimum. With the arrival of the British monitors and gunboats the situation cleared materially, but it was evident to the officers on the ground that Tulgas should be captured. Strict orders had been issued to the force commander not to undertake any offensive until July, when it was intended to carry out a heavy attack. To avoid clashing with these orders, it was resolved that the task of seizing Tulgas should be attempted under the guise of "Artillery Instruction." Colonel Sharman was given command of both the land forces and the British naval units operating on the Dvina above the Vaga. The whole plan of attack was carefully studied and rehearsed in part, so that it was perfectly clear to each of the officers in charge. Heavy bombardments were to precede each advance of the infantry and the monitors were to keep the enemy fleet at a distance. Unfortunately, the naval guns used by the Bolsheviki outranged those of the British, as the deck fittings of the latter prevented them from getting sufficient elevation for their guns. Moreover the British naval gunners were not well trained in indirect ranging. However, the latter difficulty was mastered by giving the naval gunners artillery practice and the range of the monitors was increased by flooding the starboard side, which of course gave the guns added elevation. With these changes the tables were turned and the enemy fleet was forced to retire. The artillery poured a most searching fire into the enemy position as planned and the Tulgas villages were reoccupied by the infantry without a single casualty. This remarkable demonstration changed the whole attitude of the enemy on the Dvina river front. Their aggressive attitude of a week before disappeared and an unusually large number of deserters found their way into the Allied lines. The position was thus firmly held when the Canadians were relieved toward the end of May.

Not to be outdone by the River column, the Vaga column decided to carry out an attack on the enemy in front of Mal Beresnik. In the raid that resulted, they captured two officers and seventy-nine other ranks, without suffering any casualties themselves.

During the long winter the little party of Canadians with the Murmansk forces had led an active life. They were under the command of Colonel Leckie, who had charge of the greater portion of the forward area that centred on Onega bay. They did not encounter the exhausting forced marches, the heavy manual labour, the fierce battles with the enemy, generally against heavy odds, such as confronted their fellow Canadians who were with the Dvina and Vaga forces. But they performed valuable service as instructors, as supervisors of supply convoys, and as moving spirits in numerous minor raids on the enemy. By the end of April, 1919, the troops on the Murmansk front were disgruntled and dissatisfied. Certain of the Allied troops claimed that they had not been sent to Russia to fight, but to carry on propaganda amongst the Russians. This they attempted to do, their officers actually exchanging literature with the officers of the Bolsheviki forces when in the fighting line. Naturally such conduct lowered the *moral* of the whole force. The Canadians had opportunities for combatting this evil, for they supplied ''stiffening'' for many local encounters, and the Russians who were with the Allied forces asserted that they felt more confident when the Canadians were present. They were the last of the Canadians to leave Russia, spending the greater portion of the summer in the region about lake Onega.

The Canadians of the River and Vaga columns were relieved by British troops early in June and on the afternoon of the 7th they embarked on scows at a village near the mouth of the Vaga, for the voyage down-stream to Archangel, where they arrived the evening of the following day. Before embarking on the S.S. *Czaritza* for England, General Ironside expressed to the Canadian artillery his deep appreciation of the services of the Canadians, and on the occasion of a small dinner for some of the officers, the Base Commandant, General Crosby, stated: ''We shall probably never meet again; but never forget that we know your boys saved the situation for us time and again and shall always remember the Canadian Field Artillery and be grateful to them.''

Colonel Sharman received the C.M.G. and Major Arnoldi a bar to his D.S.O. Seven officers received the M.C. and over fifty other British decorations were given to members of other ranks.

The Governor-General of North Russia, before bidding an official farewell to the brigade, presented every officer, who had not already received one, with a Russian military decoration. In addition, he paid the Canadians an even more unique compliment by presenting ten St. George Crosses (the Russian equivalent to the Victoria Cross) and ten St. George Medals to the twenty bravest men in the brigade. No other soldier of the Allies had up to that time been given a St. George Cross or Medal for services in

Northern Russia. With a nice sense of the honour thus done the Canadians, the Russian custom of selecting the men who should receive the coveted decorations was followed, that is, the men themselves were allowed to select the twenty bravest among them. In all, forty-eight Russian decorations were bestowed upon the members of the Canadian Field Artillery.

Seven months to the day after Germany signed the Armistice with the Allies, the 16th Canadian Artillery Brigade and their gallant comrades in the lonely epic struggles in the forests of Northern Russia, the Royal Scots, sailed from Archangel for Scotland, arriving at Leith on the 19th of June, 1919.

Another development of the Russian situation was the Allied decision to send a force to Siberia in the autumn of 1918. The primary reason for this move was the relief of some four thousand Czecho-Slovaks who had worked their way across Siberia as far as lake Baikal. There they were surrounded by Bolshevik forces and prevented from proceeding to Vladivostok, where they had planned to embark for the Western front. Had the war continued into 1919, it is conceivable that a strong Allied force in Siberia would have been of considerable military value.

The expedition was comprised of units from all the Allied nations, but the Canadians constituted nearly three-fourths of the British quota. The Canadians totalled 4,188 of all ranks and were under the command of Brigadier-General J. H. Elmsley, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O. Practically every arm of the Service was represented, but two battalions of infantry made up more than half of the force. The first convoy left Canada on the 11th of October, 1918, just one month before the signing of the Armistice, and the last on the 27th of March, 1919.

The relief of the Czecho-Slovaks was accomplished before the Canadians reached Vladivostok. Moreover, the signing of the Armistice cancelled any further military reasons for the presence of Allied troops in Russian territory. Nevertheless, some 3,500 of the Canadians were despatched after the 11th of November, 1918.

The only casualties suffered by the Canadian Expeditionary Force to Siberia were three accidentally killed and sixteen deaths from disease. The force, with the exception of a few stragglers, was returned to Canada between the 9th of April and the end of June, 1919.

CHAPTER VII

DEMOBILIZATION

WHEN the Armistice was signed there were overseas 277,439 Canadian troops. Approximately two-thirds of these were in France and Belgium and the remainder in England. The decision to demobilize was reached within two days after hostilities ceased, and the British Ministry of Shipping at that time communicated to the Ministry of the Canadian Overseas Forces an offer to provide ships for the return of troops to Canada at once. The first large party of Canadian troops to return left the United Kingdom on the 23rd of November, when the *Aquitania* brought thirty-nine hundred soldiers and fifty-one dependents to Halifax. Five days earlier the instructions for the demobilization of the forces in Canada had been published in orders.

Demobilization was begun quickly and carried through with creditable speed. It was thought in advance that the process would take at least eighteen months, while as a matter of fact nine-tenths of the troops were back within half that period. Preparations for the process were not, however, made in a night. As early as December, 1916, the Deputy Minister of Militia and Defence, Major-General Sir Eugene Fiset, proposed the appointment of a general officer in charge of repatriation, whose duties were to include "all that pertains to demobilization." This recommendation was not put into effect at the time, but consultations then begun led directly to the drawing up of the plans for the dispersal of the Canadian Expeditionary Force.

The consultations and discussions which followed were conducted in part at Ottawa, in part with the officers of the Ministry of the Overseas Military Forces of Canada, and in part with the Imperial authorities. The first-fruit of these discussions was the adoption of an Order-in-Council which laid the basis of the system that was put into operation immediately following the Armistice. The main principle then decided was that each soldier should be allowed to choose his destination in Canada on his return. This involved the reorganization of the C. E. F. units according to the destination of their members and the division of the Dominion into dispersal areas, each with its dispersal centre, at which the soldiers for destinations within that area could be discharged. In selecting these dispersal areas, the Military Districts were retained as a basis, though it was found necessary to divide them for convenience in dispersal. Some of the Military Districts were given two or three dispersal centres, while others were limited to a single centre. In all there were twenty-two dispersal centres, stretching from Halifax to Victoria.

This Order-in-Council also laid down the principle that men with the longest service should come home first; but this principle was modified in several ways. It was modified as a result of the decision to bring the troops of the Canadian Corps home in the units in which they had fought. It was modified by a priority given to married men and to widowers with children. The duration of the war from August 4th, 1914, to the end of 1918 was divided into seventeen periods, and two groups of soldiers were assigned to each period. The first seventeen groups were composed of married men and of widowers with children; and the last seventeen of single men and of widowers without children. Those with dependents were given the first opportunity to come home, but as among married men or as among single men, the man with longest service came home first.

Plans were made, in Canada as in England, to bring home the troops in accordance with the need for them in industrial or agricultural life. In both instances it was found impracticable to adhere to these plans, though they were probably followed to a greater extent in the United Kingdom than with us. As far as Canada is concerned, it may be safely added that little was lost by surrendering them, although on economic grounds discharge by occupations would appear to be desirable. The object of occupational discharge was, of course, to prevent a glut of the labour market; and this Canada did not suffer from during the year of demobilization. What saved us from such a catastrophe was probably that the troops came home, the ''peak load'' at least, in summer, when the demand for labour is at its greatest; and this saving influence was powerfully supported by the grant of a War Savings Gratuity and by the assistance given to returned men by the Department of Soldiers' Civil Re-establishment, the Soldier Settlement Board, and the Board of Pension Commissioners.

The decision to set aside the plans for discharge by occupations was brought about by representations on the part of Sir Arthur Currie of the desire of the Canadian Corps to come home in the units in which they had fought. Such a desire is natural enough to troops at all times, and it was greatly intensified by the victories of the last One Hundred Days. It was estimated at the time that the units of the corps would number about one hundred thousand men; but as it turned out they did not number much over sixty thousand. The strength of the divisions and of the other units of the corps, as they came home, is as follows:—

Canadian Official Photograph

GENERAL SIR ARTHUR CURRIE WITH H.R.H. PRINCE ARTHUR OF CONNAUGHT AND DIVISIONAL AND BRIGADIER GENERALS

	OFFICERS	OTHER RANKS
First Division	538	11,671
Second Division	669	12,861
Third Division	452	9,427
Fourth Division	606	13,128
Corps troops and Line of Communication units	214	4,444
Heavy and Siege Artillery	111	2,470
Cavalry Brigade	77	1,162
Total	2,667	55,163

These figures give a total of 57,830. In addition there is an allowance to be made for certain units for which the records are not at present available; but even with these included the figure is not likely to go much over sixty thousand.

The divisions were not brought home in the exact order in which they were raised, although an effort was made to follow this plan as far as possible. At the time the decision was reached to bring the corps home by units, the 1st and 2nd Divisions were on their way to the Rhine, where they occupied half the bridge-head held by the British Empire. The choice then lay between the 3rd and 4th, and, as Sir Arthur Currie explained in a letter read to the House of Commons, the 3rd had been first organized and therefore he selected it. It may be remarked in addition that included in the 3rd Division were the "Princess Pats," the first Canadian battalion to come under fire in France. The 3rd Division came home in March, the first party of troops belonging to it embarking on March 1st. It was followed by the 1st Division, which began to embark for Canada on March 27th. The 2nd Division sailed for home on May 1st, and the 4th began embarkation in the last week of the same month.

The Canadian Corps, some sixty thousand strong, came home in their fighting units and in their fighting kit, and the remaining three-quarters of the Canadian Expeditionary Force in dispersal drafts. For both much the same procedure had to be gone through and the same records taken. When the demobilization order was issued, the troops were scattered in various base camps in England and in France from Boulogne to the front, with some units in the Vosges and others near Bordeaux. All troops were concentrated in the Canadian camps in England to be prepared for homecoming, and organized according to dispersal areas. This applied to corps units as to all other troops. Members of a corps unit who chose a destination other than within the dispersal area to which the unit was proceeding, did not go forward with the unit unless their destination was west of the centre at which the unit was to be dispersed. A member of a corps unit who chose to go home in a dispersal draft was quite at liberty to do so. The same liberty of choice was given to every soldier. He picked out his destination in Canada or the United States and he was provided with transportation to that point. The result was that units and reinforcements alike were subject to reconstruction according to the destinations chosen by the men. For the troops in France (152,264), units and reinforcements, this reconstruction was made in France, and they arrived in England arranged according to dispersal areas. For the troops in England (123,024), it was done at the base camp of the unit, which in turn became the concentration camp.

Of the Canadian troops in France at the time of the Armistice, the 3rd Division was at Mons, having entered that famous town on the morning of the signing of the terms of truce, and the other divisions and reinforcements were behind upon the lines of communication. Demobilization did not at first affect the corps itself, but certain non-fighting categories. Documents for men of "B" category were almost immediately ordered from the Canadian Record Office in London, and on the fourth of December a record office was opened at Etaples for the purpose of demobilization.

Five days later the General Officer Commanding of the Canadian Section at the General Headquarters was given instructions for the repatriation to England of the troops on the lines of communication, with directions to co-operate in the demobilization of the troops composing the corps. On December 20th a concentration camp was authorized for the Canadian troops in France, and shortly afterwards a record office was opened at Havre, from which port Canadian troops embarked for the British Isles. Here early in January an embarkation camp was established, through which passed the great bulk of the Canadian forces in France. By the end of December, 1918, ten thousand Canadian troops, consisting of "B" category men, casuals and ambulance cases, had been sent to the concentration camps in England.

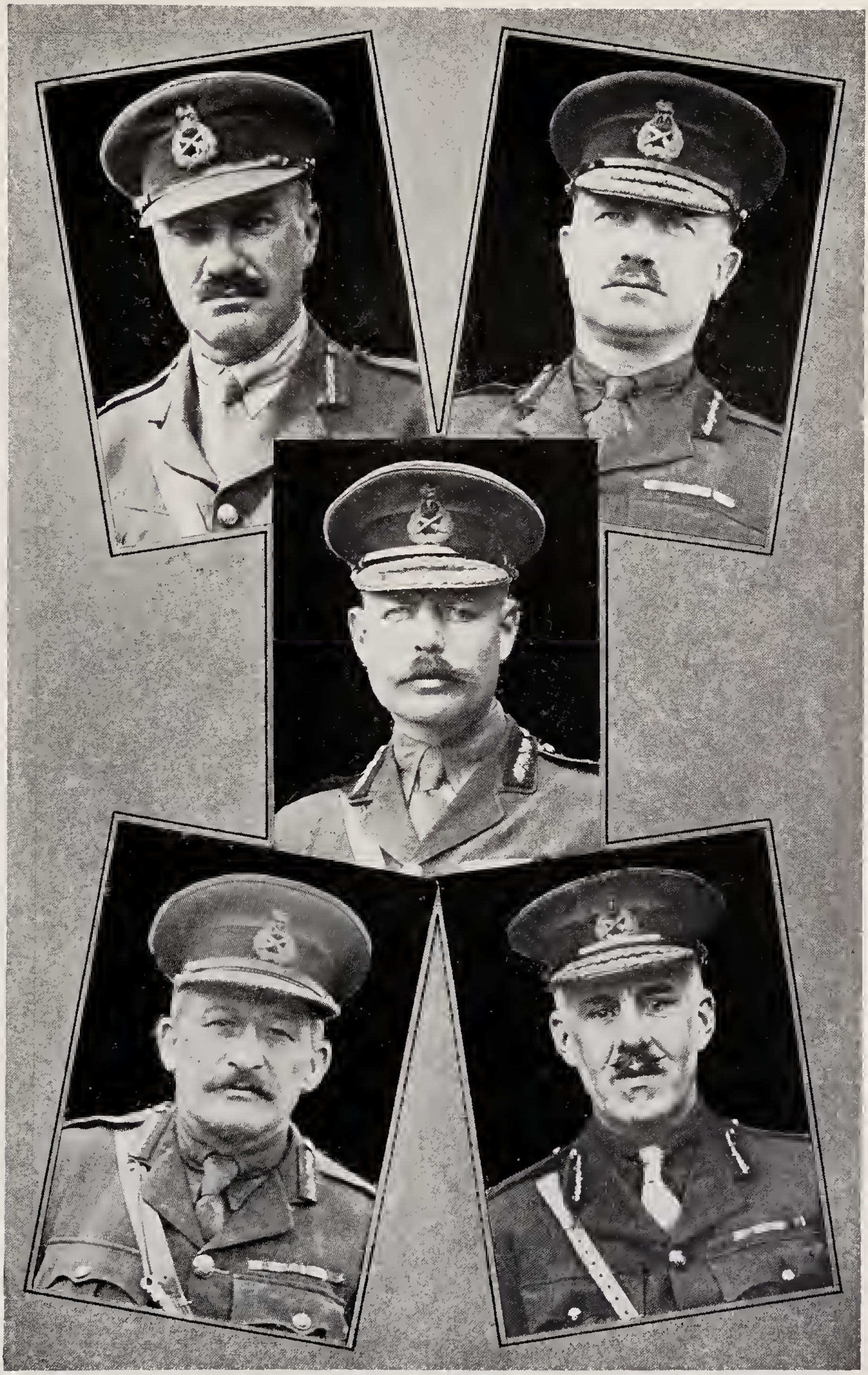
The Canadian concentration camp in France in fact never came into actual operation, its place being taken by the embarkation camp at Havre. The reason for this alteration in plans was the decision that the corps should return to Canada in the units in which they had fought and that they should be given the right to visit the British Isles before sailing for home. The concentration camp was, however, partially organized at Aubin St. Vaast, which was the site of the Canadian Corps Reinforcement Camp, the intention being that this camp, which had fed reinforcements to the front line, should receive the troops of the four divisions back from the front and send them on their way to Canada. During January it was decided to move the camp to England, where it was set up in the Bramshott and Witley areas in time to receive the 3rd Division on its arrival in February.

On February 2nd the "Princess Pats" and the Royal Canadians, the vanguard of the 3rd Division, began to arrive at the embarkation camp at Havre. The decision to demobilize the 3rd Division first of the corps was reached in December;

but its transport was delayed by congestion on the railways owing to the necessity of conveying food and clothing to the Army of Occupation, and in the meantime repatriation of the forestry and railway troops was begun. The forestry troops began to arrive at Havre on the first of January; and the movement of these and of the railway troops continued all this month and the next, being practically concluded by the end of February. In the interval the 3rd Division had been concentrated in the Lille-Tournai area, where they had been documented and prepared for demobilization.

The demobilization of the 3rd Division was carried out by units without regrouping according to dispersal area. The other three divisions were rearranged in France on the dispersal area basis. The corps troops, that is, arms attached to the corps generally, the Fifth Divisional Artillery, and the Canadian Cavalry Brigade, were handled under the same system as the 3rd Division. In all instances, the unit formation was retained; but in the case of the 1st, 2nd, and 4th Divisions there was a reallotment of troops among the units in accordance with the dispersal area to which each soldier was returning. The reallotment and documentation, as far as was practicable, were performed in the concentration area of the unit, and from this point it proceeded by train to the embarkation camp at Havre. The 3rd Division passed through Havre in the month of February, and the 4th, the last to leave, in the early part of May. In the intervals between the movement of the divisions were handled the corps troops, who sailed for England in ''flights'' at the rate of approximately a thousand a day.

Apart from the main operation of despatching the four divisions and the corps troops to England, a number of difficult problems of detail had to be worked out by the officer of the Adjutant-General's



BRIG.-GEN. F. W. HILL, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.   BRIG.-GEN. J. M. ROSS, C.M.G., D.S.O.
MAJ.-GEN. H. D. B. KETCHEN, C.B., C.M.G.
BRIG.-GEN. D. C. DRAPER, C.M.G., D.S.O.   BRIG.-GEN. H. A. PANET, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.

CANADIAN GENERALS

branch in charge of what are known as ''personal services.'' One of these was the recall of Canadian officers and other ranks who were seconded or attached to the Imperial forces. These were called back to the Canadian forces as soon as the exigencies of the Army of Occupation would allow; and came back to Canada in dispersal drafts in the same manner as the members of the C.E.F. In addition to these there were a considerable body of Canadians who had accepted commissions or had enlisted in the British army. These were repatriated to Canada, not by the Canadian, but by the Imperial Government; but they returned to the Dominion on the Canadian troopships. Some of the Canadian soldiers had been joined in France by their families; others were given permission to marry in France or Belgium. These dependents were brought to their new home in Canada by the Canadian authorities; and between the 15th of March and the 10th of June two hundred and sixty-two families of other ranks were collected by ''personal services'' and sailed from Havre for Buxton in England, whence they were returned to Canada in company with the dependents of Canadian soldiers in the United Kingdom.

In order to release all personnel of the Canadian Expeditionary Force in France it was necessary to provide for the care of Canadian equipment. For this purpose an arrangement was made with the British army, which took over all ordnance equipment, including mechanical transport. The horse transport of the Canadian forces was disposed of to the Belgian Government. The Belgian Government made use of some of the horses for its cavalry, but the larger part were in turn sold to farmers and others who required horses throughout the country. A large number of animals belonging to the British army were likewise sold in Belgium.

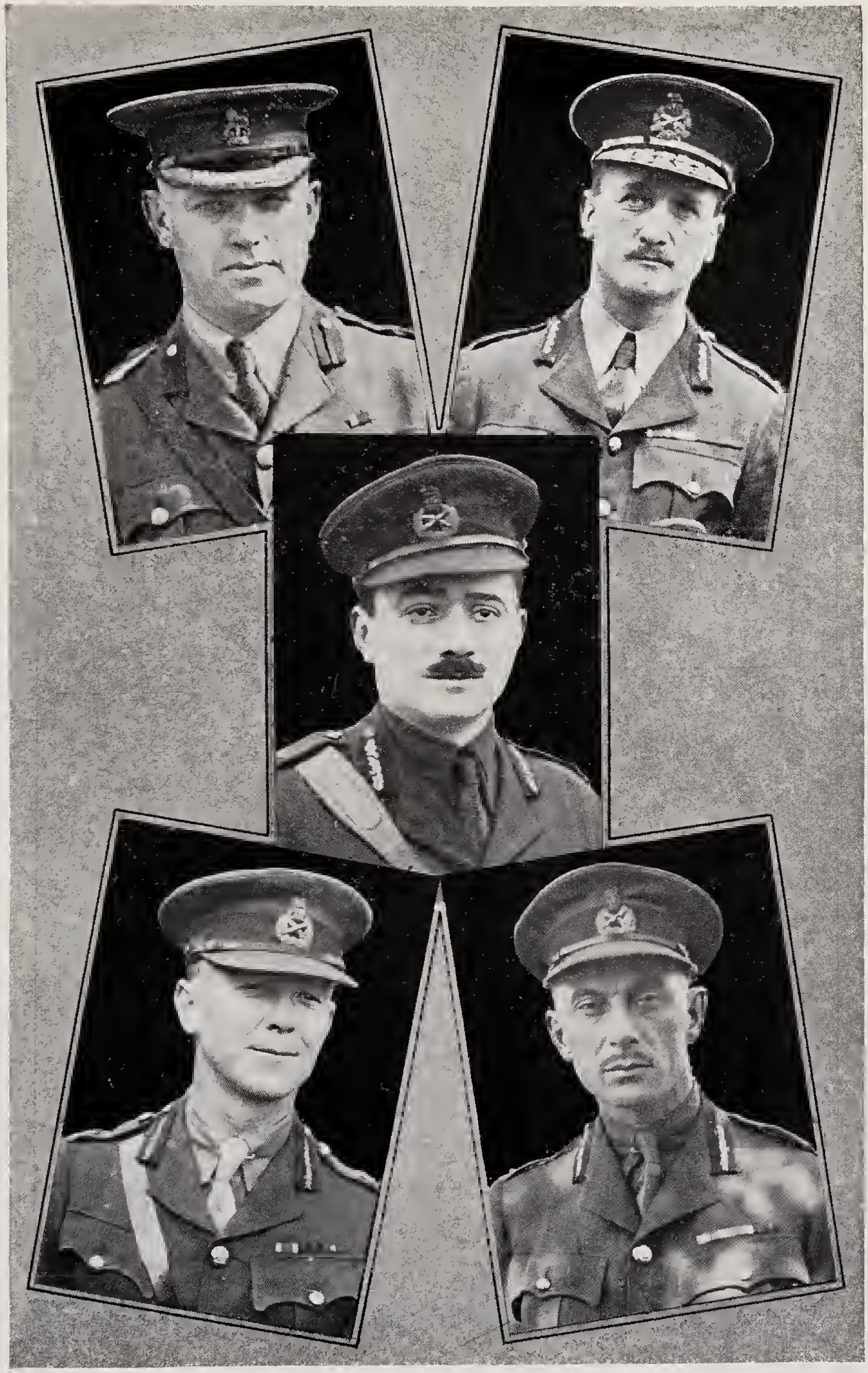
At the embarkation camp at Havre, through which nearly all the Canadian troops moved to England, special efforts were made for the comfort and entertainment of the men. Games, amusements, and physical training were organized, and there was accommodation which enabled all the men in the camp to be under cover at one time without being confined to their sleeping quarters. "Great satisfaction," says an official report on the subject, "was obtained from an airship hangar which was kindly lent to us by the French Admiralty and in which it was possible to carry on all kinds of games and physical exercise which the winter weather and lack of suitable grounds would otherwise have rendered either unpleasant or impossible. . . . The work done by various voluntary organizations, the Canadian Y.M.C.A., the Catholic Army Huts, and the Salvation Army, was also of the highest value in keeping the transient personnel contented and comfortable during their stay at Havre." Troops embarked at Havre and, after a ten-hour voyage, disembarked at Weymouth, whence they were transported by train to the Canadian concentration camps in England.

These Canadian concentration camps in England occupied a vital place in the demobilization machinery. If the work of the C.C.C., as they were called in official documents, was well done, it went a long way to ensuring a speedy and comfortable discharge; and if not, there was sure to be trouble and delay. There were in all in England nine concentration camps, but all were not in operation throughout the whole period of demobilization. The four divisions of the corps were concentrated at Bramshott and Witley. The corps artillery came to Witley; the corps engineers went to Seaford; the cavalry and cyclists to Ripon; and the medical corps to Shorncliffe. At Purfleet gathered the railway battalions; and the forestry at Sunningdale. Buxton was a special concentration camp for soldiers who had dependents. Kirkdale was the centre at which the Medical Services prepared convalescents for embarkation. Kinmel Park was a ''staging camp'' for troops, in both France and England, who were not attached to the corps and who came there to await shipping accommodation.

The concentration camps were divided into ''wings,'' twenty-two in number, corresponding to the twenty-two dispersal areas into which the Dominion was divided. On arrival at the concentration camp the troops were sent to the ''wing'' which prepared drafts for the dispersal area to which they were proceeding. On his first day at the camp the soldier filled out his application for war service gratuity, a document which called for answers to twenty questions, some of them involving a good deal of detail, which had to be sworn to before a commissioner for the administration of oaths. On his second day he registered his name for the purpose of having his documents completed, a process which involved the compilation of the man's history since he joined the army; and on the same day he paraded before the medical officer of his unit or draft as a preliminary for being passed upon by a medical board on the day following. On the fourth day he had a dental board, was issued with any clothing or equipment which he needed, and was given an issue of pay for his furlough. On the fifth day he proceeded on two weeks' leave, at the end of which he reported and was posted to the shipping company to await a sailing. As soon as a sailing was assured, each soldier was given an embarkation card which entitled him to a berth on shipboard.

The medical board, before which each officer and other rank appeared at the concentration camp, sat for the purpose of establishing his physical condition at the time of discharge. On this depended his claim for pension or for assistance on the part of the Department of Soldiers' Civil Re-establishment. These boards were conducted with an effort to combine thoroughness in examination (according to insurance standards) with rapidity in operation. The preliminary examination which every soldier underwent at the hands of the M.O. of his unit was instituted with the object of saving the time of the medical boards. If the unit M.O. found that the soldier was in good condition and had suffered no disability during the war, he was given what was called a ''short board.'' This meant that a short form of medical history sheet was filled out for him; and it implied that he was not eligible for a pension. If he was found to be suffering from a disability or if his health was in any manner affected, he was put through a detailed examination and given what was called a ''long board,'' a sheet being filled out which gave full information as to his medical history and his condition at the time of the examination. Where the soldier was suffering from a serious disability, he was examined by a specialist. Some curious tests were employed by the medical officers. In order to promote rapidity in handling the men, thirty had their hearing tested at once, the men standing on the chalk line of a circle drawn around the M.O. A soldier who failed to respond to a command given in a low tone was sent before an aurist. For other conditions other tests were adopted. An injured knee joint was carefully measured and the angle of flexion was recorded in the medical report. A man who had lost part of two fingers and had had his elbow injured, had his power to ''grip'' measured as a percentage of the ''grip'' of the other hand.

The record of the proceedings of the medical board was one of the most important of the documents included in the compilation of the history of the soldier's life in the army. It was, however, only one of a lucky thirteen which were necessary to his discharge. The foundation of all was the attestation



BRIG.-GEN. D. M. HOGARTH, D.S.O.

BRIG.-GEN. R. W. PATTERSON, C.M.G., D.S.O.

BRIG.-GEN. H. E. MACDONALD, D.S.O.

BRIG.-GEN. J. S. STEWART, C.M.G., D.S.O.

BRIG.-GEN. J. H. MACBRIEN, C.M.G., D.S.O.

CANADIAN GENERALS

paper, which the soldier signed on entering the army. For the volunteer, — and five-sixths of the Canadian Expeditionary Force were volunteers, — this attestation paper supplied the authority under which he was held in the army. For the soldier who was drafted under the Military Service Act, the place of the attestation paper was taken by the particulars of recruit. This was a much less important document than the attestation paper, for the drafted man was held under the authority of the M.S.A., while the volunteer owed obedience to his superior officers because he had made a contract to serve the King for the period of the war and for six months thereafter. At the time of the soldier's entry into the army, in addition to his attestation paper or particulars of recruit, there were also opened for him a medical history sheet, a dental history sheet, a casualty form, and two conduct sheets, one for his company and the other for his battalion. The medical and the dental history sheets contained, as their names indicate, a record of his condition and of treatments received. The conduct sheet told the story of his behaviour in the army; a "clean sheet" was the best record a man could have. The casualty form was one of the most important documents in the dossier. It contained a record of all his promotions or reductions or transfers; in short, of his "casualties" or of anything which affected his pay or service. All these documents had gone overseas with the soldier and they all had to be collected at the concentration camp and enclosed in the soldier's file. The conduct sheets were not essential, for their place had in the meantime been taken by a field conduct sheet, which contained the record of the man's "conduct" on active service; this was essential.

All these documents came with the soldier to the concentration camp or else they had to be collected and brought there. At the camp seven other documents had to be created. The proceedings of the medical board have already been mentioned. Corresponding to its report there was for the Dental Services a document known as "dental examination on discharge," which was accompanied by a "dental certificate on discharge" where the soldier was entitled to further dental treatment in Canada. An "equipment and clothing statement" was prepared by the Quartermaster-General's Branch, showing what issues of clothing or equipment had been made to him. A dispersal certificate was made out as authority for sending the soldier back to Canada. The discharge certificate, the document which finally turned the soldier into a civilian, was prepared in duplicate, one copy on parchment for the soldier and one on less expensive paper for the official records. A cover for all the documents, called "proceedings on discharge," contained a record of the soldier's identity and of the authority for his discharge — which after the Armistice was "demobilization," "medically unfit," or "misconduct."

In this account of the "documentation" of the soldier one important item has been omitted; that is the record of his pay, and for this record two documents had to be completed. The first was his pay book, which he had carried with him at all times, even in hospital. This was virtually his bank book, and it was made up for him at the concentration camp. In addition to the pay book the paymaster at the camp also handed to the soldier a last pay certificate. This certificate was prepared in London and contained a statement of the account between the soldier and the army up to the date at which he was expected to sail for Canada. This pay certificate was handed to the soldier for his examination, and for his signature if he accepted it as correct. If he did not accept it as correct, it was open to him to refuse to sign it. As a matter of fact, the soldiers did not refuse to sign; but their signature did not prevent them from raising the issue after they were safe in Canada, if they were not satisfied with the account. The Paymaster-General in Canada recognized that soldiers would sign any document put before them in order to get home; and while he did not recognize any claims for more money which were not well proven, he did not attempt to hold the soldiers to the letter of their signatures given in the United Kingdom.

This system of documentation has served a fourfold purpose. During the war it supplied the means by which track was kept of the forces available and was the basis of the statistics on which the Commander-in-Chief depended in making his plans for action. During demobilization and afterwards it provided protection for the public treasury against unworthy claims for pensions or for medical care at public expense; in this light the cost of the upkeep of the Record Office (where the soldier's documents are kept) is in the nature of an insurance premium. The same records are frequently of direct and material value to the soldier himself, for the information available at the Record Office may enable him to prove a claim against an insurance company; and it is on the basis of these records that his claim to a war service badge, certificate, decoration, or war service gratuity has been and is still being decided. For the purpose of demobilization itself the system of documentation was of value, because in the long run it facilitated and did not delay discharge.

Having been "documented" and "medically boarded" and having had his furlough and being in possession of an embarkation card, the returning soldier left the concentration camp for the seaport at which he was to embark for Canada. Up to the time he went on shipboard he was under the authority of the Minister of the Overseas Military Forces of Canada; but once on board ship he passed again under the control of the Department of Militia and Defence, Canada, with headquarters at Ottawa. Representing the Minister of Militia on board ship was the officer commanding the permanent conducting staff. The permanent conducting staffs, of which there were thirty in commission at the "peak load" of the troop movement, were first established in the winter of 1918 to supervise the conducting of drafts to the training camps in England. They proved their worth in this service, for they supplied an element of discipline which it had been impossible to secure while the officer commanding had been the senior officer among the officers commanding the drafts and had therefore changed with every ship. The officers commanding the permanent conducting staffs had an opportunity to become familiar with their duties and so discipline improved under their authority. Each staff, under the officer commanding, consisted of an adjutant, a medical officer, a paymaster, a sergeant-major, an orderly room sergeant and orderly room clerk, and two pay clerks. Later the medical staff was strengthened by the addition of a second officer; while the medical officers were assisted by a staff of nurses, the staff varying in size with the number of troops on board ship. Attached to the staff during demobilization was a representative of the Department of Soldiers' Civil Re-establishment and a representative of the Y.M.C.A. with honorary military rank. A chaplain, too, was usually attached, but, as chaplains were selected from among those returning for demobilization, there was not always one available, and sometimes there were three or four on board.

The voyage was a busy time for the conducting staff. In addition to the problem of discipline, every man's documents had to be checked and a new pay book made out, no small task when there were five thousand men on board. The new pay book was an innovation made for demobilization. Under the old system the soldier's pay book had shown only one side of his account. It had had entered in it only the payments made to him; there was no provision for the entry of credits, of which he was expected to keep track himself. The new pay book, which was handed to the troops on shipboard, however, had in it columns for the entry of credits, for cash payments, for deferred pay, for assigned pay, and for the balance, debit or credit. The new pay book, in fact, gave the soldier fuller details of his account than are given to depositors in savings banks. These books were made out on shipboard and in addition the last pay certificate, prepared at the concentration camp, was entered up to the date at which the soldier was to be discharged. At the concentration camp the soldier's account had been made up to the date at which he was to leave England and he had been given pay before going on furlough. When he came on shipboard he received one pound as boat expense money and during the voyage he was handed a train expense card to be exchanged for five dollars on leaving the ship. The conducting paymaster on board took the balance of the man's account as he left England as his starting point, — this might include entries, called "endorsements," of extra allowance issued on account of delay in the sailing of a troop-ship, — and with that balance made up a statement of the account as it would stand on his arrival at the dispersal station. This account included, besides the balance, on the credit side his pay and allowances to the expected date of discharge, a civilian clothing allowance of thirty-five dollars, and the first instalment of war service gratuity, which was a minimum of seventy dollars. On the debit side would be shown the boat and train expense money, the man's assigned pay to the date of discharge, and the amount of a cheque for the balance, the cheque being issued to him at the dispersal station. No soldier was allowed to leave the army with less than seventy dollars, unless the paymaster knew that there was a debit balance against him larger than the total amount of war service gratuity due to him. The last pay certificate, as just described, was handed to the soldier on board ship, and he was given an opportunity of asking for any explanations which he desired. If he found the statement satisfactory, his account was considered settled; if not, any points in dispute were referred to the Paymaster-General at Ottawa. The last pay certificate was in duplicate, one copy going forward with the man's documents to the dispersal station, the other being retained by the conducting paymaster and sent on to Ottawa through the chief conducting paymaster at the clearing depot.

The clearing depots — situated at Quebec, Halifax, and St. John—were at the centre of the whole scheme of demobilization. Situated at the seaports in Canada, they welcomed the returning soldiers after their voyage and sent them on their way, either to their homes or to the dispersal stations, where they received their discharge from the army. In the case of the great body of the troops the clearing services merely ''cleared'' the way for the soldiers into the interior of the Dominion, leaving the discharge to be given at the dispersal stations. Those troops, however, who came home accompanied by their dependents, were given their discharge at the clearing depot and went on their way as civilians. Towards the end of the demobilization period, when there were few soldiers to be handled, the clearing depot issued discharge papers to all. The clearing services grew out of the discharge depots, which were established at the seaports early in the war to handle returning troops, and their later function was merely a return to an earlier phase. The original name, ''discharge depots,'' was changed to ''clearing depots'' to accord with an alteration in function, when the operation of discharge had been passed on to the Military Districts.

LT.-COL. G. JOHNSTON, D.S.O.

LT.-COL. C. B. WORSNOP, D.S.O.

TYPES OF CANADIAN BATTALION COMMANDERS

The method of "clearing" a shipload of troops where they went forward for discharge at the dispersal station was speedy, the soldiers passing through the depot at the rate of fifteen or twenty per minute. The soldiers arrived in port with their documents arranged according to the dispersal stations to which they were proceeding. Disembarkation began as soon as the customs and health officers had given the ship "clearance." A train of ten or fifteen cars was standing ready in the depot — at Quebec alongside the building, at Halifax within it. At Halifax there was room within the depot for two trains, while at Quebec there was accommodation for three or four trains just alongside. The soldiers for a given dispersal area were paraded on deck and came down the gangplank one by one. As each man landed he handed in his train expense card and received in exchange five dollars for pocket money on the train; his meals were, of course, supplied him. The soldier then proceeded direct to his train. The cars were filled one at a time, the accommodation varying from forty to fifty-two per car. As one car was filled another was opened. When the entire train for a dispersal area was filled, it drew out and another took its place. The documents for the train were handed over by the permanent conducting staff to the officer in charge of records at the clearing depot, who in turn handed them on to the officers in charge of drafts.

Where troops returned with their dependents, the process was longer and partook more of the nature of a welcome. In this process the clearing services and the immigration officers of the port co-operated. While the soldiers were receiving their discharge, the soldiers' dependents were being passed by the immigration authorities. Soldiers' dependents were exempt from the immigration regulations, but had to conform to the requirements of the health authorities.

They had been collected in the United Kingdom by the Immigration Department and had had their passage paid by the Government. Accompanying them on shipboard had been a representative of the Y.W.C.A. to look after the women and children, as the welfare of the soldiers was provided for by the Y.M.C.A. Each dependent was on shipboard given a landing card and this was authority for the port officials to pass her or him.

While the soldiers were receiving their discharge papers in one part of the depot, in another the women and children were being examined by the immigration officers and having their wants attended to by various patriotic organizations which co-operated with the two departments in welcoming them. Both at Quebec and at Halifax there was a crêche for the children of returning soldiers. Here they were received by representatives of the Y.W.C.A., of the Imperial Order of Daughters of the Empire, and of local ladies' committees. While the mother was resting, her children were cared for by skilled hands and babies were bathed, fed, and supplied with clean clothes, where that might be necessary. The Canadian Patriotic Fund was the guardian of every returning dependent. Not in every case was aid given or needed; but where there was need, the assistance of the fund was always forthcoming. Where soldiers and dependents returned on the same ship, the husband or father had his pay cheque, which he could cash at the depot. But sometimes the husband was lying in French or Belgian soil, and the mother and her children were in need of financial aid and counsel. Under the Canadian law immigrants are required to have at least twenty-five dollars in their possession on entering the country. Civilians who do not possess the required amount are turned back; soldiers' dependents in like case were sent on to the Patriotic Fund, which not only provided the necessary money, but looked after the welfare of the dependents until they arrived at their destination. Even dependents of soldiers who had fought under our flag but whose homes were in the United States, were looked after by the Canadian Patriotic Fund, which in these cases was reimbursed by the American Red Cross. The Canadian Red Cross was also represented at the clearing depots and provided skilled attention for any soldiers or dependents suffering from wounds, accident, or illness. The Salvation Army likewise was active, having a hostel at Halifax, and at Quebec a rest room in the clearing depot.

The permanent conducting staff and the clearing services acted under the authority of the Adjutant-General. The transport of the troops from the clearing depot to the dispersal station was conducted under the authority of the Quartermaster-General. The Q.M.G. — or rather the Q.M.G.'s immediate subordinate, the Director of Supplies and Transport — was represented at the seaports by a military landing officer, sometimes called a railway transport officer. This officer had charge of the military side of the entraining of the troops on their departure for the dispersal station. Under the Military Landing Officer in turn was a train conducting officer, who accompanied the train to its destination. He was required to inspect the train before its departure from the clearing depot, to see that all was in order. In this inspection he was accompanied by the officer commanding the troops, that is, the senior draft conducting officer, and the representative at the clearing depot of the railway concerned. A report of this inspection was made in writing to the Director of Supplies and Transport; and in addition the Train Conducting Officer sent in telegraphic reports during the journey. On each troop train, in addition to the officer commanding troops and a train conducting officer, were a medical officer and a representative of the

Y.M.C.A. On trains carrying dependents there was also a representative of the Y.W.C.A., and on hospital trains there was a nurse to assist the medical officer. The agreement between the Department of Militia and the railway companies provided that the trains should consist of standard sleeping cars, colonist cars, commissariat cars, and standard dining cars when required. The cars were equipped with bedding, and porters were supplied by the railway company to see to their cleanliness. The trains carrying dependents were similarly made up and similarly equipped. Special provision was, however, made for supplying food to dependents at low cost, food packages being sold at a moderate price by the clearing depot canteen at Quebec, while at Halifax and St. John similar packages were provided by the immigration authorities and by the Canadian Pacific Railway, respectively.

The troop train carried the returning soldiers to the dispersal centre. It was at the dispersal station that by far the greater number of the troops said farewell to the army. It was in the dispersal centres — en route from the railway depot to the dispersal station — that the great public welcomes took place. It was at the dispersal station that the soldiers met their friends after the separation of years and after the dangers of the battle-field. The proceedings in the dispersal centres varied as there was a public welcome or as the troops returned in drafts for dispersal only. In the former case there was a parade, in which the soldiers marched with rifles, bayonets, and steel caps; in the latter they were taken direct to the dispersal station by train or conveyed there by the motor trucks of the Army Service Corps. On arrival at the dispersal station they were dismissed for half an hour to mingle with relatives and friends, after which they were called to attention for the procedure of dispersal.

Speed was of the essence of the problem. The dis-

LIEUT. DALTON STRYPE, M.C. LIEUT. L. W. HARRON, M.C.
MAJOR S. H. FELLOWES, M.C. LIEUT. C. O. FELLOWES, M.C.

TYPES OF CANADIAN OFFICERS

persal stations were, therefore, organized in queues. Each queue — of which there might be half a dozen, as at Toronto — was designed to look after the discharge of a group of soldiers whose names brought them within certain letters of the alphabet. Each queue was fully equipped for the procedure of dispersal. The first step in the process was passing the ordnance officer, to whom the soldier turned in his arms and equipment; if he returned with his unit he carried his rifle with him; if not, he had already turned it in on shipboard. He was allowed to keep his steel helmet and his clothing. Having passed the ordnance, the soldier went on to the paymaster. Here he received his cheque, which might, including deferred pay and war service gratuity, amount to a thousand or twelve hundred dollars. Next came the record officer, who issued him with his discharge certificate and his war service badge. He then passed before the medical and the dental officers, who signed his medical history sheet and his dental certificate. At the end of the queue the transportation officer issued him a warrant, which he could exchange at the railway offices within the dispersal station for a ticket to his home. Here also he found a bank, at which he could cash his cheque or make a deposit to be transferred to a bank at his destination. Moreover, there were at the dispersal stations representatives of the leading churches, who worked under the direction of the Chaplain Services. At the seaport each soldier had been presented with a booklet on behalf of the Chaplain Services. This booklet contained a message of welcome from each of the leading denominations and religious organizations, including the Y.M.C.A., the Knights of Columbus, the Salvation Army, and the Jewish faith. In each of these booklets was a detachable page, on which the soldier was asked to fill in his name and address and the name and address of his home church. These pages were collected on the troop train by the Y.M.C.A. officer, and at the dispersal station were delivered to the representative of the appropriate denomination. These representatives in turn put themselves in touch with the minister of the church named by the soldier, and in this way a welcome was assured for him by his home church.

A brief account has now been given of the progress of the returning soldier from his camp in France, Belgium, on the Rhine, or in Great Britain until he has reached his home in Canada. But in so doing quite inadequate attention has been paid to the transportation phase which was the crux of the problem. In advance of experience it was assumed that the chief difficulty would be in obtaining sufficient ships. It turned out, however, that the greatest obstacle to be overcome was land transport in Canada. Two days after the Armistice was signed the British Ministry of Shipping advised the Minister, Overseas Military Forces of Canada, that shipping could be supplied to return fifty thousand troops to Canada each month. The Minister of Militia called to his aid the Minister of Railways, and the presidents of the Canadian National, the Canadian Pacific, and the Grand Trunk Railways, who advised him that this number was in excess of the capacity of the railways of Canada. A committee of the Railway War Board was established to have special oversight of demobilization and every effort was made to provide increased accommodation for the home-coming troops. As a result of their endeavours, arrangements were made so that, in addition to caring for ten thousand civilians, it would be possible to handle twenty thousand troops in January, thirty thousand each for the next three months, forty thousand in May, and forty-five thousand monthly thereafter. This programme was maintained, and a little more than maintained, throughout demobilization; in March nearly forty-two thousand troops were carried on Canadian railways and in May nearly fifty thousand. It was expected in advance also that delays might occur during the railway transportation of the troops, and, in order to cope with these, rest stations were equipped, where several thousand soldiers might be housed and fed; but so smoothly did the railway systems work that at no time were the rest stations brought into operation.

The chief difficulties which had to be faced on shipboard arose out of berthing, food, service, and seating accommodation on deck. Early in the demobilization period, in fact in January, 1919, there was a public investigation of conditions on board the troop-ship *Northland.* Mr. Justice Hodgins, who conducted the inquiry, found that there was plenty of food on board, that the cooking was good, but that there were minor instances of bad food being served. He found, however, that berthing and messing accommodation were too crowded; that discipline on shipboard was bad, largely because the permanent conducting staff failed in its duties; and that stewards had made a practice of selling food to the soldiers. He recommended the addition of a light supper to the regular meal hours. This investigation had an excellent effect upon the troop-ship service. The recommendation of the judge in regard to a supper just before "lights out" was adopted and was highly appreciated by the men. His remarks on the functions of the permanent conducting staffs were taken to heart and sympathetic handling on the part of the officers naturally induced a contented feeling among the troops, Sale of food did occur at intervals, but it was severely punished and did not again become troublesome. Berthing at times was the cause of many complaints and there were protests against using hammocks in place of berths. Some conducting officers nevertheless preferred hammocks to berths on the ground that they conduced to better ventilation and greater cleanliness. Seating accommodation on deck on the ships carrying dependents was always short; and it was always difficult to obtain proper berthing for the sub-staff in the orderly room. Taken all in all, however, discontent was rare among the troops on shipboard, which may be regarded as very satisfactory, considering that some of the larger ships brought back as many as five thousand, the population of a good-sized town, crowded into narrow quarters under conditions which the turbulance of the ocean at times made anything but comfortable. No doubt a great part of the credit for the comparative absence of discontent is due to the Y.M.C.A. officers and to the chaplains, who devoted themselves so successfully to the provision of amusement and occupation during the voyage.

Some serious troubles occurred at the Canadian concentration camps in the United Kingdom. The main cause of these troubles was the impossibility of bringing the soldiers back to Canada as rapidly as they desired to come. In certain instances there was special discontent because sailings were cancelled after they had been announced; and at times dissatisfaction was created because certain officers and men were brought home in advance of their normal time of return. The camp staff fully understood that it was impossible to count absolutely on regular sailings at the close of a submarine war and that labour troubles frequently prevented the repair of a ship or its loading; but it was natural that these conditions would be lost sight of by troops whose one thought was a desire to get home and who were not fully informed as to the situation. It was natural, too, that these soldiers would not understand that special permission for discharge in advance of the normal time was granted only after careful investigation and for very good reasons. There is no doubt, however, special discharges and shipping delays played only a secondary part in the troubles at the camps in England. The main trouble was that the soldiers wanted to get home more quickly than ships and rolling-stock existed to carry them. This is a consideration that should be kept in mind in judging of conditions on shipboard. It was an effort to meet this over-ruling desire that led to the use of hammocks and that led to the overcrowding of berthing and messing accommodation.

The problems and the procedure so far described relate to the demobilization of the Canadian Expeditionary Force, which served in Europe. There were in addition at the Armistice 71,654 officers and other ranks on the strength in Canada. One week after the Armistice there was promulgated in orders the decision that this force would be reduced immediately to the lowest point consistent with efficiency. Certain units, such as the Clearing Services Command and the District Depots, it was necessary to retain at full strength for the purposes of demobilization; other units were retained for the maintenance of the Militia and of the Permanent Force; the rest were to be reduced at once. In the selection of men to keep the forces up to the required strength, preference was given to men with overseas service who desired to remain with the colours; but allowance being made for this, reductions were to be made in the following order: —

(1) All personnel with overseas service who desired discharge and who could be spared.
(2) Married men who desired discharge and could be spared.
(3) Personnel of lower categories who were unable to render efficient service.
(4) Personnel by occupations required for economic reasons as might be directed by Militia headquarters.
(5) All others whose services were not required.

In connection with the demobilization of soldiers who were on special leave at the time of the Armistice, the Adjutant-General made special arrangements which saved the country some thousands of dollars. Instead of having these men come back to the district depot to receive their discharge, a form of discharge was sent to them to be signed. In signing this the soldier released the Government from all liability in relation to compensation for injuries while in the service. At the same time the Government saved the expense of railway transportation for some twelve thousand men from their homes to the discharge depots.

The demobilization of the Siberian Expeditionary Force was not carried out until the spring of 1919. This force, which numbered 311 officers and 3,786 other ranks, was recalled at the end of February; and its members were discharged immediately after their arrival in Canada. The first comers reached Canada in April, but the great majority, 3,202 in number, came home in May, a small party remaining behind with the British forces.

In addition to the soldiers who returned to Canada for discharge, to those of the Siberian force, and to those who were struck off the strength in Canada and had never proceeded overseas, there were 15,182 Canadian troops who took their discharge in the United Kingdom after the Armistice. Besides these, some 7,136 had taken their discharge in the United Kingdom before that time. At no period did the Canadian Government view with favour the discharge of our soldiers in England; and every possible obstacle was put in the way of such action. In fact, every soldier who took his discharge in Great Britain had to sign away his right to free transportation to Canada. Further, he had to produce evidence that he had a bona fide offer of employment, or independent means of support, or family ties requiring his presence on that

MAJOR R. J. GILL, M.C.

CAPT. W. N. GRAHAM, M.C.
Killed in action

LIEUT. W. H. COMSTOCK

TYPES OF CANADIAN OFFICERS

side of the water. The grounds for this attitude on the part of the Government were twofold: they desired to keep the British-born settlers for Canada and they were confident that opportunities for the men themselves would be better in Canada than they could possibly be in the United Kingdom at the close of a long war. In spite of government discouragement, as already stated, a large number of the British-born, and possibly some Canadian-born, among our fighting men did stay in the British Isles, and unfortunately in many cases it was found necessary that government assistance be given to them later on.

Many of our soldiers who went overseas to fight in our defence were later joined in Great Britain by their families. Others married overseas while on service. To both children were born in the United Kingdom. In these ways it came about that at the Armistice there was a large community of soldiers' dependents in the British Isles. The Canadian authorities decided in January, 1919, to repatriate these dependents at public expense, a decision which undoubtedly met with public approval. It was decided later to refund passage money to all soldiers' dependents who had returned to Canada before the Armistice. Those who returned after the Armistice were brought home on special ships with their soldier relatives. Special trains were provided in Canada to take them to their homes. The care of the dependents was assumed by the Department of Immigration and Colonization, while the returning soldiers were under the control of the permanent conducting staffs of the Department of Militia. On the ships carrying dependents, in addition to the permanent conducting staff, there was a representative of the Department of Immigration and a representative of the Y.W.C.A. The Y.W.C.A. representative made it her special duty to look after the wants of the soldiers' dependents, who in addition received the attention of the nurses attached to the permanent conducting staff. The Y.M.C.A. officer, who was a member of the permanent conducting staff, arranged entertainments and provided literature as on the troop-ships. By these means, therefore, the tedium and discomforts of a voyage were minimized. The accommodation provided at public expense was third-class passage, as was provided for the troops themselves; but those who desired better accommodation were allowed to secure it by paying the additional cost out of their own means. The number of soldiers' dependents who returned home after the Armistice is put by the Immigration Department at thirty-seven thousand five hundred; and it is estimated that about seventeen thousand had come home before that time.

Demobilization was not complete until the soldier was re-established in civil life. In order to tide over the time between discharge and the time when the soldier should have obtained employment the Department of Militia granted war service gratuities. These gratuities consisted in a continuance of the pay and allowance of the soldier, and the period over which they were paid ranged, for overseas men, from two to six months, according to the length of service of each soldier. The minimum paid to a single man for the two months was one hundred and forty dollars and to a married man two hundred dollars. The soldier who had served three years, of which at least six months had been spent overseas, was entitled to pay and allowances — as a minimum, seventy dollars monthly without or one hundred dollars with dependents — for six months. In addition, opportunities for land settlement were offered by the Soldiers' Settlement Board under the Department of the Interior; while disabled soldiers could obtain a pension and vocational training under the Board of Pension Commissioners and the Department of Soldiers' Civil Re-establishment. The same department had representatives in the

Government employment offices, federal and provincial, to look after the special interests of returned soldiers. There is little doubt that it is owing in a considerable degree to these provisions by the Government, that Canada has escaped — or at least postponed — that industrial crisis which economic experience associates with a flooding of the labour market.

CHAPTER VIII

HEROIC DEEDS[1]

LIEUTENANT WALLACE LLOYD ALGIE, V.C.

Late 20th Battalion

"FOR most conspicuous bravery and self-sacrifice on the 11th of October, 1918, north-east of Cambrai, when with attacking troops which came under heavy enfilade machine-gun fire from a neighbouring village.

"Rushing forward with nine volunteers, he shot the crew of an enemy machine gun, and, turning it on the enemy, enabled his party to reach the village. He then rushed another machine gun, killed the crew, captured an officer and ten of the enemy, and thereby cleared the end of the village. Lieutenant Algie, having established his party, went back for reinforcements, but was killed when leading them forward. His valour and personal initiative in the face of intense fire saved many lives and enabled the position to be held."

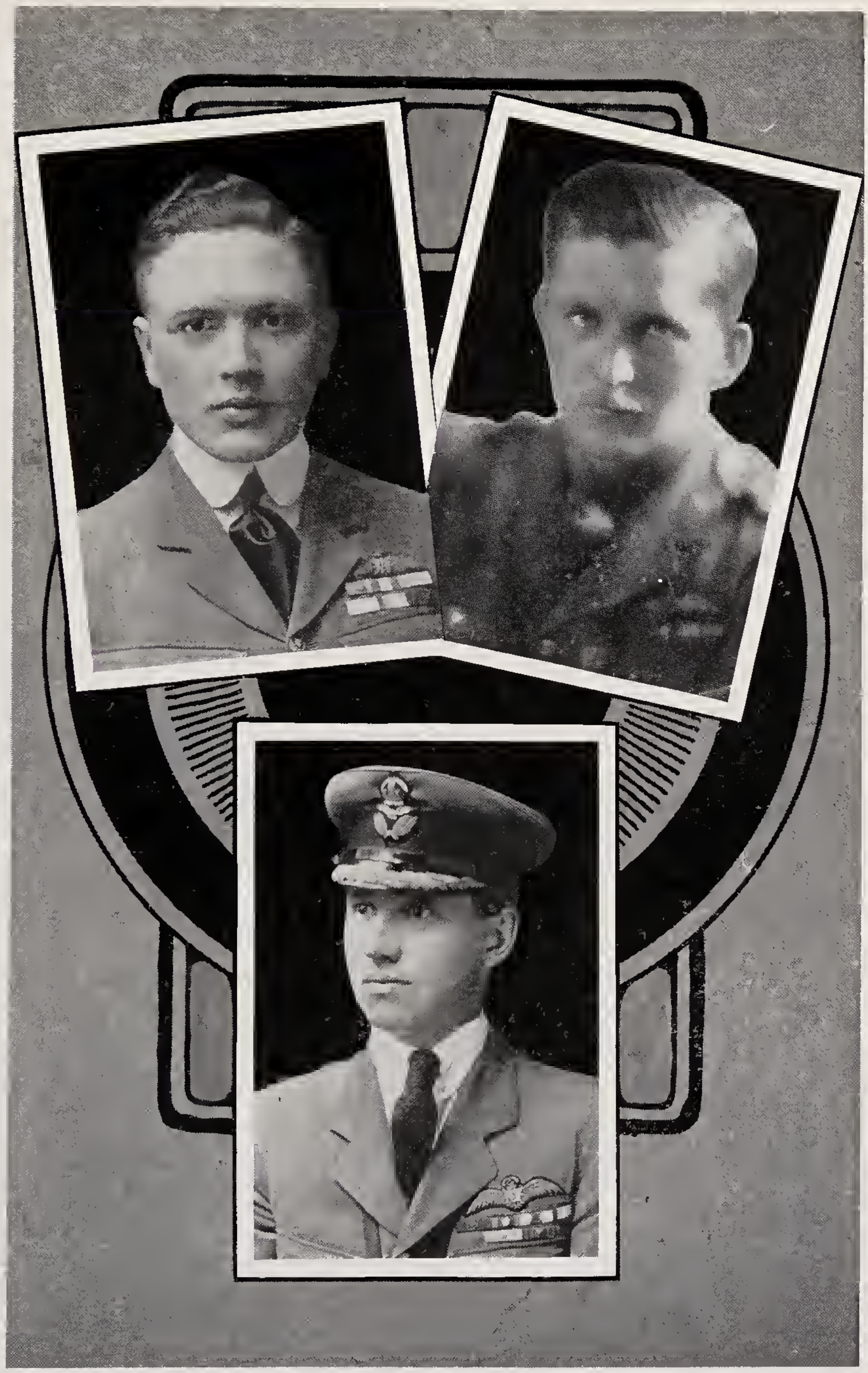
MAJOR (afterwards Lieut.-Colonel) WILLIAM GEORGE BARKER, V.C., D.S.O., M.C. and two Bars, D.F.C.

Royal Air Force

"On the morning of the 27th of October, 1918, this officer observed an enemy two-seater over the Forêt de Mormal. He attacked this machine, and after a

---

[1] The stories are official; as given in the *London Gazette.*



LT.-COL. RAYMOND COLLISHAW, D.S.O., M.C., D.F.C., CROIX DE GUERRE

LT.-COL. W. A. BISHOP, V.C., D.S.O. AND BAR, M.C., R.F.C., CROIX DE GUERRE

LT.-COL. W. G. BARKER, V.C., M.C. AND TWO BARS, D.F.C.

CANADA'S GREATEST ACES

short burst it broke up in the air. At the same time a Fokker biplane attacked him, and he was wounded in the right thigh, but managed, despite this, to shoot down the enemy aeroplane in flames. He then found himself in the middle of a large formation of Fokkers, who attacked him from all directions, and was again severely wounded in the left thigh, but succeeded in driving down two of the enemy in a spin. He lost consciousness after this, and his machine fell out of control. On recovery he found himself being again attacked heavily by a large formation, and singling out one machine, he deliberately charged and drove it down in flames. During this fight his left elbow was shattered and he again fainted, and on regaining consciousness he found himself still being attacked, but, notwithstanding that he was now severely wounded in both legs and his left arm shattered, he dived on the nearest machine and shot it down in flames. Being greatly exhausted, he dived out of the fight to regain our lines, but was met by another formation, which attacked and endeavoured to cut him off, but after a hard fight he succeeded in breaking up this formation and reached our lines, where he crashed on landing.

"This combat, in which Major Barker destroyed four enemy machines (three of them in flames), brought his total success up to fifty enemy machines destroyed, and is a notable example of the exceptional bravery and disregard of danger which this very gallant officer has always displayed throughout his distinguished career."

Corporal Colin Barron, V.C.

3rd Battalion

"For conspicuous bravery when, in attack [November 6th, 1917, at Passchendaele Ridge], his unit was held up by three machine guns. Corporal Barron opened on them from a flank at point-blank range, rushed the enemy guns single-handed, killed four of the crew and captured the remainder. He then, with remarkable initiative and skill, turned one of the captured guns on the retiring enemy, causing them severe casualties. The remarkable dash and determination displayed by this non-commissioned officer in rushing the guns produced far-reaching results and enabled the advance to be continued.''

Captain Edward Donald Bellew, V.C.

7th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty near Keerselaere on the 24th of April, 1915, during the German attacks on the Ypres salient, Captain (then Lieutenant) Bellew, as battalion machine-gun officer, had two guns in action on the high ground overlooking Keerselaere. The enemy's attack broke in full force on the morning of the 24th against the front and right flank of the battalion, the latter being exposed owing to a gap in the line. The right company was soon put out of action, but the advance was temporarily stayed by Captain Bellew, who had two of his guns on the left of the right company. Reinforcements were sent forward, but they in turn were surrounded and destroyed. With the enemy in strength less than one hundred yards from him, with no further assistance in sight, and with his rear threatened, Captain Bellew and Sergeant Peerless, each operating a gun, decided to stay where they were and fight it out. Sergeant Peerless was killed and Captain Bellew was wounded and fell. Nevertheless he got up and maintained his fire till ammunition failed and the enemy rushed the position. Captain Bellew then seized a rifle, smashed his machine gun, and, fighting to the last, was taken prisoner.''

Captain (afterwards Lieut.-Colonel) William Avery Bishop, V.C., D.S.O. and Bar, M.C., R.F.C., Croix de Guerre

Royal Flying Corps

"For most conspicuous bravery, determination, and skill.

"Captain Bishop, who had been sent out [near the Forêt de Mormal] to work independently, flew first of all to an enemy aerodrome; finding no machines about, he flew on to another aerodrome about three miles south-east, which was at least twelve miles the other side of the line. Seven machines, some with their engines running, were on the ground. He attacked these from about fifty feet, and a mechanic, who was starting one of the machines, was seen to fall. One of the machines got off the ground, but at a height of sixty feet Captain Bishop fired fifteen rounds into it at a very close range, and it crashed to the ground. A second machine got off the ground, into which he fired thirty rounds at one hundred and fifty yards range, and it fell into a tree. Two more machines then rose from the aerodrome. One of these he engaged at a height of one thousand feet, emptying the rest of his drum of ammunition. This machine crashed three hundred yards from the aerodrome, after which Captain Bishop emptied a whole drum into the fourth hostile machine and then flew back to his station. Four hostile scouts were about one thousand feet above him for about a mile of his return journey, but they would not attack. His machine was very badly shot about by machine-gun fire from the ground."

Corporal (afterwards Sergeant) Alexander Brereton, V.C.

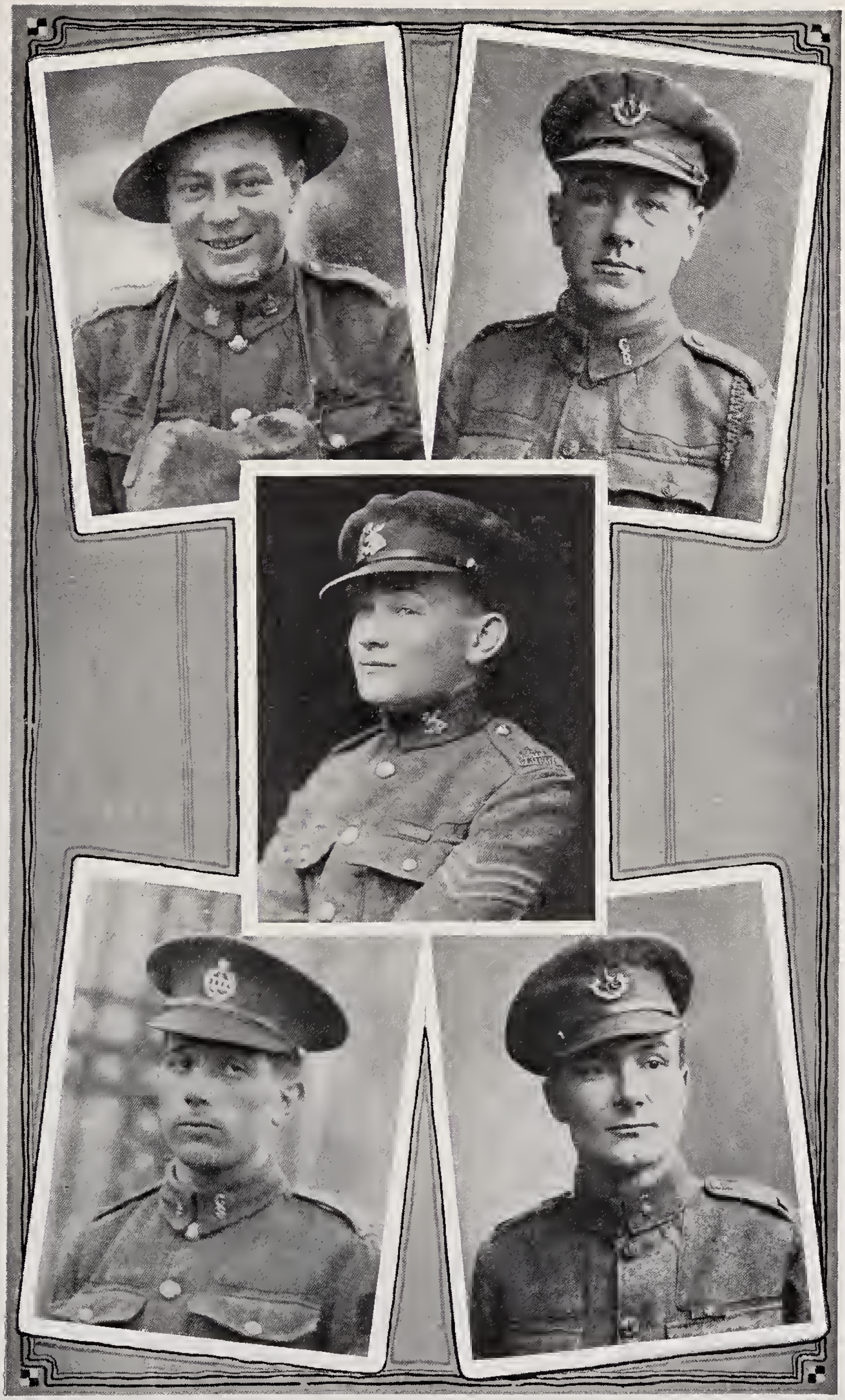
8th Battalion

" For most conspicuous bravery during an attack [August 9th, 1918, east of Amiens], when a line of hostile machine guns opened fire suddenly on his platoon, which was in an exposed position and no cover available. This gallant N.C.O. at once appreciated the critical situation and realized that unless something was done at once the platoon would be annihilated. On his own initiative, without a moment's delay, and alone, he sprang forward and reached one of the hostile machine-gun posts, where he shot the man operating the machine gun and bayoneted the next one who attempted to operate it, whereupon nine others surrendered to him. Corporal Brereton's action was a splendid example of resource and bravery, and not only undoubtedly saved many of his comrades' lives, but also inspired his platoon to charge and capture the five remaining posts."

Lieutenant John Brillant, V.C., M.C.

Late 22nd Battalion

" For most conspicuous bravery and outstanding devotion to duty when in charge of a company which he led in attack [east of Meharicourt] during two days [8th and 9th August, 1918] with absolute fearlessness and extraordinary ability and initiative, the extent of the advance being twelve miles. On the first day of operations, shortly after the attack had begun, his company's left flank was held up by an enemy machine gun. Lieutenant Brillant rushed and captured the machine gun, personally killing two of the enemy crew. Whilst doing this he was wounded, but refused to leave his command. Later, on the same



SERGT. G. H. MULLIN, V.C., M.M. SERGT. ALEX. BRERETON, V.C.
SERGT. THOMAS W. HOLMES, V.C.
CORP. COLIN BARRON, V.C. CORP. F. G. COPPINS, V.C.

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

day, his company was held up by heavy machine-gun fire. He reconnoitred the ground personally, organized a party of two platoons, and rushed straight for the machine-gun nest. Here one hundred and fifty enemy and fifteen machine guns were captured, Lieutenant Brillant personally killing five of the enemy, being wounded a second time. He had this wound dressed immediately, and again refused to leave his company. Subsequently this gallant officer detected a field gun firing on his men over open sights. He immediately organized and led a 'rushing party' towards the gun. After progressing about six hundred yards, he was again seriously wounded. In spite of this third wound, he continued to advance for some two hundred yards more, when he fell unconscious from exhaustion and loss of blood. Lieutenant Brillant's wonderful example throughout the day inspired his men with an enthusiasm and dash which largely contributed towards the success of the operations.''

Private Harry Brown, V.C.

Late 10th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery, courage, and devotion to duty.

'' After the capture of a position [August 16th, 1917, at Hill 70, near Loos], the enemy massed in force and counter-attacked. The situation became very critical, all wires being cut. It was of the utmost importance to get word back to Headquarters. This soldier and one other were given the message, with orders to deliver the same at all costs. The other messenger was killed. Private Brown had his arm shattered, but continued on through an intense barrage until he arrived at the close support lines and found an officer. He was so spent that he fell down the dug-out steps, but retained consciousness long enough to hand over his message, saying 'Important message.' He then became unconscious, and died in the dressing station a few hours later. His devotion to duty was of the highest possible degree imaginable, and his successful delivery of the message undoubtedly saved the loss of the position for the time and prevented many casualties.''

SERGEANT HUGH CAIRNS, V.C., D.C.M.

Late 46th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery before Valenciennes on the 1st of November, 1918, when a machine gun opened on his platoon. Without a moment's hesitation, Sergeant Cairns seized a Lewis gun and single-handed, in the face of direct fire, rushed the post, killed the crew of five, and captured the gun. Later, when the line was held up by machine-gun fire, he again rushed forward, killing twelve enemy and capturing eighteen and two guns. Subsequently, when the advance was held up by machine guns and field guns, although wounded, he led a small party to outflank them, killing many, forcing about fifty to surrender, and capturing all the guns. After consolidation he went with a battle patrol to exploit Marly and forced sixty enemy to surrender. Whilst disarming the party he was severely wounded. Nevertheless he opened fire and inflicted heavy losses. Finally he was rushed by about twenty enemy and collapsed from weakness and loss of blood. Throughout the operation he showed the highest degree of valour, and his leadership greatly contributed to the success of the attack. He died on the 2nd of November from wounds.''

LIEUTENANT FREDERICK WILLIAM CAMPBELL, V.C.

Late 1st Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery on the 15th of June, 1915, during the action at Givenchy.

"Lieutenant Campbell took two machine guns over the parapet, arrived at the German first line with one gun, and maintained his position there, under very heavy rifle, machine-gun, and bomb fire, notwithstanding the fact that almost the whole of his detachment had been killed or wounded. When our supply of bombs had become exhausted, this officer advanced his gun still further to an exposed position and, by firing about one thousand rounds, succeeded in holding back the enemy's counter-attack. This very gallant officer was subsequently wounded, and has since died."

ACTING-CORPORAL LEONARD CLARKE, V.C.

Late 2nd Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery [September 10th, 1916, near Pozières].

"He was detailed with his section of bombers to clear the continuation of a newly captured trench, and cover the construction of a 'block.' After most of his party had become casualties, he was building a 'block' when about twenty of the enemy with two officers counter-attacked. He boldly advanced against them, emptied his revolver into them and afterwards two enemy rifles, which he picked up in the trench. One of the officers attacked him with the bayonet, wounding him in the leg, but he shot him dead. The enemy ran away, pursued by Corporal Clarke, who shot four more and captured a fifth. Later, he was ordered to the dressing station, but returned next day to duty."

Lieut.-Colonel W. H. Clark-Kennedy,[1] V.C., C.M.G., D.S.O. and Bar

24th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery, initiative, and skilful leading [at Arras] on the 27th and 28th of August, 1918, when in command of his battalion.

"On the 27th, he led his battalion with great bravery and skill from Crow and Aigrette Trenches in front of Wancourt to the attack on the Fresnes-Rouvroy Line. From the outset the brigade, of which the 24th Battalion was a central unit, came under very heavy shell and machine-gun fire, suffering many casualties, especially among the leaders. Units became partially disorganized and the advance was checked. Appreciating the vital importance to the brigade front of a lead by the centre, and undismayed by annihilating fire, Lieut.-Colonel Clark-Kennedy, by sheer personality and initiative, inspired his men and led them forward. On several occasions he set an outstanding example by leading parties straight at the machine-gun nests which were holding up the advance and overcame these obstacles. By controlling the direction of neighbouring units and collecting men who had lost their leaders, he rendered valuable services in strengthening the line, and enabled the whole brigade front to move forward. By the afternoon, very largely due to the determined leadership of this officer, and disregard for his own life, his battalion, despite heavy losses, had made good the maze of trenches west of Cherisy and Cherisy village, had crossed the Sensée river bed, and had occupied Occident Trench in front of the heavy wire of the Fresnes-Rouvroy Line; under continuous fire he then went up and down his line until far into the night, improving the position, giving wonderful encouragement to his men, and sent back very clear reports.

---

[1] See Vol. III, p. 112.

"On the next day he again showed valorous leadership in the attack on the Fresnes-Rouvroy Line and Upton Wood. Though severely wounded soon after the start, he refused aid, and dragged himself to a shell hole, from which he could observe. Realizing that his exhausted troops could advance no further, he established a strong line of defence and thereby prevented the loss of most important ground. Despite intense pain and serious loss of blood, he refused to be evacuated for over five hours, by which time he had established the line in a position from which it was possible for the relieving troops to continue the advance.

"It is impossible to overestimate the results achieved by the valour and leadership of this officer."

Lieutenant Robert Grierson Combe, V.C.

Late 27th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and example.

"He steadied his company under intense fire [May 3rd, 1917, south of Acheville], and led them through the enemy barrage, reaching the objective with only five men. With great coolness and courage, Lieutenant Combe proceeded to bomb the enemy, and inflicted heavy casualties. He collected small groups of men and succeeded in capturing the company's objective, together with eighty prisoners. He repeatedly charged the enemy, driving them before him, and, whilst personally leading his bombers, was killed by an enemy sniper. His conduct inspired all ranks, and it was entirely due to his magnificent courage that the position was carried, secured, and held."

CORPORAL FREDERICK GEORGE COPPINS, V.C.

8th Battalion

"For conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty when, during an attack [August 9th, 1918, at Beaufort Wood], his platoon came unexpectedly under fire of numerous machine guns. It was not possible to advance or to retire, and no cover was available. It became apparent that the platoon would be annihilated unless the enemy machine guns were silenced immediately. Corporal Coppins, without hesitation and on his own initiative, called on four men to follow him and leaped forward in the face of intense machine-gun fire. With his comrades he rushed straight for the machine guns. The four men with him were killed, and Corporal Coppins wounded. Despite his wound, he reached the hostile machine guns alone, killed the operator of the first gun and three of the crew, and made prisoner four others who surrendered. Corporal Coppins, by this act of outstanding valour, was the means of saving many lives of the men of his platoon and enabled the advance to be continued. Despite his wound, this gallant N.C.O. continued with his platoon to the final objective, and only left the line when it had been made secure and when ordered to do so."

PRIVATE JOHN BERNARD CROAK, V.C.

Late 13th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery in attack [August 8th, 1918, near Amiens], when, having become separated from his section, he encountered a machine-gun nest, which he bombed and silenced, capturing the gun and taking the crew prisoner. Shortly afterwards he was severely wounded, but refused to desist. Having rejoined his platoon, a very strong point, containing several machine guns, was encountered. Private Croak, however, seeing an opportunity, dashed forward alone and was almost immediately followed by the remainder of the platoon in a brilliant charge. He was the first to arrive at the trench line, into which he led his men, capturing three machine guns and bayoneting or capturing the entire garrison. The perseverance and valour of this gallant soldier, who was again severely wounded and died of his wounds, were an inspiring example to all.''

Private Thomas Dinesen, V.C.

42nd Battalion

''For most conspicuous and continuous bravery displayed during ten hours of hand-to-hand fighting [August 12th, 1918, at Parvillers], which resulted in the capture of over a mile of strongly garrisoned and stubbornly defended enemy trenches. Five times in succession he rushed forward alone, and single-handed put hostile machine guns out of action, accounting for twelve of the enemy with bomb and bayonet. His sustained valour and resourcefulness inspired his comrades at a very critical stage of the action and were an example to all.''

Lance-Corporal Frederick Fisher, V.C.

Late 13th Battalion

''On the 23rd of April, 1915, in the neighbourhood of St. Julien, he went forward with the machine gun of which he was in charge, under heavy fire, and most gallantly assisted in covering the retreat of a battery, losing four men of his gun team. Later, after obtaining four more men, he went forward again to the firing line and was himself killed while bringing his machine gun into action, under very heavy fire, in order to cover the advance of supports.''

LIEUTENANT GORDON MURIEL FLOWERDEW, V.C.

Late Lord Strathcona's Horse

"For most conspicuous bravery and dash when in command of a squadron detailed for Special Service of a very important nature [March 30th, 1918, northeast of Bois de Moreuil]. On reaching the first objective, Lieutenant Flowerdew saw two lines of the enemy, each about sixty strong, with machine guns in the centre and flanks, one line being about two hundred yards behind the other. Realizing the critical nature of the operation and how much depended upon it, Lieutenant Flowerdew ordered a troop under Lieutenant Harvey, V.C., to dismount and carry out a special movement, while he led the remaining three troops to the charge. The squadron, less one troop, passed over both lines, killing many of the enemy with the sword; and wheeling about, galloped at them again. Although the squadron had then lost about seventy per cent. of its numbers killed and wounded, from rifle and machine-gun fire directed on it from the front and both flanks, the enemy broke and retired. The survivors of the squadron then established themselves in a position where they were joined, after much hand-to-hand fighting, by Lieutenant Harvey's party.

"Lieutenant Flowerdew was dangerously wounded through both thighs, during the operation, but continued to cheer on his men. There can be no doubt that this officer's great valour was the prime factor in the capture of the positions."

CORPORAL (afterwards Sergeant)
HERMAN JAMES GOOD, V.C.

13th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and leading when, in attack [August 8th, 1918, at Hangard Wood], his

PTE. THOMAS DINESEN, V.C. SERGT.-MAJOR F. W. HALL, V.C.
Killed in action
SERGT. HERMAN J. GOOD, V.C.
SERGT. W. L. RAYFIELD, V.C. SERGT.-MAJOR ROBERT HANNA, V.C.

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

company was held up by heavy fire from three machine guns, which were seriously delaying the advance. Realizing the gravity of the situation, this N.C.O. dashed forward alone, killing several of the garrison and capturing the remainder. Later Corporal Good, while alone, encountered a battery of 5.9-inch guns, which were in action at the time. Collecting three men of his section, he charged the battery under point-blank fire and captured the entire crews of three guns.''

Lieutenant Milton Fowler Gregg, V.C., M.C. and Bar

Royal Canadian Regiment

''For most conspicuous bravery and initiative during operations near Cambrai, 27th of September to 1st of October, 1918.

''On the 28th of September, when the advance of the brigade was held up by fire from both flanks and by thick uncut wire, he crawled forward alone and explored the wire until he found a small gap, through which he subsequently led his men, and forced an entry into the enemy trench. The enemy counter-attacked in force, and, through lack of bombs, the situation became critical. Although wounded, Lieutenant Gregg returned alone under terrific fire and collected a further supply. Then, rejoining his party, which by this time was much reduced in numbers, and in spite of a second wound, he reorganized his men and led them with the greatest determination against the enemy trenches, which he finally cleared. He personally killed or wounded eleven of the enemy and took twenty-five prisoners in addition to twelve machine guns captured in this trench. Remaining with his company in spite of wounds, he again, on the 30th of September, led his men in attack until severely wounded. The outstanding valour of this officer saved many casualties and enabled the advance to continue.''

Company-Sergeant-Major Frederick William Hall, V.C.

Late 8th Battalion

''On the 24th of April, 1915, in the neighbourhood of Ypres, when a wounded man, who was lying some fifteen yards from the trench, called for help, Company-Sergeant-Major Hall endeavoured to reach him in the face of a very heavy enfilade fire which was being poured in by the enemy. The first attempt failed, and a non-commissioned officer and private soldier, who were attempting to give assistance, were both wounded. Company-Sergeant-Major Hall then made a second most gallant attempt; and was in the act of lifting up the wounded man to bring him in, when he fell mortally wounded in the head.''

Company-Sergeant-Major (afterwards Lieutenant) Robert Hanna, V.C.

29th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery in attack [August 21st, 1917, at Lens], when his company met with most severe resistance and all the company officers became casualties. A strong point, heavily protected by wire, was held by a machine gun and had beaten off three assaults of the company with heavy casualties. This warrant officer, under heavy machine-gun and rifle fire, coolly collected a party of men, and, leading them against this strong point, rushed through the wire and personally bayoneted three of the enemy and brained the fourth, capturing the position and silencing the machine gun.

"This most courageous officer displayed courage and personal bravery of the highest order at this most critical moment of the attack and was responsible for the capture of a most important tactical point; but for his daring action and determined handling of a desperate situation, the attack would not have succeeded. C.S.M. Hanna's outstanding gallantry, personal courage, and determined leading of his company is deserving of the highest possible reward."

LIEUTENANT FREDERICK MAURICE WATSON HARVEY, V.C., M.C., Croix de Guerre

Lord Strathcona's Horse

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty.

"During an attack [March 27th, 1917] by his regiment on a village [Guyencourt], a party of the enemy ran forward to a wired trench just in front of the village and opened rapid rifle and machine-gun fire at a very close range, causing heavy casualties in the leading troop. At this critical moment, when the enemy showed no intention whatever of retiring and fire was still intense, Lieutenant Harvey, who was in command of the leading troop, ran forward well ahead of his men and dashed at the trench, still fully manned, jumped the wire, shot the machine gunner and captured the gun. His most courageous act had a decisive effect on the success of the operation."

SERGEANT FREDERICK HOBSON, V.C.

Late 20th Battalion

"During a strong enemy counter-attack [August 15th, 1917, north-west of Lens], a Lewis gun, in a forward post in a communication trench leading to the enemy's lines, was buried by a shell, and the crew, with the exception of one man, killed. Sergeant Hobson, though not a gunner, grasped the great importance of the post, rushed from the trench, dug out the gun, and got it into action against the enemy, who were now advancing down the trench and across the open. A jam caused the gun to stop firing. Though wounded he left the gunner to correct the stoppage, rushed forward at the advancing enemy, and, with bayonet and clubbed rifle, single-handed, held them back until he himself was killed by a rifle shot. By this time, however, the Lewis gun was again in action, and, reinforcements shortly afterwards arriving, the enemy were beaten off. The valour and devotion to duty displayed by this non-commissioned officer gave the gunner the time required to again get the gun in action and saved a most serious situation.''

PRIVATE (afterwards Sergeant) THOMAS WILLIAM HOLMES, V.C.

4th Canadian Mounted Rifles

''For most conspicuous bravery and resource when the right flank of our attack was held up by heavy machine-gun and rifle fire, from a 'pill-box' strong point [October 26th, 1917, near Passchendaele]. Heavy casualties were producing a critical situation when Private Holmes, on his own initiative and single-handed, ran forward and threw two bombs, killing and wounding the crews of two machine guns. He then returned to his comrades, secured another bomb, and again rushed forward alone, under heavy fire, and threw the bomb into the entrance of the 'pill-box,' causing the nineteen occupants to surrender. By this act of valour at a very critical moment, Private Holmes undoubtedly cleared the way for the advance of our troops and saved the lives of many of his comrades.''

LIEUT. J. E. TAIT, V.C., M.C. LIEUT. M. F. GREGG, V.C., M.C.
LIEUT. HUGH MACKENZIE, V.C., D.C.M.
LIEUT. G. M. FLOWERDEW, V.C. LIEUT. F. W. H. HARVEY, V.C., M.C., CROIX DE GUERRE

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

Lieutenant Samuel Lewis Honey, V.C., D.C.M., M.M.

Late 78th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery during the Bourlon Wood operations, 27th of September to the 2nd of October, 1918.

"On the 27th of September, when his company commander and all other officers of his company had become casualties, Lieutenant Honey took command and skilfully reorganized under very severe fire. He continued the advance with great dash and gained the objective. Then, finding that his company was suffering casualties from enfilade machine-gun fire, he located the machine-gun nest and rushed it single-handed, capturing the guns and ten prisoners. Subsequently he repelled four enemy counter-attacks and, after dark, again went out alone, and, having located an enemy post, led a party which captured the post and three guns. On the 29th of September he led his company against a strong enemy position with great skill and daring and continued in the succeeding days of the battle to display the same high example of valour and self-sacrifice. He died of wounds received during the last day of the attack by his battalion."

Captain Bellenden Seymour Hutcheson, V.C., M.C.

C.A.M.C. att. 75th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty on September 2nd, 1918, when, under most intense shell, machine-gun, and rifle fire, he went through the Quéant-Drocourt Support Line with the battalion. Without hesitation and with utter disregard of personal safety he remained on the field until every wounded man had been attended to. He dressed the wounds of a seriously wounded officer under terrific machine-gun and shell fire, and, with the assistance of prisoners and of his own men, succeeded in evacuating him to safety, despite the fact that the bearer party suffered heavy casualties. Immediately afterwards he rushed forward, in full view of the enemy, under very heavy machine-gun and rifle fire, to tend a wounded sergeant, and, having placed him in a shell hole, dressed his wounds. Captain Hutcheson performed many similar gallant acts, and, by his coolness and devotion to duty, many lives were saved.''

Corporal Joseph Kaeble, V.C., M.M.

Late 22nd Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and extraordinary devotion to duty when in charge of a Lewis gun section in the front-line trenches [June 8th and 9th, 1918, at Neuville Vitasse], on which a strong enemy raid was attempted.

''During an intense bombardment Corporal Kaeble remained at the parapet with his Lewis gun shouldered ready for action, the field of fire being very short. As soon as the barrage lifted from the front line, about fifty of the enemy advanced towards his post. By this time, the whole of his section except one had become casualties. Corporal Kaeble jumped over the parapet and, holding his Lewis gun at the hip, emptied one magazine after another into the advancing enemy, and, although wounded several times by fragments of shells and bombs, he continued to fire and entirely blocked the enemy by his determined stand. Finally, firing all the time, he fell backwards into the trench, mortally wounded. While lying on his back in the trench, he fired his last cartridges over the parapet at the retreating Germans, and, before losing consciousness, shouted to the wounded about him: 'Keep it up, boys; do not let them get through. We must stop them.' The complete repulse of the enemy attack at this point was due to the remarkable personal bravery and self-sacrifice of this gallant non-commissioned officer, who died of his wounds shortly afterwards."

LIEUTENANT GEORGE FRASER KERR, V.C., M.C., M.M.

3rd Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and leadership during the Bourlon Wood operations on the 27th of September, 1918, when in command of the left support company in attack.

"He handled his company with great skill, and gave timely support by outflanking a machine gun which was impeding the advance. Later, near the Arras-Cambrai road, the advance was held up by a strong point. Lieutenant Kerr, far in advance of his company, rushed this strong point single-handed and captured four machine guns and thirty-one prisoners. His valour throughout this engagement was an inspiring example to all."

PRIVATE JOHN CHIPMAN KERR, V.C.

49th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery. During a bombing attack [September 16th 1916, at Courcelette], he was acting as bayonet man, and knowing that bombs were running short, he ran along the parados under very heavy fire until he was in close contact with the enemy, when he opened fire on them at point-blank range and inflicted heavy loss. The enemy, thinking they were surrounded, surrendered, sixty-two prisoners were taken, and two hundred and fifty yards of enemy trench captured.

"Before carrying out this very plucky act, one of

Private Kerr's fingers had been blown off by a bomb. Later, with two other men, he escorted back the prisoners under fire, and then returned to report himself for duty before having his wound dressed."

PRIVATE CECIL JOHN KINROSS, V.C.

49th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery in action during prolonged and severe operations [November 10th and 11th, 1917, at Passchendaele Ridge].

"Shortly after the attack was launched, the company to which he belonged came under intense artillery fire, and further advance was held up by a very severe fire from an enemy machine gun. Private Kinross, making a careful survey of the situation, deliberately divested himself of all his equipment save his rifle and bandolier, and, regardless of his personal safety, advanced alone over the open ground in broad daylight, charged the enemy machine gun, killing the crew of six, and seized and destroyed the gun. His superb example and courage instilled the greatest confidence in his company and enabled a further advance of three hundred yards to be made and a highly important position to be established. Throughout the day, he showed marvellous coolness and courage, fighting with the utmost aggressiveness against heavy odds until seriously wounded."

SERGEANT ARTHUR GEORGE KNIGHT, V.C., Croix de Guerre

Late 10th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery, initiative, and devotion to duty, when, after an unsuccessful attack [September 2nd, 1918, at Villers-les-Cagnicourt], Sergeant Knight led a bombing section forward, under very heavy fire of all descriptions, and engaged the enemy at close quarters. Seeing that his party continued to be held up, he dashed forward alone, bayoneting several of the enemy machine gunners and trench-mortar crews, and forcing the remainder to retire in confusion. He then brought forward a Lewis gun and directed his fire on the retreating enemy, inflicting many casualties. In the subsequent advance of his platoon in pursuit, Sergeant Knight saw a party of about thirty of the enemy go into a deep tunnel which led off the trench. He again dashed forward alone, and, having killed one officer and two N.C.O.'s, captured twenty other ranks. Subsequently he routed, single-handed, another enemy party which was opposing the advance of his platoon. On each occasion he displayed the greatest valour under fire at very close range, and by his example of courage, gallantry, and initiative was a wonderful inspiration to all. This very gallant N.C.O. was subsequently fatally wounded."

PRIVATE (Acting-Corporal) FILIP KONOWAL, V.C.

47th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and leadership when in charge of a section in attack [August 22nd-24th, 1917, at Lens]. His section had the difficult task of mopping up cellars, craters, and machine-gun emplacements. Under his able direction, all resistance was overcome successfully, and heavy casualties inflicted on the enemy. In one cellar he himself bayoneted three enemy, and attacked single-handed seven others in a crater, killing them all. On reaching the objective, a machine gun was holding up the right flank, causing many casualties. Corporal Konowal rushed forward and entered the emplacement, killed the crew, and brought the gun back to our lines. The next day he again attacked, single-handed, another machine-gun emplacement, killed three of the crew and destroyed the gun and emplacement with explosives. This non-commissioned officer alone killed at least sixteen of the enemy, and during the two days' actual fighting carried on continuously his good work until severely wounded.''

CAPTAIN (Acting-Major) O'KILL MASSEY LEARMONTH, V.C., M.C.

Late 2nd Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and exceptional devotion to duty.

''During a determined counter-attack on our new positions [August 18th, 1917, east of Loos], this officer, when his company was momentarily surprised, instantly charged and personally disposed of the attackers. Later, he carried on a tremendous fight with the advancing enemy. Although under intense barrage fire and mortally wounded, he stood on the parapet of the trench, bombed the enemy continuously, and directed the defence in such a manner as to infuse a spirit of utmost resistance into his men.''

LIEUTENANT GRAHAM THOMPSON LYALL, V.C.

102nd Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and skilful leading during the operations north of Cambrai.

''On September 27th, 1918, whilst leading his platoon against Bourlon Wood, he rendered invaluable support to the leading company, which was held up by a strong point, which he captured by a flank movement, together with thirteen prisoners, one field gun,

LIEUT. H. STRACHAN, V.C., M.C. LT.-COL. G. R. PEARKES, V.C., D.S.O., M.C.

LIEUT. G. T. LYALL, V.C. LIEUT. G. B. M^{c}KEAN, V.C., M.M.

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

and four machine guns. Later, his platoon, now much weakened by casualties, was held up by machine guns at the southern end of Bourlon Wood. Collecting any men available, he led them towards the strong point, and, springing forward alone, rushed the position single-handed and killed the officer in charge, subsequently capturing at this point forty-five prisoners and five machine guns. Having made good his final objective, with a further capture of forty-seven prisoners, he consolidated his position and thus protected the remainder of the company. On October 1st, in the neighbourhood of Blecourt, when in command of a weak company, by skilful dispositions he captured a strongly defended position, which yielded eighty prisoners and seventeen machine guns. During two days of operations Lieutenant Lyall captured in all three officers, 182 other ranks, twenty-six machine guns, and one field gun, exclusive of heavy casualties inflicted. He showed throughout the utmost valour and high powers of command.''

CAPTAIN (afterwards Major) THAIN WENDELL MACDOWELL, V.C., D.S.O.

38th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and indomitable resolution in face of heavy machine-gun and shell fire [April 9th-13th, 1917, at Vimy Ridge].

''By his initiative and courage, this officer, with the assistance of two runners, was enabled, in the face of great difficulties, to capture two machine guns, besides two officers and seventy-five men. Although wounded in the hand, he continued for five days to hold the position gained, in spite of heavy shell fire, until eventually relieved by his battalion. By his bravery and prompt action he undoubtedly succeeded in rounding up a very strong enemy machine-gun post.''

Captain John MacGregor, V.C., M.C., D.C.M.

2nd Canadian Mounted Rifles

"For most conspicuous bravery, leadership, and self-sacrificing devotion to duty near Cambrai from the 29th of September to the 3rd of October, 1918.

"He led his company under intense fire, and when the advance was checked by machine guns, although wounded, pushed on and located the enemy guns. He then ran forward in broad daylight, in face of heavy fire from all directions, and, with rifle and bayonet, single-handed, put the enemy crews out of action, killing four and taking eight prisoners. His prompt action saved many casualties and enabled the advance to continue. After reorganizing his command under heavy fire, he rendered most useful support to neighbouring troops. When the enemy were showing stubborn resistance, he went along the line regardless of danger, organized the platoons, took command of the leading waves, and continued the advance. Later, after a personal daylight reconnaissance under heavy fire, he established his company in Neuville St. Remy, thereby greatly assisting the advance into Tilloy. Throughout the operations, Captain MacGregor displayed magnificent bravery and heroic leadership."

Lieutenant George Burton McKean, V.C., M.M.

14th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty during a raid on the enemy's trenches [April 27th-28th, 1918, in the Gavrelle sector].

"Lieutenant McKean's party, which was operating on the right flank, was held up at a block in the communication trench by most intense fire from hand-grenades and machine guns. This block, which was too close to our trenches to have been engaged by the preliminary bombardment, was well protected by wire and covered by a well protected machine gun thirty yards behind it. Realizing that if this block were not destroyed, the success of the whole operation might be marred, he ran into the open to the right flank of the block, and, with utter disregard of danger, leaped over the block, head first, on top of the enemy. Whilst lying on the ground on top of one of the enemy another rushed at him with fixed bayonet. Lieutenant McKean shot him through the body and then shot the enemy underneath him, who was struggling violently. This very gallant action enabled this position to be captured. Lieutenant McKean's supply of bombs ran out at this time, and he sent back to our front lines for a fresh supply. Whilst waiting for them, he engaged the enemy single-handed. When the bombs arrived, he fearlessly rushed the second block, killed two of the enemy, captured four others, and drove the remaining garrison, including a hostile machine-gun section, into a dug-out. The dug-out, with its occupants and machine gun, was destroyed.

"This officer's splendid bravery and dash undoubtedly saved many lives, for, had not this position been captured, the whole of the raiding party would have been exposed to dangerous enfilading fire during the withdrawal. His leadership at all times has been beyond praise."

LIEUTENANT HUGH MCKENZIE, V.C., D.C.M.

Late 7th Canadian Machine-Gun Company

"For most conspicuous bravery and leading when in charge of a section of four machine guns accompanying the infantry in an attack [October 30th, 1917, at Meetcheele Spur near Passchendaele].

"Seeing that all the officers and most of the non-commissioned officers of an infantry company had become casualties, and that the men were hesitating before a nest of enemy machine guns, which were on commanding ground and causing them severe casualties, he handed over command of his guns to an N.C.O., rallied the infantry, organized an attack, and captured the strong point. Finding that the position was swept by machine-gun fire from a 'pill-box' which dominated all the ground over which the troops were advancing, Lieutenant McKenzie made a reconnaissance and detailed flanking and frontal attacking parties which captured the 'pill-box,' he himself being killed while leading the frontal attack.

"By his valour and leadership, this gallant officer ensured the capture of these strong points and so saved the lives of many men and enabled the objective to be obtained."

2nd Lieutenant Alan Arnett McLeod, V.C.

Late Royal Air Force

"Whilst flying with his observer (Lieutenant A. W. Hammond, M.C.), attacking hostile formations by bombs and machine-gun fire, he was assailed at a height of 5,000 feet by eight enemy triplanes which dived at him from all directions, firing from their front guns. By skilful manœuvring he enabled his observer to fire bursts at each machine in turn, shooting three of them down out of control. By this time Lieutenant McLeod had received five wounds, and whilst continuing the engagement a bullet penetrated his petrol tank and set the machine on fire. He then climbed out on to the left bottom plane, controlling his machine from the side of the fuselage, and by sideslipping steeply kept the flames to one side, thus enabling the observer to continue firing until the ground was reached.

"The observer had been wounded six times when

LATE LIEUT. ARNETT McLEOD, V.C.
CAPT. C. P. J. O'KELLY, V.C. LIEUT. C. S. RUTHERFORD, V.C., M.C., M.M.

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

the machine crashed in 'No Man's Land' and 2nd Lieutenant McLeod, notwithstanding his own wounds, dragged him away from the burning wreckage at great personal risk from heavy machine-gun fire from the enemy's lines. This very gallant pilot was again wounded by a bomb whilst engaged in this act of rescue, but he persevered until he had placed Lieutenant Hammond in comparative safety, before falling himself from exhaustion and loss of blood."

SERGEANT WILLIAM MERRIFIELD, V.C.

4th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty during the attack near Abancourt on the 1st of October, 1918. When his men were held up by an intense fire from two machine-gun emplacements, he attacked them both single-handed. Dashing from shell hole to shell hole, he killed the occupants of the first post, and, although wounded, continued to attack the second post, and with a bomb killed the occupants. He refused to be evacuated and led his platoon until again severely wounded.

"Sergeant Merrifield served with exceptional distinction on many former occasions, and throughout the action on the 1st of October showed the highest qualities of valour and leadership."

LANCE-CORPORAL WILLIAM HENRY METCALF, V.C., M.M.

16th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery, initiative, and devotion to duty in attack [September 4th, 1918, at Arras], when, the right flank of his battalion being held up, he realized the situation and rushed forward under intense machine-gun fire to a passing tank on the left. With his signal flag he walked in front of the tank, directing it along the trench in a perfect hail of bullets and bombs. The machine-gun strong points were overcome, very heavy casualties were inflicted on the enemy, and a very critical situation was relieved. Later, although wounded, he continued to advance until ordered to get into a shell hole and have his wounds dressed. His valour throughout was of the highest standard.''

PRIVATE WILLIAM JOHNSTONE MILNE, V.C.

Late 16th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in attack [April 9th, 1917, near Thelus].

''On approaching the first objective, Private Milne observed an enemy machine gun firing on our advancing troops. Crawling on hands and knees, he succeeded in reaching the gun, killing the crew with bombs and capturing the gun. On the line reforming, he again located a machine gun in the support line, and, stalking this second gun as he had done the first, he succeeded in putting the crew out of action and capturing the gun. His wonderful bravery and resource on these two occasions undoubtedly saved the lives of many of his comrades. Private Milne was killed shortly after capturing the second gun.''

CORPORAL HARRY GARNET BEDFORD MINER, V.C.

58th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in attack [August 8th, 1918, at Demuin], when, despite severe wounds, he refused to withdraw. He rushed an enemy machine-gun post single-handed, killed the entire crew, and turned the gun on the enemy. Later, with two others, he attacked another enemy machine-gun post, and succeeded in putting the gun out of action. Corporal Miner then rushed, single-handed, an enemy bombing post, bayoneting two of the garrison and putting the remainder to flight. He was mortally wounded in the performance of this gallant deed.''

CAPTAIN COULSON NORMAN MITCHELL, V.C., M.C.

4th Battalion Canadian Engineers

''For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty on the night of 8th-9th October, 1918, at the Canal de l'Escaut, north-east of Cambrai.

''He led a small party ahead of the first wave of infantry in order to examine the various bridges on the line of approach, and, if possible, to prevent their demolition. On reaching the canal he found the bridge already blown up. Under a heavy barrage, he crossed to the next bridge, where he cut a number of 'lead' wires. Then, in total darkness and unaware of the position or strength of the enemy at the bridge-head, he dashed across the main bridge over the canal. This bridge was found to be heavily charged for demolition, and whilst Captain Mitchell, assisted by his N.C.O., was cutting the wires, the enemy attempted to rush the bridge in order to blow the charges, whereupon he at once dashed to the assistance of his sentry, who had been wounded, killed three of the enemy, captured twelve, and maintained the bridge-head until reinforced. Then, under heavy fire, he continued his task of cutting wires and removing charges, which he well knew might at any moment have been fired by the enemy. It was entirely due to his valour and decisive action that this important bridge across the canal was saved from destruction.''

SERGEANT GEORGE HARRY MULLIN, V.C., M.M.

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

"For most conspicuous bravery in attack [October 30th, 1917, at Passchendaele], when, single-handed, he captured a commanding 'pill-box,' which had withstood the heavy bombardment and was causing heavy casualties to our forces and holding up the attack. He rushed a sniper's post in front, destroyed the garrison with bombs, and, crawling on to the top of the 'pill-box,' he shot the two machine gunners with his revolver. Sergeant Mullin then rushed to another entrance and compelled the garrison of ten to surrender.

"His gallantry and fearlessness were witnessed by many and, although rapid fire was directed upon him, and his clothes were riddled by bullets, he never faltered in his purpose and not only helped to save the situation, but also indirectly saved many lives."

PRIVATE CLAUDE JOSEPH PATRICK NUNNEY, V.C., D.C.M., M.M.

Late 38th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery during the operations against the Drocourt-Quéant Line on the 1st and 2nd of September, 1918.

"On the 1st of September, when his battalion was in the vicinity of Vis-en-Artois, preparatory to the advance, the enemy laid down a heavy barrage and counter-attacked. Private Nunney, who was at this time at Company Headquarters, immediately, on his own initiative, proceeded through the barrage to the company outpost lines, going from post to post and encouraging the men by his own fearless example. The enemy were repulsed and a critical situation was saved. During the attack on the 2nd of September his dash continually placed him in advance of his companions and his fearless example undoubtedly helped greatly to carry the company forward to its objectives. He displayed throughout the highest degree of valour until severely wounded. [Private Nunney died of his wounds in a clearing station on September 18th.]"

CAPTAIN CHRISTOPHER PATRICK JOHN O'KELLY, V.C., M.C.

52nd Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery in an action [October 26th, 1917, south-west of Passchendaele] in which he led his company with extraordinary skill and determination.

"After the original attack had failed and two companies of his unit had launched a new attack, Captain O'Kelly advanced his command over one thousand yards under heavy fire without any artillery barrage, took the enemy positions on the crest of the hill by storm, and then personally organized and led a series of attacks against 'pill-boxes,' his company alone capturing six of them, with one hundred prisoners and ten machine guns. Later on in the afternoon, under the leadership of this gallant officer, his company repelled a strong counter-attack, taking more prisoners, and subsequently, during the night, captured a hostile raiding party consisting of one officer, ten men, and a machine gun. The whole of these achievements were chiefly due to the magnificent courage, daring, and ability of Captain O'Kelly."

PRIVATE MICHAEL JAMES O'ROURKE, V.C.

7th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty during prolonged operations.

"For three days and nights [August 15th-17th, 1917, at Hill 60, near Lens] Private O'Rourke, who is a stretcher-bearer, worked unceasingly in bringing the wounded into safety, dressing them and getting them food and water. During the whole period the area in which he worked was subjected to very severe shelling and swept by heavy machine-gun and rifle fire. On several occasions he was knocked down and partially buried by enemy shells. Seeing a comrade who had been blinded stumbling around ahead of our trench, in full view of the enemy, who were sniping him, Private O'Rourke jumped out of his trench and brought the man back, being himself heavily sniped while doing so. Again he went forward about fifty yards in front of our barrage under very heavy and accurate fire from enemy machine guns and snipers, and brought in a comrade. On a subsequent occasion, when the line of advanced posts was retired to the line to be consolidated, he went forward under very heavy enemy fire of every description and brought back a wounded man who had been left behind. He showed throughout an absolute disregard for his own safety, going wherever there were wounded to succour, and his magnificent courage and devotion in continuing his rescue work, in spite of exhaustion and the incessant heavy enemy fire of every description, inspired all ranks and undoubtedly saved many lives."

PRIVATE JOHN GEORGE PATTISON, V.C.

50th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery in attack.

"When the advance of our troops [April 10th, 1917, at Vimy Ridge] was held up by an enemy machine gun, which was inflicting severe casualties, Private Pattison, with utter disregard of his own safety, sprang forward and, jumping from shell hole to shell hole, reached cover within thirty yards of the enemy gun. From this point, in face of heavy fire, he hurled bombs, killing and wounding some of the crew, then rushed forward, overcoming and bayoneting the surviving five gunners. His valour and initiative undoubtedly saved the situation, and made possible the further advance to the objective.''

MAJOR (afterwards Lieut.-Colonel) GEORGE RANDOLPH PEARKES, V.C., D.S.O., M.C.

5th Canadian Mounted Rifles

''For most conspicuous bravery and skilful handling of the troops under his command during the capture and consolidation of considerably more than the objectives allotted to him, in an attack [October 30th-31st, 1917, near Passchendaele].

''Just prior to the advance Major Pearkes was wounded in the left thigh. Regardless of his wound, he continued to lead his men with the utmost gallantry, despite many obstacles. At a particular stage of the attack, his further advance was threatened by a strong point, which was an objective of the battalion on his left, but which they had not succeeded in capturing. Quickly appreciating the situation, he captured and held this point, thus enabling his further advance to be successfully pushed forward. It was entirely due to his determination and fearless personality that he was able to maintain his objective with the small number of men at his command against repeated enemy counter-attacks, both his flanks being unprotected for a considerable depth meanwhile. His appreciation of the situation throughout and the report rendered by him were invaluable to his commanding officer in making dispositions of troops to hold the position captured. He showed throughout a supreme contempt of danger and wonderful powers of control and leading.''

Lieut.-Colonel Cyrus Wesley Peck, V.C., D.S.O., M.P.

16th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and skilful leading when in attack under intense fire [September 2nd, 1918, at Cagnicourt].

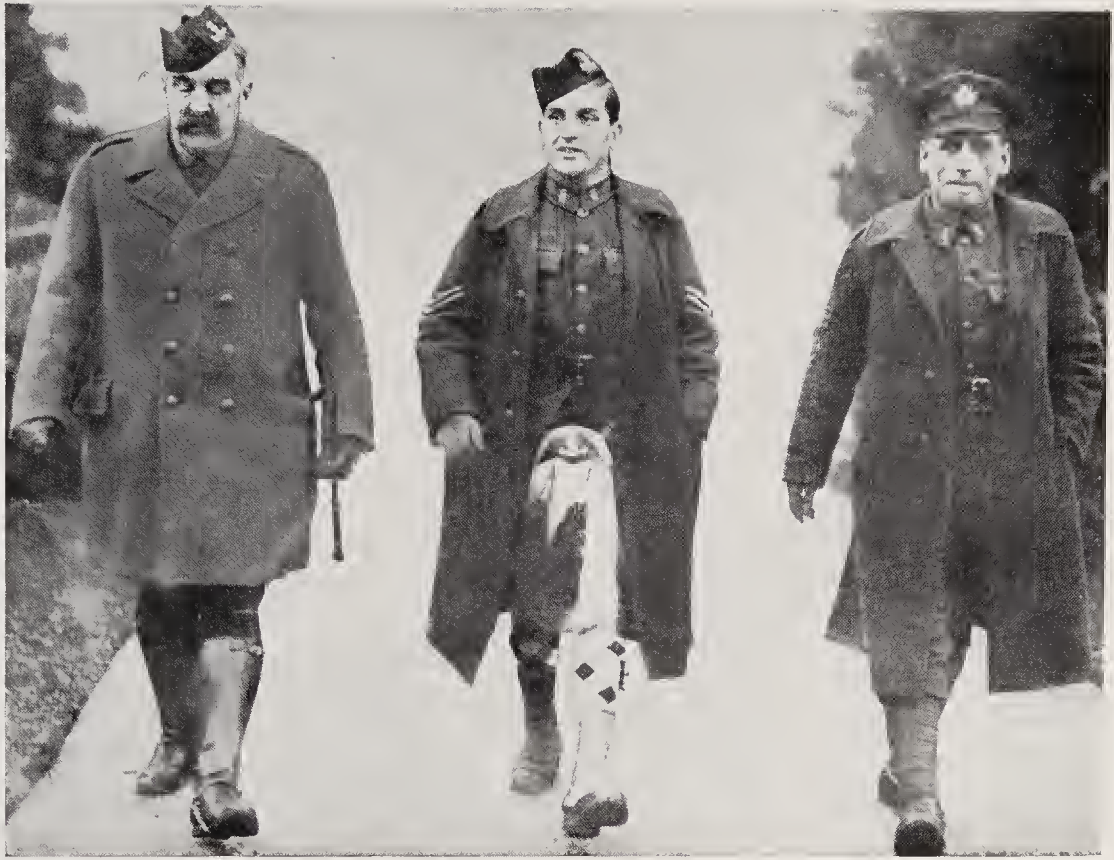
"His command quickly captured the first objective, but progress to the further objective was held up by enemy machine-gun fire on his right flank. The situation being critical in the extreme, Colonel Peck rushed forward and made a personal reconnaissance under heavy machine-gun and sniping fire, across a stretch of ground which was heavily swept by fire. Having reconnoitred the position, he returned, reorganized his battalion, and, acting upon the knowledge personally gained, pushed them forward and arranged to protect his flanks. He then went out under the most intense artillery and machine-gun fire, intercepted the tanks, gave them the necessary directions, pointing out where they were to make for, and thus pave the way for a Canadian infantry battalion to push forward. To this battalion he subsequently gave requisite support. His magnificent display of courage and fine qualities of leadership enabled the advance to be continued, although always under heavy artillery fire, and contributed largely to the success of the brigade attack."

Private Walter Leigh Rayfield, V.C.

7th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery, devotion to duty, and initiative during the operations east of Arras, from the 2nd to the 4th of September, 1918.

"Ahead of his company, he rushed a trench occupied by a large party of the enemy, personally bayoneting two and taking ten prisoner. Later he located



LT.-COL. CYRUS W. PECK, V.C., D.S.O. AND BAR WM. H. METCALF, V.C.
SERGT. WM. MERRIFIELD, V.C., M.M.

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

and engaged with great skill, under constant rifle fire, an enemy sniper who was causing many casualties. He then rushed the section of trench from which the sniper had been operating, and so demoralized the enemy by his coolness and daring that thirty others surrendered to him. Again, regardless of his personal safety, he left cover under heavy machine-gun fire and carried in a badly wounded comrade. His indomitable courage, cool foresight, and daring reconnaissance were invaluable to his company commander and an inspiration to all ranks."

PRIVATE (PIPER) JAMES RICHARDSON, V.C.

Late 16th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty when, prior to attack [October 8th, 1916, at Regina Trench], he obtained permission from his commanding officer to play his company 'over the top.' As the company reached the objective, it was held up by very strong wire, and came under intense fire, which caused heavy casualties and demoralized the formation for the moment. Realizing the situation, Piper Richardson strode up and down outside the wire, playing his pipes with the greatest coolness. The effect was instantaneous. Inspired by his splendid example, the company rushed the wire with such fury and determination that the obstacle was overcome and the position captured. Later, after participating in bombing operations, he was detailed to take back a wounded comrade and prisoners. After proceeding about two hundred yards, Piper Richardson remembered that he had left his pipes behind. Although strongly urged not to do so, he insisted on returning to recover his pipes. He has never been seen since, and death has been presumed accordingly, owing to lapse of time."

Private James Peter Robertson, V.C.

Late 27th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and outstanding devotion to duty in attack [November 6th, 1917, at Passchendaele]. When his platoon was held up by uncut wire and a machine gun causing many casualties, Private Robertson dashed to an opening on the flank, rushed the machine gun and, after a desperate struggle with the crew, killed four and then turned the gun on the remainder, who, overcome by the fierceness of his onslaught, were running towards their own lines. His gallant work enabled the platoon to advance. He inflicted many more casualties among the enemy, and then, carrying the captured machine gun, he led his platoon to the final objective. He there selected an excellent position and got the gun into action, firing on the retreating enemy, who by this time were quite demoralized by the fire brought to bear on them. During the consolidation, Private Robertson's most determined use of the machine gun kept down the fire of the enemy snipers; his courage and his coolness cheered his comrades and inspired them to the finest efforts. Later, when two of our snipers were badly wounded in front of our trench, he went out and carried one of them in under very severe fire. He was killed just as he returned with the second man."

Lieutenant Charles Smith Rutherford, V.C., M.C., M.M.

5th Canadian Mounted Rifles

"For most conspicuous bravery, initiative, and devotion to duty. When in command of an assaulting party [August 26th, 1918, at Monchy-le-Preux], Lieutenant Rutherford found himself a considerable distance ahead of his men, and at the same moment observed a fully armed strong enemy party outside a 'pill-box' ahead of him. He beckoned to them with his revolver to come to him; in return they waved to him to come to them. This he boldly did, and informed them that they were prisoners. This fact an enemy officer disputed and invited Lieutenant Rutherford to enter the 'pill-box,' an invitation he discreetly declined. By masterly bluff, however, he persuaded the enemy that they were surrounded, and the whole party of forty-five, including two officers and three machine guns, surrendered to him. Subsequently he induced the enemy officer to stop the fire of an enemy machine gun close by, and Lieutenant Rutherford took advantage of the opportunity to hasten the advance of his men to his support. Lieutenant Rutherford then observed that the right assaulting party was held up by heavy machine-gun fire from another 'pill-box.' Indicating an objective to the remainder of his party, he attacked the 'pill-box' with a Lewis gun section and captured a further thirty-five prisoners with machine guns, thus enabling the party to continue their advance. The bold and gallant action of this officer contributed very materially to the capture of the main objective and was a wonderful inspiration to all ranks in pressing home the attack on a very strong position."

CAPTAIN (afterwards Lieut.-Colonel) FRANCIS ALEX. CARON SCRIMGER, V.C.

Medical Officer 14th Battalion

"On the afternoon of the 25th of April, 1915, in the neighbourhood of Ypres, when in charge of an advanced dressing station in some farm buildings which were being heavily shelled by the enemy, he directed, under heavy fire, the removal of the wounded, and he himself carried a severely wounded officer out of a stable in search of a place of greater safety. When he was unable alone to carry this officer further, he remained with him under fire till help could be obtained. Captain Scrimger, during the very heavy fighting between the 22nd and 25th of April, displayed continuously, day and night, the greatest devotion to his duty among the wounded at the front."

Lieutenant (afterwards Captain) Robert Shankland, V.C., D.C.M.

43rd Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and resource in action [October 26th, 1917, at Passchendaele] under critical and adverse conditions.

"Having gained a position, he rallied the remnant of his own platoon and men of other companies, disposed of them to command the ground in front, and inflicted heavy casualties upon the retreating enemy. Later he dispersed a counter-attack, thus enabling supporting troops to come up unmolested. He then personally communicated to Battalion Headquarters an accurate and valuable report as to the position of the brigade frontage, and, after doing so, rejoined his command and carried on until relieved. His courage and splendid example inspired all ranks and coupled with his great gallantry and skill undoubtedly saved a very critical situation."

Lance-Sergeant Ellis Welwood Sifton, V.C.

Late 18th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty.

"During the attack on enemy trenches [April 9th, 1917, at Neuville St. Vaast], Sergeant Sifton's company was held up by machine-gun fire, which inflicted many casualties. Having located the gun, he charged it single-handed, killing all the crew. A small enemy party advanced down the trench, but he succeeded in keeping these off till our men had gained the position. In carrying out this gallant act, he was killed, but his conspicuous valour undoubtedly saved many lives, and contributed largely to the success of the operation.''

SERGEANT ROBERT SPALL, V.C.

Late Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

''For most conspicuous bravery and self-sacrifice when, during an enemy counter-attack [August 12th-13th, 1918, near Parvillers], his platoon was isolated. Thereupon Sergeant Spall took a Lewis gun and, standing on the parapet, fired upon the advancing enemy, inflicting very severe casualties. He then came down the trench directing the men into a sap seventy-five yards from the enemy. Picking up another Lewis gun, this gallant N.C.O. again climbed the parapet, and by his fire held up the enemy. It was while holding up the enemy at this point that he was killed. Sergeant Spall deliberately gave his life in order to extricate his platoon from a most difficult situation, and it was owing to his bravery that the platoon was saved.''

LIEUTENANT (afterwards Major) HARCUS STRACHAN, V.C., M.C.

Fort Garry Horse

''For most conspicuous bravery and leadership during operations [November 20th, 1917, at Masnières].

''He took command of the squadron of his regiment when the squadron leader, approaching the enemy front line at a gallop, was killed. Lieutenant Strachan led the squadron through the enemy line of machine-gun posts, and then, with the surviving men, led the charge on the enemy battery, killing seven of the gunners with his sword. All the gunners having been killed and the battery silenced, he rallied his men and fought his way back at night through the enemy's line, bringing all unwounded men safely in, together with fifteen prisoners. The operation, which resulted in the silencing of an enemy battery, the killing of the whole battery personnel and many infantry, and the cutting of three main lines of telephone communication two miles in rear of the enemy's front line, was only rendered possible by the outstanding gallantry and fearless leading of this officer.''

Lieutenant James Edward Tait, V.C., M.C.

Late 78th Battalion

''For most conspicuous bravery and initiative in attack [August 8th-11th, 1918, near Amiens]. The advance having been checked by intense machine-gun fire, Lieutenant Tait rallied his company and led it forward with consummate skill and dash under a hail of bullets. A concealed machine gun, however, continued to cause many casualties. Taking a rifle and bayonet, Lieutenant Tait dashed forward alone and killed the enemy gunner. Inspired by his example, his men rushed the position, capturing twelve machine guns and twenty prisoners. His valorous action cleared the way for his battalion to advance. Later, when the enemy counter-attacked our positions under intense artillery bombardment, this gallant officer displayed outstanding courage and leadership and, though mortally wounded by a shell, continued to direct and aid his men until his death.''

SERGT. ROBERT E. SPALL, V.C.
Killed in action

PTE. JOHN FRANCIS YOUNG, V.C.

CORP. FREDERICK FISHER, V.C.
Killed in action

WINNERS OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

Private John Francis Young, V.C.

87th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in attack at Dury-Arras sector on the 2nd of September, 1918, when acting as stretcher-bearer attached to D Company of the 87th Battalion, Quebec regiment.

"This company, in the advance over the ridge, suffered heavy casualties from shell and machine-gun fire. Private Young, in spite of the complete absence of cover, without the least hesitation, went out, and in the open fire-swept ground dressed the wounded. Having exhausted his stock of dressings, on more than one occasion he returned, under intense fire, to his company headquarters for a further supply. This work he continued for over an hour, displaying throughout the most absolute fearlessness. To his courageous conduct must be ascribed the saving of the lives of many of his comrades. Later, when the fire had somewhat slackened, he organized and led stretcher parties to bring in the wounded whom he had dressed. All through the operations of the 2nd, 3rd, and 4th of September, Private Young continued to show the greatest valour and devotion to duty."

Sergeant Raphael Lewis Zengel, V.C., M.M.

5th Battalion

"For most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty when protecting the battalion right flank [August 9th, 1918, east of Warvillers]. He was leading his platoon gallantly forward to the attack, but had not gone far when he realized that a gap had occurred on his flank, and that an enemy machine gun was firing at close range into the advancing line. Grasping the situation, he rushed forward some two hundred yards ahead of the platoon, tackled the machine-gun emplacement, killed the officer and operator of the gun and dispersed the crew. By his boldness and prompt action, he undoubtedly saved the lives of many of his comrades. Later, when the battalion was held up by very heavy machine-gun fire, he displayed much tactical skill and directed his fire with destructive results. Shortly afterwards he was rendered unconscious for a few minutes by an enemy shell, but on recovering consciousness he at once continued to direct harassing fire on the enemy. Sergeant Zengel's work throughout the attack was excellent and his utter disregard for personal safety, and the confidence he inspired in all ranks, greatly assisted in bringing the attack to a successful end."

APPENDICES

APPENDIX I

COMMANDING OFFICERS OVERSEAS UNITS

Headquarters, France

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Headquarters Canadian Army Corps		
Lt.-Gen. Sir E. A. H. Alderson, K.C.B.	Sept. 13, '15	May 28, '16
Lt.-Gen. Hon. Sir J. H. G. Byng, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., M.V.O.	May 28, '16	June 8, '17
Lt.-Gen. Sir A. W. Currie, G.C.M.G., K.C.B.	June 9, '17	Demob.
Headquarters 1st Division		
Lt.-Gen. E. A. H. Alderson, C.B.	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 13, '15
Maj.-Gen. Sir A. W. Currie, K.C.M.G., C.B.	Sept. 13, '15	June 9, '17
Maj.-Gen. Sir A. C. Macdonell, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 9, '17	Demob.
Headquarters 2nd Division		
Maj.-Gen. Sir S. B. Steele, K.C.M.G., C.B., M.V.O.	May 25, '15	June 6, '15
Maj.-Gen. Sir R. E. W. Turner, V.C., K.C.M.G., C.B., D.S.O.	Aug. 17, '15	Dec. 15, '16
Maj-Gen. Sir H. E. Burstall, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., A.D.C.	Dec. 15, '16	Demob.
Headquarters 3rd Division		
Maj.-Gen. M. S. Mercer, C.B.	Nov. 20, '15	June 3, '16
Maj.-Gen. L. J. Lipsett, C.B., C.M.G.	June 16, '16	Sept. 13, '18
Maj.-Gen. Sir F. O. W. Loomis, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 13, '18	Demob.
Headquarters 4th Division		
Brig.-Gen. Lord Brooke, C.M.G., M.V.O.	Nov. 19, '15	May 11, '16
Maj.-Gen. Sir D. Watson, K.C.B., C.M.G.	May 11, '16	Demob.
Headquarters 5th Division (disbanded Feb. 28, '18)		
Maj.-Gen. G. B. Hughes, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '17	Feb. 28, '18

G.O.C.'s Headquarters, England

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Headquarters O. M. F. C.		
Lt.-Gen. Sir R. E. W. Turner, V.C., K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 5, '16	May 18, '18
Chief of General Staff		
Lt.-Gen. Sir R. E. W. Turner, V.C., K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.	May 18, '18	Nov. 22, '19
Canadian Training Division, Shorncliffe		
Maj.-Gen. J. C. MacDougall, C.M.G.	Sept. 1, '15	Nov. 7, '16
Brig.-Gen. E. C. Ashton	Nov. 7, '16	Apr. 1, '17
Col. F. St. D. Skinner	Apr. 1, '17	Apr. 18, '17
Brig.-Gen. C. A. Smart, C.M.G.	Apr. 18, '17	Dec. 15, '18
Canadian Training Division, Bramshott (closed and moved to Ripon, Jan. 27, '19)		
Brig.-Gen. F. S. Meighen	Aug. 10, '16	June 19, '18
Col. J. G. Rattray, C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 19, '18	June 27, '18
Brig.-Gen. J. H. Elmsley, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 27, '18	Aug. 7, '18
Col. J. G. Rattray, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Aug. 7, '18	Sept. 18, '18
Brig.-Gen. R. Rennie, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 18, '18	Feb. 21, '19
Canadian Concentration Camps, Witley and Bramshott		
Brig.-Gen. A. H. Bell, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 1, '19	Demob.
Canadian Training Division, Ripon		
Lt.-Col. Homer Dixon, D.S.O.	Jan. 23, '19	Jan. 30, '19
Brig.-Gen. R. Rennie, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 30, '19	Feb. 21, '19
Brig.-Gen. D. M. Ormond, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 21, '19	Demob.
Headquarters, Brighton (closed Jan. 2, '17)		
Maj.-Gen. J. C. MacDougall, C.M.G.	Nov. 7, '16	Dec. 21, '16
Brig.-Gen. J. P. Landry	Dec. 21, '16	Jan. 2, '17
Headquarters, Witley		
Brig.-Gen. R. G. E. Leckie, C.M.G.	Dec. 16, '16	Feb. 13, '17
Maj.-Gen. G. B. Hughes, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 13, '17	July 22, '18
Col. C. H. L. Sharman, C.B.E.	July 22, '18	July 26, '18
Brig.-Gen. F. W. Hill, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	July 27, '18	Mar. 31, '19
Headquarters, Seaford		
Lt.-Col. S. D. Gardner, M.C.	Oct. 21, '16	Aug. 22, '17
Lt.-Col. C. H. Rogers	Aug. 22, '17	Sept. 22, '17
Lt.-Col. S. D. Gardner, M.C.	Sept. 22, '17	June 13, '18
Lt.-Col. F. V. Anderson, D.S.O.	June 13, '18	June 26, '18
Lt.-Col. S. D. Gardner, C.M.G., M.C.	June 28, '18	July 18, '18

Canadian Official Photograph

MAJ.-GEN. SIR F. O. W. LOOMIS, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Lt.-Col. P. J. Daly, C.M.G., D.S.O.	July 18, '18	July 27, '18
Lt.-Col. S. D. Gardner, C.M.G., M.C.	July 27, '18	Sept. 12, '18
Brig.-Gen. H. M. Dyer, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 12, '18	Mar. 25, '19
Col. J. G. Rattray, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 25, '19	Aug. 3, '19

Headquarters, Crowborough (disbanded)

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Col. C. A. Smart	Oct. 31, '16	Apr. 16, '17
Lt.-Col. H. T. Hughes, C.M.G.	Apr. 16, '17	Apr. 22, '17
Lt.-Col. J. L. H. Bogart	Apr. 23, '17	May 1, '17
Brig.-Gen. W. St. P. Hughes, D.S.O.	May 1, '17	July 31, '17

Headquarters, Hastings

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Col. H. H. Matthews, D.S.O.	Nov. 22, '16	Sept. 6, '17
Lt.-Col. A. C. Critchley, D.S.O.	Sept. 6, '17	Sept. 16, '17

Headquarters, Bordon (disbanded)

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Brig.-Gen. C. H. MacLaren, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Nov. 4, '18	Jan. 31, '19

Headquarters, Shoreham (disbanded)

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Brig.-Gen. J. P. Landry, C.M.G.	Oct. 30, '16	Jan. 2, '17

INFANTRY BRIGADES

1st Infantry Brigade

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Brig.-Gen. M. S. Mercer, C.B.	Sept. 22, '14	Nov. 20, '15
Brig.-Gen. G. B. Hughes, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Nov. 25, '15	Feb. 13, '17
Brig.-Gen. W. A. Griesbach, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 14, '17	Feb. 15, '19
Brig.-Gen. G. E. McCuaig, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 27, '19	Demob.

2nd Infantry Brigade

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Brig.-Gen. A. W. Currie, C.B.	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 13, '15
Brig.-Gen. L. J. Lipsett, C.M.G.	Sept. 13, '15	June 16, '16
Brig.-Gen. F. O. W. Loomis, C.M.G., D.S.O	July 2, '16	Dec. 27, '17
Brig.-Gen. J. F. L. Embury, C.M.G.	Jan. 1, '18	Mar. 16, '18
Brig.-Gen. F. O. W. Loomis, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 18, '18	Sept. 13, '18
Lt.-Col. W. F. Gilson, D.S.O.	Sept. 13, '18	Oct. 6, '18
Brig.-Gen. R. P. Clark, C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	Oct. 6, '18	Demob.

3rd Infantry Brigade

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Brig.-Gen. R. E. W. Turner, V.C., C.B., D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Aug. 12, '15
Brig.-Gen. R. G. E. Leckie, C.M.G.	Aug. 12, '15	Feb. 18, '16
Brig.-Gen. F. O. W. Loomis, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 9, '16	Mar. 12, '16
Brig.-Gen. G. S. Tuxford, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 12, '16	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
4th Infantry Brigade		
Col. S. J. A. Dennison	May 15, '16	June 25, '15
Brig.-Gen. Lord Brooke, C.M.G., M.V.O.	June 25, '15	Nov. 10, '15
Brig.-Gen. R. Rennie, C.B., C.M.G., M.V.O., D.S.O.	Nov. 10, '15	Sept. 12, '18
Brig.-Gen. G. E. McCuaig, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 14, '18	Feb. 27, '19
Brig.-Gen. R. Rennie, C.B., C.M.G., M.V.O., D.S.O.	Feb. 27, '19	Demob.
5th Infantry Brigade		
Col. J. P. Landry	May 20, '15	Aug. 30, '15
Brig.-Gen. D. Watson, C.B.	Aug. 30, '15	Apr. 22, '16
Brig.-Gen. A. H. Macdonell, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 24, '16	July 23, '17
Brig.-Gen. J. M. Ross, C.M.G., D.S.O.	July 23, '17	Aug. 9, '18
Brig.-Gen. T. L. Tremblay, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Aug. 10, '18	Demob.
6th Infantry Brigade		
Brig.-Gen. H. D. B. Ketchen, C.M.G.	May 29, '15	Apr. 20, '18
Brig.-Gen. A. H. Bell, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 23, '18	Oct. 2, '18
Brig.-Gen. A. Ross, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Oct. 2, '18	Demob.
7th Infantry Brigade		
Brig.-Gen. A. C. Macdonell, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 23, '15	Feb. 20, '16
Brig.-Gen. G. S. Tuxford, C.M.G.	Mar. 11, '16	Mar. 12, '16
Brig.-Gen. F. O. W. Loomis, D.S.O.	Mar. 14, '16	May 6, '16
Brig.-Gen. A. C. Macdonell, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	May 6, '16	June 9, '17
Brig.-Gen. H. M. Dyer, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 9, '17	Sept. 12, '18
Brig.-Gen. J. A. Clark, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 12, '18	Demob.
8th Infantry Brigade		
Brig.-Gen. V. A. S. Williams	Dec. 23, '15	June 3, '16
Brig.-Gen. J. H. Elmsley, C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 15, '16	May 25, '18
Brig.-Gen. D. C. Draper, C.M.G., D.S.O.	May 25, '18	Demob.
9th Infantry Brigade		
Brig.-Gen. F. W. Hill, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 9, '16	July 21, '18
Brig.-Gen. D. M. Ormond, C.M.G., D.S.O.	July 21, '18	Feb. 21, '19
Lt.-Col. W. W. Foster, D.S.O.	Feb. 21, '19	Demob.
10th Infantry Brigade		
Col. G. S. Tuxford, C.M.G.	Jan. 11, '16	Mar. 9, '16
Lt.-Col. H. Snell	Mar. 9, '16	Apr. 14, '16
Col. F. S. Meighen	Apr. 14, '16	July 16, '16
Brig.-Gen. W. St. P. Hughes, D.S.O.	July 16, '16	Jan. 18, '17
Brig.-Gen. E. Hilliam, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 18, '17	Nov. 12, '17

Canadian Official Photograph

MAJ.-GEN. SIR DAVID WATSON, K.C.B., C.M.G.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Brig.-Gen. R. J. F. Hayter, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 4, '17	Oct. 28, '18
Brig.-Gen. J. M. Ross, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Oct. 28, '18	Demob.
11th Infantry Brigade		
Col. C. A. Smart	Jan. 9, '16	Feb. 6, '16
Brig.-Gen. F. O. W. Loomis, D.S.O.	May 16, '16	July 2, '16
Brig.-Gen. V. W. Odlum, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	July 10, '16	Demob.
12th Infantry Brigade		
Col. F. O. W. Loomis, D.S.O.	Jan. 5, '16	Mar. 9, '16
Brig.-Gen. Lord Brooke, C.M.G., M.V.O.	May 11, '16	Sept. 11, '16
Brig.-Gen. J. H. MacBrien, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 13, '16	Dec. 13, '18
Brig.-Gen. J. Kirkcaldy, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 13, '18	Demob.
13th Infantry Brigade (disbanded)		
Brig.-Gen. J. F. L. Embury, C.M.G.	Nov. 1, '16	Mar. 11, '18
14th Infantry Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. J. E. Leckie, D.S.O.	Nov. 29, '16	Jan. 3, '17
Brig.-Gen. A. E. Swift, D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '17	Mar. 11, '18
15th Infantry Brigade (disbanded)		
Brig.-Gen. E. C. Ashton	Apr. 2, '17	Nov. 6, '17
Lt.-Col. A. E. Ings	Nov. 5, '17	Nov. 17, '17
Lt.-Col. D. M. Sutherland	Nov. 19, '17	Mar. 11, '18

TRAINING BRIGADES

1st Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Col. S. M. Rogers	Sept. 15, '15	Feb. 6, '16
Col. C. A. Smart	Feb. 6, '16	Oct. 31, '16
Lt.-Col. F. W. Fisher	Oct. 31, '16	Jan. 3, '17
2nd Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Brig.-Gen. J. P. Landry	Sept. 15, '15	Oct. 31, '16
Lt.-Col. F. C. McCordick	Oct. 31, '16	Jan. 3, '17
3rd Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Col. E. C. Ashton	Sept. 15, '15	Oct. 28, '16
Lt.-Col. E. E. W. Moore	Oct. 28, '16	Jan. 4, '17
4th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Col. J. H. Cowen	Sept. 15, '15	Jan. 4, '17
5th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Col. S. M. Rogers	May 6, '16	May 10, '16
Lt.-Col. F. B. Black	May 10, '16	Oct. 7, '16
Lt.-Col. A. E. Carpenter	Oct. 7, '16	Jan. 2, '17

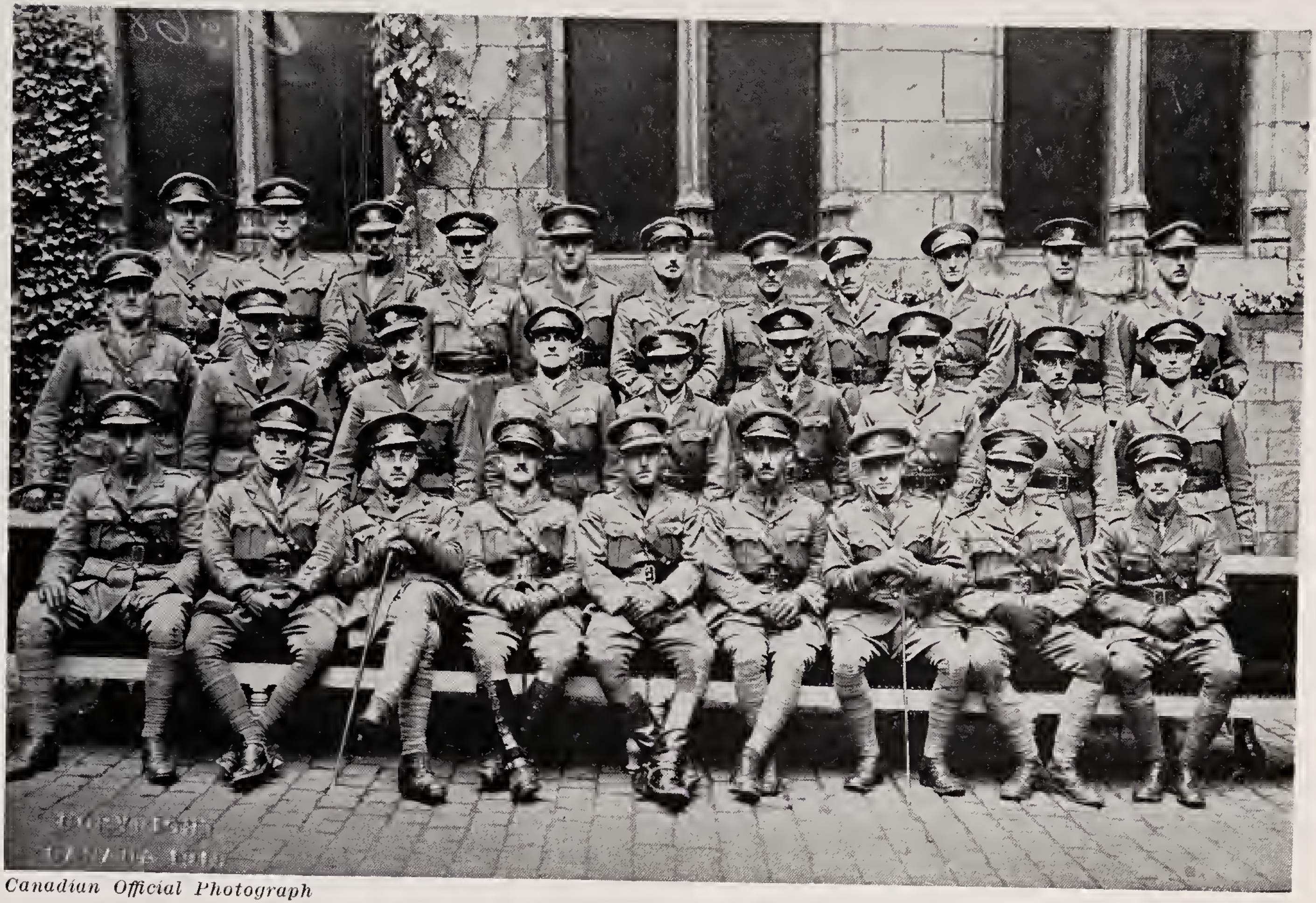
	APPOINTED	RETIRED
6th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. E. E. W. Moore	May 9, '16	Oct. 25, '16
7th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. J. W. H. McKinnery	Aug. 14, '16	Jan. 1, '17
8th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G.	Sept. 20, '16	Oct. 2, '16
Lt.-Col. A. H. Borden	Oct. 2, '16	Oct. 28, '16
Lt.-Col. M. A. Colquhoun, D.S.O.	Oct. 28, '16	Jan. 1, '17
9th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. H. Snell	Aug. 29, '16	Nov. 3, '16
Lt.-Col. J. G. Rattray, D.S.O.	Nov. 3, '16	Jan. 1, '17
10th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. J. G. Rattray, D.S.O.	Sept. 10, '16	Nov. 1, '16
Lt.-Col. J. F. L. Embury	Nov. 1, '16	Jan. 1, '17
11th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. E. F. Mackie, D.S.O.	Oct. 4, '16	Nov. 3, '16
Lt.-Col. A. E. Swift	Nov. 3, '16	Jan. 1, '17
12th Training Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. J. Stanfield	Oct. 22, '16	Jan. 1, '17
Bramshott Training Brigade (absorbed in C.T.D.)		
Col. F. S. Meighen	July 16, '16	Aug. 10, '16

Reserve Brigades

1st Reserve Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. E. E. W. Moore	Jan. 2, '17	Apr. 6, '17
Lt.-Col. W. S. Buell	Apr. 6, '17	Apr. 20, '17
Col. M. A. Colquhoun, D.S.O.	Apr. 20, '17	Apr. 15, '18
2nd Reserve Brigade (disbanded)		
Col. J. E. Leckie, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 2, '17	Apr. 15, '18
3rd Reserve Brigade		
Col. S. D. Gardner, M.C.	Jan. 2, '17	Aug. 22, '17

(See Headquarters, Seaford, for continuation.)

4th Reserve Brigade		
Brig.-Gen. J. P. Landry, C.M.G.	Jan. 2, '17	
5th Reserve Brigade (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Gunn, D.S.O.	Jan. 2, '17	Feb. 21, '18
Lt.-Col. H. S. Tobin	Feb. 21, '18	Apr. 15, '18
6th Reserve Brigade (disbanded)		
Col. J. G. Rattray, D.S.O.	Jan. 2, '17	Apr. 15, '18



Canadian Official Photograph

OFFICERS OF THE ROYAL CANADIAN REGIMENT, 1918

INFANTRY BATTALIONS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
P.P.C.L.I.		
Lt.-Col. F. D. Farquhar, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Mar. 21, '15
Lt.-Col. H. C. Buller	Mar. 21, '15	May 5, '15
Lt.-Col. R. T. Pelly, D.S.O.	May 15, '15	Dec. 7, '15
Lt.-Col. H. C. Buller, D.S.O.	Dec. 7, '15	June 17, '16
Lt.-Col. A. A. M. Adamson, D.S.O.	June 17, '16	Aug. 3, '16
Lt.-Col. R. T. Pelly, D.S.O.	Aug. 3, '16	Oct. 31, '16
Lt.-Col. A. A. M. Adamson, D.S.O.	Oct. 31, '16	Mar. 27, '18
Lt.-Col. C. J. T. Stewart, D.S.O.	Mar. 27, '18	Sept. 28, '18
Capt. J. Edgar, M.C.	Sept. 28, '18	Sept. 29, '18
Capt. G. W. Little	Sept. 29, '18	Oct. 16, '18
Lt.-Col. A. G. Pearson, D.C.M.	Oct. 16, '18	Demob.
Royal Canadian Regiment		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Carpenter	Aug. 26, '15	Nov. 26, '15
Lt.-Col. A. H. Macdonell, D.S.O.	Nov. 26, '15	Apr. 20, '16
Lt.-Col. C. H. Hill, D.S.O.	Apr. 20, '16	Oct. 20. '16
Lt.-Col. C. R. E. Willets, D.S.O.	Oct. 20, '16	Apr. 7, '18
Lt.-Col. C. H. Hill. D.S.O.	Apr. 7, '18	July 4, '18
Lt.-Col. C. R. E. Willets, D.S.O.	July 4, '18	Oct. 14, '18
Lt.-Col. G. W. McLeod, D.S.O.	Oct. 14, '18	Demob.
1st Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. F. W. Hill, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Jan. 17, '16
Lt.-Col. F. A. Creighton	Jan. 24, '16	June 16, '16
Lt.-Col. G. C. Hodson, D.S.O.	June 27, '16	Aug. 17, '17
Lt.-Col. A. W. Sparling, D.S.O.	Aug. 17, '17	Demob.
2nd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. D. Watson	Sept. 22, '14	Aug. 26, '15
Lt.-Col. A. E. Swift, D.S.O.	Aug. 26, '15	Oct. 26, '16
Major W. M. Yates	Oct. 26, '16	Dec. 20, '16
Lt.-Col. R. P. Clark, M.C.	Jan. 10, '17	May 12, '17
Lt.-Col. L. T. McLaughlin, D.S.O.	May 12, '17	Aug. 30, '18
Major R. Vanderwater, D.S.O.	Aug. 30, '18	Oct. 10, '18
Lt.-Col. L. T. McLaughlin	Oct. 10, '18	Demob.
3rd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. R. Rennie, M.V.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Nov. 10, '15
Lt.-Col. W. D. Allan, D.S.O.	Nov. 10, '15	Sept. 5, '16
Lt.-Col. J. B. Rogers, C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	Oct. 1, '16	Demob.
4th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. R. H. Labatt	Sept. 22, '14	Feb. 26, '15
Lt.-Col. A. B. Birchall	Feb. 26, '15	Apr. 24, '15
Lt.-Col. J. B. Rogers	Apr. 29, '15	May 14, '15
Lt.-Col. R. H. Labatt	May 14, '15	June 7, '15
Lt.-Col. M. A. Colquhoun, D.S.O.	June 7, '15	June 3, '16
Lt.-Col. W. Rae, D.S.O.	June 25, '16	June 2, '17
Lt.-Col. A. T. Thomson, D.S.O., M.C.	June 2, '17	Nov. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. L. H. Nelles, D.S.O., M.C.	Nov. 20, '17	Aug. 9, '18
Maj. G. G. Blackstock	Aug. 10, '18	Sept. 4, '18
Lt.-Col. L. H. Nelles, D.S.O., M.C.	Sept. 4, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
5th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. S. Tuxford	Sept. 22, '15	Jan. 11, '16
Lt.-Col. H. M. Dyer, D.S.O.	Jan. 11, '16	June 29, '17
Lt.-Col. L. P. O. Tudor, D.S.O.	June 29, '17	Mar. 8, '18
Lt.-Col. L. L. Crawford, D.S.O.	Mar. 8, '18	Apr. 4, '18
Lt.-Col. L. P. O. Tudor, D.S.O.	Apr. 4, '18	Demob.
6th Infantry Battalion (See Fort Garry Horse)		
7th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. Hart McHarg	Sept. 22, '14	Apr. 29, '15
Lt.-Col. V. W. Odlum, D.S.O.	Apr. 29, '15	July 10, '16
Lt.-Col. S. D. Gardner	July 20, '16	Oct. 9, '16
Lt.-Col. W. F. Gilson, D.S.O.	Oct. 9, '16	Demob.
8th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. L. J. Lipsett, C.M.G.	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 13, '15
Lt.-Col. H. H. Matthews, D.S.O.	Sept. 28, '15	June 18, '16
Lt.-Col. K. C. Bedson	July 14, '16	Aug. 3, '16
Lt.-Col. J. M. Prower, D.S.O.	Aug. 3, '16	Apr. 20, '18
Lt.-Col. T. H. Raddall, D.S.O.	Apr. 20, '18	Aug. 9, '18
Lt.-Col. A. L. Saunders, D.S.O., M.C.	Aug. 13, '18	Demob.
9th Infantry Battalion (Reserves)		
Lt.-Col. S. M. Rogers	Sept. 22, '14	May 4, '15
Lt.-Col. E. E. W. Moore	May 8, '15	Apr. 25, '16
Lt.-Col. E. B. Clegg	Apr. 25, '16	Jan. 2, '17
(See Reserve Battalions for continuation.)		
10th Infantry Brigade		
Lt.-Col. R. L. Boyle	Sept. 22, '14	Apr. 25, '15
Lt.-Col. J. G. Rattray, D.S.O.	June 1, '15	Sept. 10, '16
Lt.-Col. D. M. Ormond, D.S.O.	Sept. 25, '16	May 24, '18
Lt.-Col. E. W. McDonald, D.S.O., M.C.	May 24, '18	Demob.
11th Infantry Battalion (Reserves)		
Lt.-Col. R. Burritt	Sept. 22, '14	Aug. 23, '15
Lt.-Col. A. Dulmage	Aug. 23, '15	Sept. 15, '15
Lt.-Col. A. E. Carpenter	Nov. 26, '15	Apr. 27, '16
Lt.-Col. P. Walker	May 8, '16	Jan. 4, '17
(See Reserve Battalions for continuation.)		
12th Infantry Battalion (Reserves)		
Lt.-Col. H. F. McLeod	Sept. 22, '14	Feb. 2, '15
Lt.-Col. F. A. Howard	June 2, '15	Sept. 15, '15
Lt.-Col. H. F. McLeod	Sept. 15, '15	July 6, '16
Lt.-Col. R. Pellatt	Sept. 19, '16	Jan. 4, '17
(See Reserve Battalions for continuation.)		
13th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. F. O. W. Loomis, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Jan. 5, '16
Lt.-Col. V. C. Buchanan, D.S.O.	Jan. 5, '16	Sept. 26, '16

LT.-COL. GAULT McCOMBE, D.S.O.
LT.-COL. J. B. ROGERS, C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C. WITH BAR
LT.-COL. L. G. CASEWELL, M.C.
LT.-COL. C. H. VANDERSLUYS, M.C.

TYPES OF CANADIAN BATTALION COMMANDERS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Lt.-Col. G. E. McCuaig, D.S.O.	Sept. 27, '16	Dec. 6, '17
Lt.-Col. K. M. Perry, D.S.O.	Dec. 20, '17	Apr. 1, '18
Lt.-Col. C. E. McCuaig, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 1, '18	Sept. 14, '18
Maj. J. M. R. Sinclair, D.S.O., M.C.	Sept. 14, '18	Oct. 14, '18
Lt.-Col. K. M. Perry, D.S.O.	Oct. 14, '18	Feb. 28, '19
Maj. J. M. R. Sinclair, D.S.O., M.C.	Feb. 28, '19	Demob.
14 Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. F. S. Meighen	Sept. 22, '14	June 19, '15
Lt.-Col. W. W. Burland, D.S.O.	June 19, '15	July 29, '15
Lt.-Col. F. W. Fisher	July 29, '15	Mar. 18, '16
Lt.-Col. R. P. Clark, M.C.	Mar. 19, '16	Jan. 15, '17
Lt.-Col. Gault McCombe, D.S.O.	Jan. 15, '17	Apr. 19, '18
Lt.-Col. D. Warrall, D.S.O., M.C.	Apr. 19, '18	Demob.
15th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Currie	Sept. 22, '14	June 28, '15
Lt.-Col. W. B. Marshall, D.S.O.	June 28, '15	May 19, '16
Lt.-Col. C. E. Bent, D.S.O.	May 20, '16	Dec. 29, '17
Lt.-Col. J. W. Forbes, D.S.O.	Dec. 29, '17	Apr. 15, '18
Lt.-Col. C. E. Bent, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 15, '18	Aug. 10, '18
Lt.-Col. J. P. Girvan, D.S.O., M.C.	Aug. 10, '18	Oct. 3, '18
Lt.-Col. C. E. Bent, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Oct. 3, '18	Demob.
16th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. R. G. E. Leckie, C.M.G.	Sept. 22, '14	Aug. 12, '15
Lt.-Col. J. E. Leckie, D.S.O.	Aug. 12, '15	Nov. 13, '16
Lt.-Col. C. W. Peck, V.C., D.S.O.	Nov. 13, '16	Jan. 3, '19
Maj. J. Hope, D.S.O.	Jan. 3, '19	Mar. 28, '19
Lt.-Col. J. A. Scroggie, M.C.	Mar. 28, '19	Demob.
17th Infantry Battalion (Reserves)		
Lt.-Col. S. G. Robertson	Sept. 22, '14	Jan. 30, '15
Lt.-Col. E. B. Worthington	Jan. 30, '15	Sept. 1, '15
Lt.-Col. D. D. Cameron	Sept. 1, '15	Jan. 4, '17
(See Reserve Battalions for continuation.)		
18th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. E. W. S. Wigle	Apr. 18, '15	July 8, '16
Lt.-Col. H. L. Milligan, D.S.O.	July 8, '16	Oct. 9, '16
Lt.-Col. G. F. Morrison, D.S.O.	Oct. 9, '16	Apr. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. L. E. Jones, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 19, '17	Demob.
19th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. I. McLaren	May 22, '15	July 18, '16
Lt.-Col. W. R. Turnbull	July 18, '16	Dec. 30, '16
Lt.-Col. J. H. Millen	Dec. 30, '16	Feb. 15, '18
Lt.-Col. H. C. Hatch, D.S.O.	Feb. 15, '18	June 22, '18
Lt.-Col. L. H. Millen, D.S.O.	June 22, '18	Demob.
20th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. A. W. Allan	May 24, '15	Aug. 21, '15
Lt.-Col. C. H. Rogers	Aug. 21, '15	Nov. 20, '16
Lt.-Col. H. V. Rorke, D.S.O.	Dec. 4, '16	June 27, '18
Lt.-Col. B. O. Hooper, D.S.O., M.C.	July 26, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
21st Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. St. P. Hughes	May 6, '15	July 18, '16
Lt.-Col. E. W. Jones, D.S.O.	July 18, '16	Jan. 7, '17
Lt.-Col. T. F. Elmitt	Jan. 7, '17	July 1, '17
Lt.-Col. E. W. Jones, D.S.O.	July 1, '17	Aug. 8, '18
Lt.-Col. H. E. Pense, D.S.O., M.C.	Aug. 8, '18	Demob.
22nd Infantry Battalion		
Col. F. M. Gaudet	May 20, '15	Jan. 25, '16
Lt.-Col. T. L. Tremblay, D.S.O.	Jan. 25, '15	Sept. 25, '16
Lt.-Col. A. E. Dubuc, D.S.O.	Oct. 24, '16	Feb. 5, '17
Lt.-Col. T. L. Tremblay, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 15, '17	Aug. 8, '18
Lt.-Col. A. E. Dubuc, D.S.O.	Aug. 9, '18	Aug. 27, '18
Maj. G. P. Vanier, M.C.	Aug. 27, '18	Aug. 28, '18
Maj. G. E. A. Dupuis, M.C.	Aug. 28, '18	Sept. 10, '18
Lt.-Col. M. J. R. H. DesRosiers	Sept. 10, '18	Demob.
23rd Infantry Battalion (Reserves)		
Lt.-Col. F. W. Fisher	Mar. 8, '15	July 4, '15
Lt.-Col. F. C. Bowen	July 4, '15	Apr. 22, '16
Maj. D. A. McKay	Apr. 22, '16	July 12, '16
Lt.-Col. C. F. Bick	July 12, '16	Sept. 6, '16

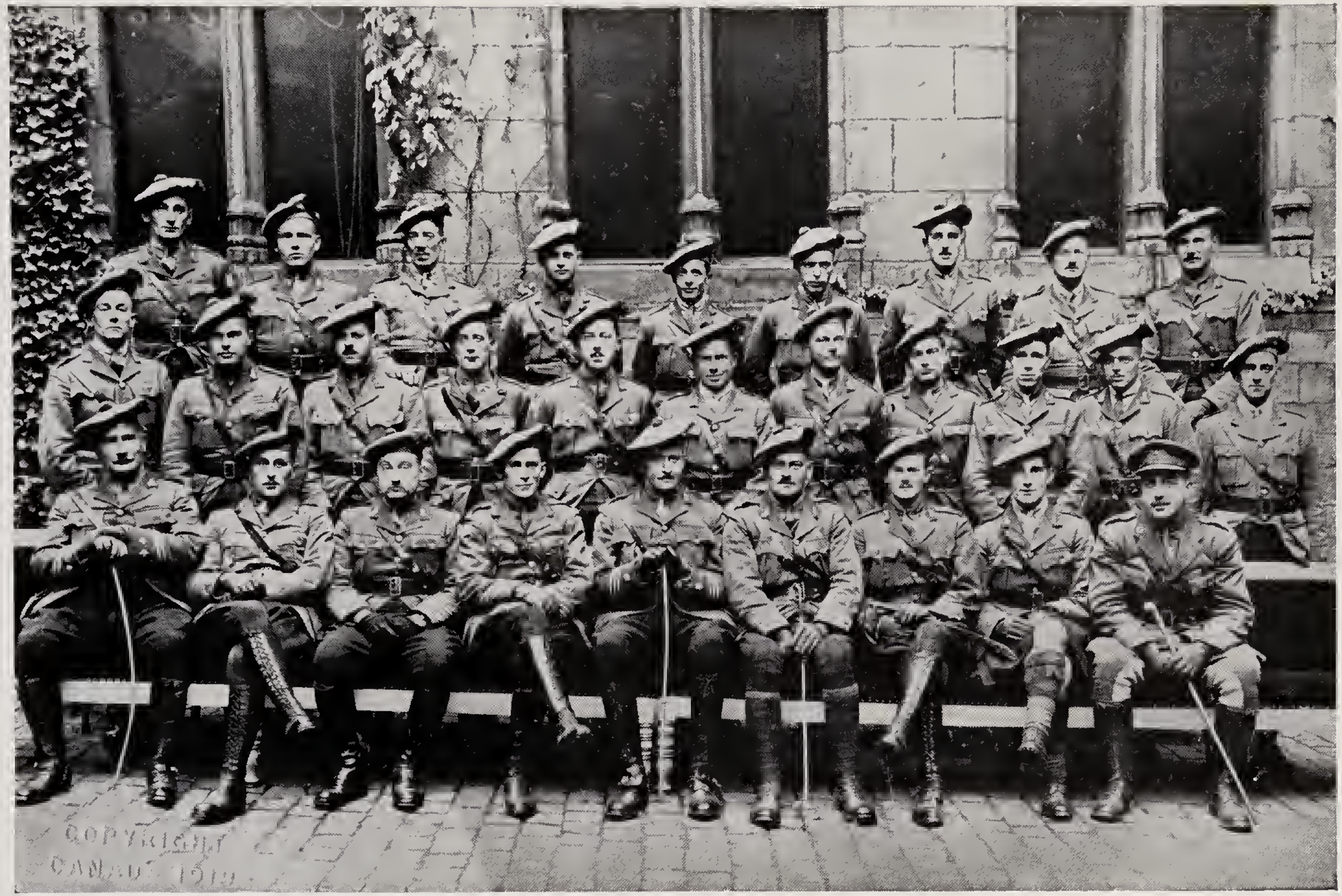
(See Reserve Battalions for continuation.)

24th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Gunn, D.S.O.	May 11, '15	Oct. 31, '16
Lt.-Col. R. O. Alexander, D.S.O.	Nov. 1, '16	Dec. 7, '16
Lt.-Col. C. F. Ritchie	Dec. 7, '16	Apr. 14, '17
Lt.-Col. R. O. Alexander, D.S.O.	Apr. 14, '17	Aug. 4, '17
Lt.-Col. C. F. Ritchie, M.C.	Aug. 4, '17	Jan. 22, '18
Lt.-Col. W. H. Clark-Kennedy, V.C., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '18	Aug. 28, '18
Lt.-Col. C. F. Ritchie, D.S.O., M.C.	Sept. 5, '18	Demob.
25th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. A. LeCain	May 20, '15	Oct. 26, '15
Lt.-Col. E. Hilliam	Oct. 26, '15	Jan. 18, '17
Maj. J. A. De Lancy, M.C.	Jan. 18, '17	Apr. 4, '17
Lt.-Col. D. S. Bauld, D.S.O.	Apr. 4, '17	July 9, '17
Lt.-Col. A. S. Blois, D.S.O.	July 9, '17	Apr. 19, '18
Lt.-Col. J. W. Wise, D.S.O., M.C.	Apr. 19, '18	Aug. 8, '18
Lt.-Col. F. P. Day	Aug. 9, '18	Oct. 13, '18
Lt.-Col. C. J. Mersereau, D.S.O.	Oct. 13, '18	Demob.
26th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. L. McAvity	June 15, '15	May 29, '16
Lt.-Col. A. E. G. McKenzie, D.S.O.	May 29, '16	July 2, '17
Lt.-Col. W. R. Brown, D.S.O.	July 2, '17	Oct. 4, '17
Lt.-Col. A. E. G. McKenzie, D.S.O.	Oct. 4, '17	Sept. 29, '18
Maj. C. G. Porter, D.S.O.	Aug. 28, '18	Sept. 5, '18
Lt.-Col. W. R. Brown, D.S.O.	Sept. 5, '18	Demob.
27th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. R. Snider	May 17, '15	Apr. 15, '16
Lt.-Col. G. J. Daly, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 15, '16	Apr. 4, '18
Lt.-Col. H. J. Riley, D.S.O.	Apr. 4, '18	Demob.

LT.-COL. E. DUBUC, D.S.O. AND BAR, CHEVALIER DE LA LEGION D'HONNEUR

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
28th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. F. L. Embury, C.M.G.	May 29, '15	Sept. 17, '16
Lt.-Col. A. Ross, D.S.O.	Sept. 17, '16	Oct. 1, '18
Maj. G. F. D. Bond, M.C.	Oct. 2, '18	Nov. 6, '18
Maj. A. F. Simpson, D.S.O.	Nov. 6, '18	Dec. 16, '18
Lt.-Col. D. E. MacIntyre, D.S.O., M.C.	Dec. 16, '18	Demob.
29th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. H. S. Tobin	May 20, '15	July 20, '16
Lt.-Col. J. S. Tait	Aug. 20, '16	Sept. 10, '16
Lt.-Col. J. M. Ross	Sept. 10, '16	Dec. 16, '16
Lt.-Col. J. S. Tait	Dec. 16, '16	Jan. 22, '17
Lt.-Col. J. M. Ross, D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '17	July 23, '17
Lt.-Col. W. S. Latta, D.S.O.	July 23, '17	Aug. 16, '18
Maj. L. A. Wilmott, M.C.	Aug. 16, '18	Sept. 5, '18
Lt.-Col. H. S. Tobin, D.S.O.	Sept. 5, '18	Demob.
30th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 1st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Hall	Feb. 26, '15	June 9, '15
Lt.-Col. C. F. De Salis	June 10, '15	Nov. 6, '15
Lt.-Col. S. Booth	Nov. 7, '15	Jan. 2, '17
31st Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. A. H. Bell, D.S.O.	May 29, '15	Apr. 23, '18
Lt.-Col. E. S. Doughty, D.S.O.	Apr. 23, '18	Oct. 6, '18
Lt.-Col. N. Spencer, D.S.O.	Oct. 6, '18	Demob.
32nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. J. Cowan	Mar. 7, '15	Sept. 15, '15
Lt.-Col. C. D. Macpherson	Sept. 15, '15	Aug. 1, '16
Lt.-Col. F. J. Clarke	Aug. 2, '16	Jan. 2, '17
33rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 36th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. Wilson	Mar. 17, '16	June 2, '16
Maj. A. E. Bywater	June 2, '16	Aug. 2, '16
34th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 36th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. J. Oliver	Oct. 23, '15	July 6, '16
35th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. C. McCordick	Oct. 16, '15	Oct. 24, '16
Maj. F. C. Dunham	Oct. 24, '16	Jan. 4, '17
36th Infantry Battalion (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. E. C. Ashton	Aug. 16, '15	Sept. 15, '15
Maj. A. N. Ashton	Sept. 15, '15	Apr. 24, '16
Lt.-Col. W. S. Buell	Apr. 24, '16	Jan. 2, '17
37th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 39th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. F. Bick	Nov. 28, '15	July 6, '16

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
38th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. C. M. Edwards, D.S.O.	May 30, '16	Apr. 9, '17
Maj. R. F. Parkinson, D.S.O.	Apr. 23, '17	June 1, '17
Lt.-Col. C. M. Edwards, D.S.O.	June 1, '17	Jan. 8, '18
Maj. S. English	Jan. 8, '18	Mar. 16, '18
Maj. R. F. Parkinson, D.S.O.	Mar. 17, '18	June 17, '18
Col. H. C. Sparling, D.S.O.	June 17, '18	July 17, '18
Lt.-Col. C. M. Edwards, D.S.O.	July 17, '18	Sept. 10, '18
Lt.-Col. S. D. Gardner, C.M.G., M.C.	Sept. 10, '18	Sept. 28, '18
Lt.-Col. A. D. Cameron, M.C.	Sept. 29, '18	Demob.
39th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. A. V. Preston	June 24, '15	Jan. 4, '17
40th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. G. Vincent	Oct. 18, '15	Jan. 4, '17
41st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. L. H. Archambeault	Oct. 18, '15	Apr. 4, '16
42nd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. S. Cantlie	June 10, '15	Dec. 24, '16
Maj. R. L. H. Ewing	Dec. 24, '16	Jan. 2, '17
Maj. S. C. Norsworthy	Jan. 2, '17	Apr. 6, '17
Lt.-Col. B. McLennan, D.S.O.	Apr. 6, '17	Aug. 3, '18
Lt.-Col. R. L. H. Ewing, D.S.O., M.C.	Aug. 3, '18	Demob.
43rd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. R. McD. Thomson	June 1, '15	Oct. 8, '16
Lt.-Col. W. Grassie, D.S.O.	Oct. 9, '16	Nov. 4, '17
Lt.-Col. W. K. Chandler	Nov. 4, '17	Dec. 23, '17
Lt.-Col. H. M. Urquhart, D.S.O., M.C.	Dec. 23, '17	Aug. 16, '18
Lt.-Col. W. K. Chandler, D.S.O.	Aug. 16, '18	Demob.
44th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. E. R. Wayland	Oct. 22, '15	Dec. 11, '16
Lt.-Col. J. H. Sills	Dec. 27, '15	Jan. 16, '17
Lt.-Col. R. D. Davies, D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '17	Demob.
45th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. J. Clarke	Mar. 17, '16	July 13, '16
46th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. H. Snell	Oct. 22, '15	Aug. 29, '16
Lt.-Col. H. J. Dawson, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Aug. 29, '16	Demob.
47th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. N. Winsby	Nov. 13, '15	Apr. 24, '17
Lt.-Col. M. J. Francis	Apr. 24, '17	Dec. 14, '17
Lt.-Col. R. H. Webb, M.C.	Dec. 14, '17	Apr. 24, '18
Lt.-Col. H. L. Keegan, D.S.O.	Apr. 24, '18	Demob.

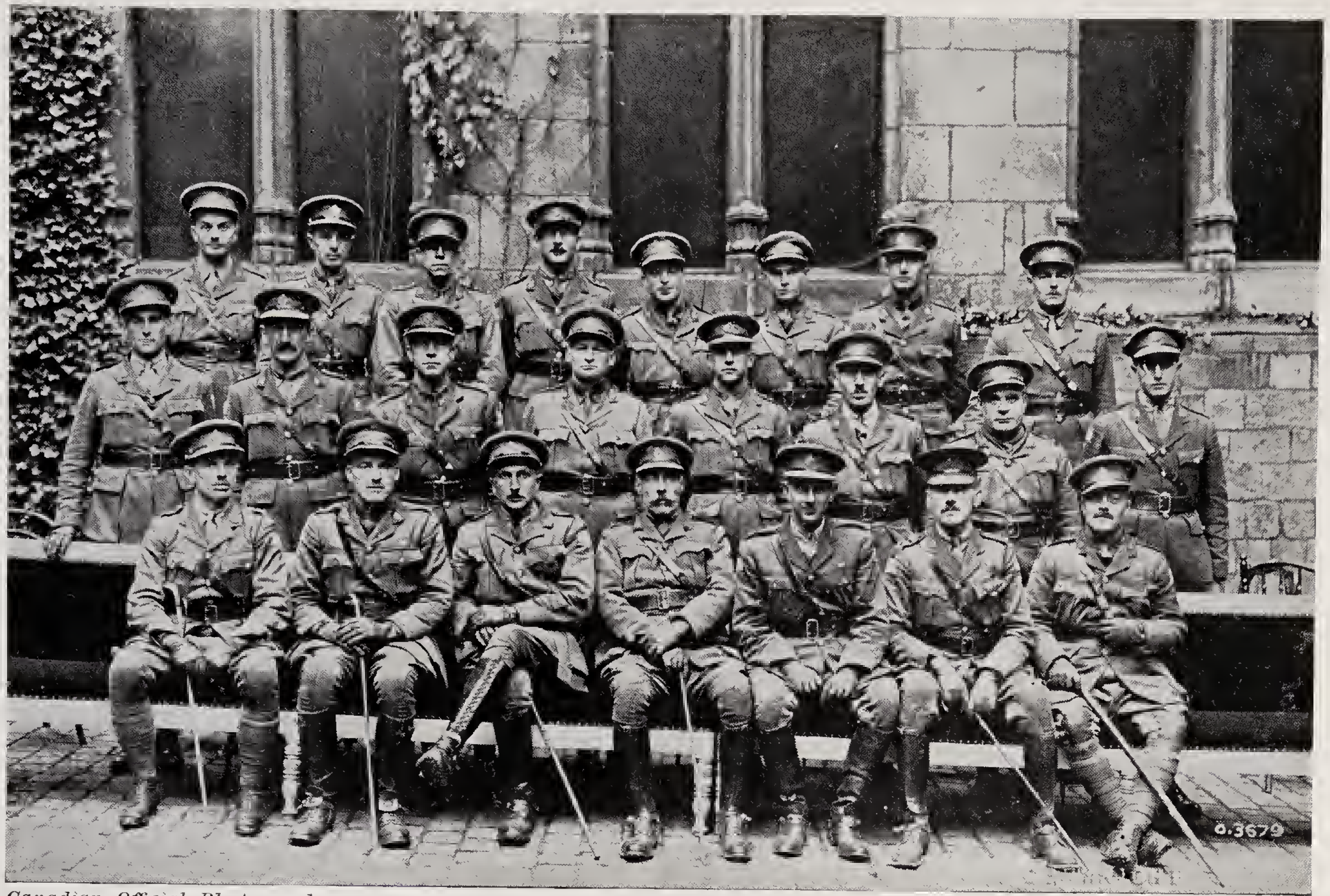


Canadian Official Photograph

OFFICERS OF THE 42ND BATTALION, 1918

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
48th Infantry Battalion (See 3rd Pioneer Battalion)		
49th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. A. Griesbach, D.S.O.	June 4, '15	Feb. 11, '17
Lt.-Col. R. H. Palmer, D.S.O.	Feb. 14, '17	July 1, '18
Lt.-Col. C. Y. Weaver, D.S.O.	July 1, '18	Oct. 1, '18
Lt.-Col. R. H. Palmer, D.S.O.	Oct. 2, '18	Demob.
50th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. E. G. Mason	Oct. 27, '15	Nov. 11, '16
Maj. R. B. Eaton	Nov. 11, '16	Jan. 1, '17
Maj. C. B. Worsnop, D.S.O.	Jan. 1, '17	Mar. 11, '17
Lt.-Col. L. F. Page, D.S.O.	Mar. 11, '17	Demob.
51st Infantry Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. R. de L. Harwood	Apr. 19, '16	July 10, '16
Maj. W. J. Shortreed	July 10, '16	Sept. 20, '16
Lt.-Col. W. T. Stewart	Sept. 20, '16	
52nd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. A. W. Hay	Nov. 23, '15	June 3, '16
Lt.-Col. D. M. Sutherland	July 27, '16	Sept. 25, '16
Lt.-Col. W. B. Evans, D.S.O.	Sept. 25, '16	July 11, '17
Maj. E. A. C. Wilcox	July 11, '17	Aug. 4, '17
Lt.-Col. W. W. Foster, D.S.O.	Aug. 4, '17	Sept. 24, '18
Lt.-Col. D. M. Sutherland, D.S.O.	Sept. 24, '18	Oct. 9, '18
Lt.-Col. W. W. Foster, D.S.O.	Oct. 9, '18	Demob.
53rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. M. Dennistoun	Apr. 1, '16	Aug. 1, '16
54th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. A. G. H. Kemball, C.B., D.S.O.	Nov. 22, '15	Mar. 1, '17
Lt.-Col. V. V. Harvey, D.S.O.	Mar. 2, '17	Aug. 24, '17
Lt.-Col. A. B. Carey, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Aug. 24, '17	Demob.
55th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 40th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. R. Kirkpatrick	Oct. 30, '15	May 5, '16
Maj. H. I. Jones	May 5, '16	May 13, '16
56th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 9th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. C. G. Armstrong	Apr. 1, '16	July 6, '16
57th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Reserve Battalion)		
Reinforcements only under Maj. A. L. H. Renaud. Left Canada, June 2, '16		
58th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. H. A. Genet, D.S.O.	Nov. 22, '15	Jan. 11, '18
Lt.-Col. R. A. McFarlane, D.S.O.	Jan. 12, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
59th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 39th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. J. Dawson	Apr. 1, '16	Aug. 11, '16
60th Infantry Battalion (withdrawn from France)		
Lt.-Col. F. A. de L. Gascoigne	Nov. 6, '15	June 6, '17
61st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. J. Murray	Apr. 1, '16	July 6, '17
62nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 30th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. H. D. Hulme	Apr. 1, '16	July 6, '16
63rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 9th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. B. McLeod	Apr. 25, '16	July 6, '16
64th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 40th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. M. Campbell	Apr. 1, '16	July 6, '16
65th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 51st Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. N. Lang	June 20, '16	Sept. 25, '16
66th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 9th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. W. H. McKinery	May 1, '16	Aug. 14, '16
67th Infantry Battalion (See 4th Pioneer Battalion)		
68th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 32nd Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. T. E. Perrett	May 1, '16	July 6, '16
69th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Dansereau	Apr. 19, '16	Jan. 4, '17
70th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 39th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. I. Towers	Apr. 25, '16	July 6, '16
71st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 51st Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. M. Sutherland	Apr. 1, '16	June 4, '16
Lt.-Col. A. J. McCausland	June 4, '16	July 19, '16
Maj. J. C. Massie	July 19, '16	Sept. 1, '16
Maj. J. A. C. Makins	Sept. 1, '16	Sept. 28, '16
72nd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Clark, D.S.O.	Apr. 25, '16	Sept. 12, '18
Lt.-Col. G. H. Kirkpatrick, D.S.O.	Sept. 12, '18	Demob.

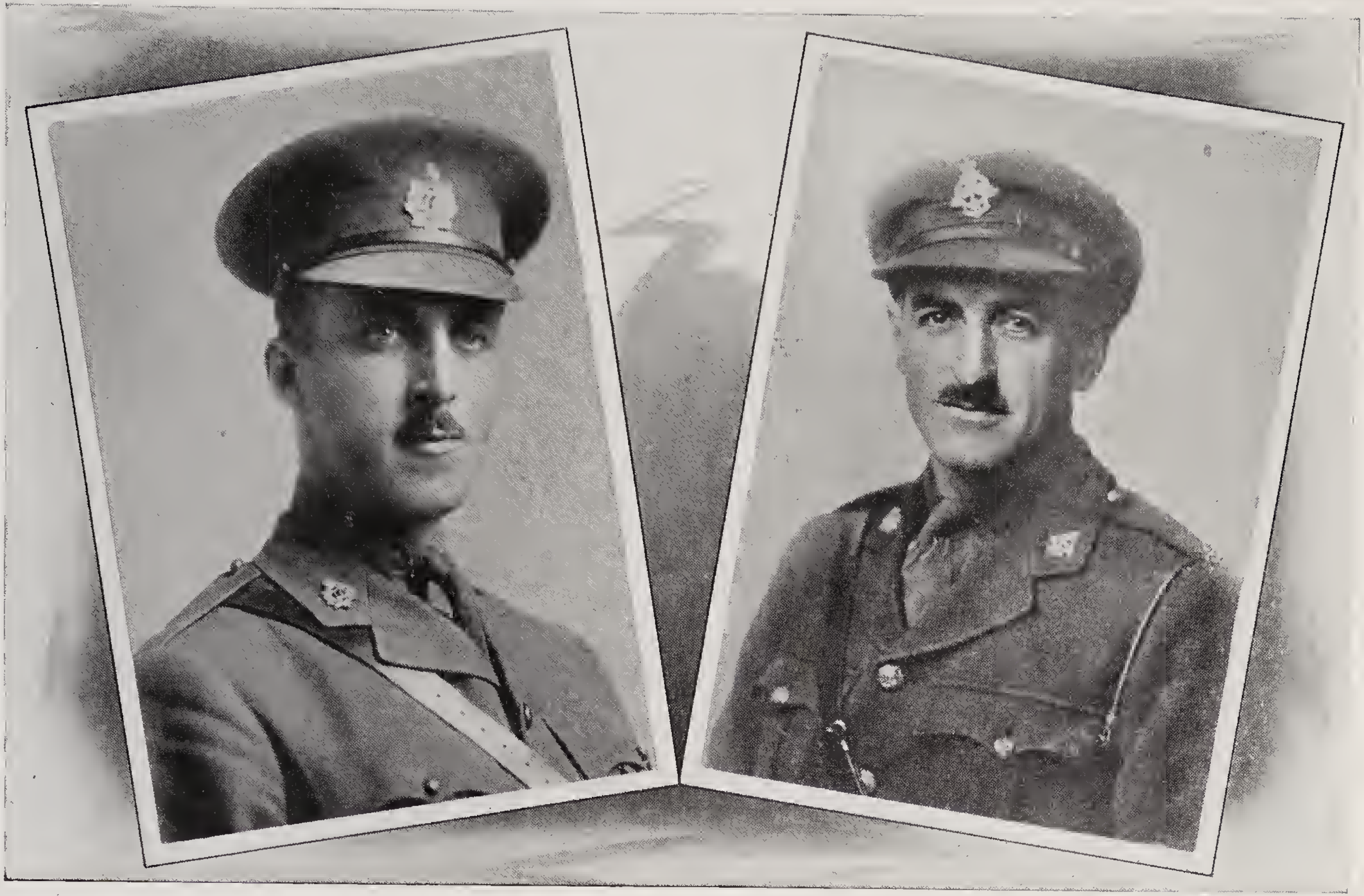


Canadian Official Photograph

OFFICERS OF THE 49TH BATTALION, 1918

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
73rd Infantry Battalion (withdrawn from France)		
Lt.-Col. P. Davidson	Apr. 1, '16	Dec. 12, '16
Lt.-Col. H. C. Sparling, D.S.O.	Dec. 12, '16	Apr. 19, '17
74th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 51st Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. J. McCausland	Mar. 27, '16	June 4, '16
Lt.-Col. D. M. Sutherland	June 4, '16	July 18, '16
Lt.-Col. A. J. McCausland	July 19, '16	Sept. 25, '16
75th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. S. G. Beckett	Apr. 1, '16	Mar. 1, '17
Lt.-Col. C. B. Worsnop, D.S.O.	Mar. 11, '17	Apr. 16, '17
Lt.-Col. C. C. Harbottle, D.S.O.	Apr. 16, '17	Demob.
76th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 36th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. Ballantine, D.S.O.	Apr. 25, '16	July 9, '16
77th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 51st Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. R. Street	June 19, '16	Sept. 13, '16
78th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. Kirkcaldy, D.S.O.	May 22, '16	Nov. 15, '17
Lt.-Col. J. N. Semmens	Nov. 16, '17	Mar. 19, '18
Lt.-Col. J. Kirkcaldy, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 19, '18	Demob.
79th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. Clingan	Apr. 25, '16	July 12, '16
80th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 51st Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. G. Ketcheson	May 22, '16	Sept. 25, '16
81st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 35th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. B. H. Belson	May 1, '16	July 5, '16
82nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 9th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. A. Lowry	May 5, '16	July 18, '16
83rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. Pellatt	May 1, '16	Aug. 17, '16
84th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 51st Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. T. Stewart	June 20, '16	Sept. 20, '16
85th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. A. H. Borden	Oct. 12, '16	July 6, '17
Maj. J. L. Ralston, D.S.O.	July 31, '17	Sept. 11, '17

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Lt.-Col. A. H. Borden	Sept. 11, '17	Apr. 26, '18
Lt.-Col. J. L. Ralston, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Apr. 26, '18	Oct. 23, '18
Maj. J. M. Miller, D.S.O., M.C.	Oct. 23, '18	Nov. 19, '18
Lt.-Col. J. L. Ralston, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Nov. 19, '18	Demob.
86th Infantry Battalion (Machine Gun Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. W. Stewart. See M. G. Depot.		
87th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. P. Rexford	Apr. 25, '16	July 22, '16
Lt.-Col. R. W. Frost, D.S.O.	July 27, '16	Mar. 24, '17
Maj. H. LeR. Shaw	Mar. 24, '17	May 8, '17
Lt.-Col. J. V. P. O'Donahoe, D.S.O.	May 8, '17	Apr. 4, '18
Maj. J. S. Ralston, M.C.	Apr. 5, '18	May 5, '18
Lt.-Col. K. M. Perry, D.S.O.	May 5, '18	Oct. 14, '18
Lt.-Col. F. S. Meighen, C.M.G.	Oct. 14, '18	May 7, '19
Lt.-Col. R. Bickerdike, D.S.O.	May 7, '19	Demob.
88th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. J. R. Cullin	June 2, '16	July 18, '16
89th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 9th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. W. Nasmyth	June 2, '16	Aug. 1, '16
90th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. A. Munro	June 2, '16	July 19, '16
91st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. J. Green	June 28, '16	July 15, '16
92nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 5th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. T. Chisholm	May 20, '16	Jan. 4, '17
93rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 39th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. T. J. Johnston	Sept. 19, '16	Oct. 6, '16
94th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 32nd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. A. C. Machin	June 28, '16	July 18, '16
95th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 5th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. K. Barker	June 2, '16	Dec. 22, '16
96th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 92nd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. Glenn	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 8, '16



MAJOR D. J. O'DONAHOE, D.S.O.,
CROIX DE GUERRE

LT.-COL. J. V. O'DONAHOE, D.S.O.
Died of wounds in France

SOLDIER BROTHERS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
97th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. L. Jolly	Sept. 18, ’16	Dec. 24, ’16
98th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. A. Rose	July 8, ’16	Oct. 6, ’16
99th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. T. B. Welch	June 2, ’16	July 5, ’16
100th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. B. Mitchell	Sept. 18, ’16	Jan. 4, ’17
101st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. McLean	June 28, ’16	Aug. 21, ’16
102nd Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. W. Warden, D.S.O.	June 18, ’16	Jan. 11, ’18
Lt.-Col. F. Lister, C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	Jan. 11, ’18	Sept. 27, ’18
Lt.-Col. E. J. W. Ryan, D.S.O.	Sept. 28, ’18	Nov. 19, ’18
Lt.-Col. F. Lister, C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	Nov. 19, ’18	Demob.
103rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 16th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. E. C. J. Henniker	July 23, ’16	Nov. 7, ’16
104th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 13th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. W. Fowler	June 28, ’16	Jan. 22, ’17
Lt.-Col. A. E. Ings	Jan. 22, ’17	Mar. 2, ’18
105th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 104th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Ings	July 15, ’16	Jan. 22, ’17
106th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 40th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. Innes	July 15, ’16	Oct. 5, ’16
107th Infantry Battalion (See 107th Pioneer Battalion)		
108th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 14th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. H. Bradbury	Sept. 18, ’16	Dec. 15, ’16
109th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. J. H. Fee	July 23, ’16	Nov. 15, ’16
Col. J. Ballantine, D.S.O.	Nov. 15. ’16	

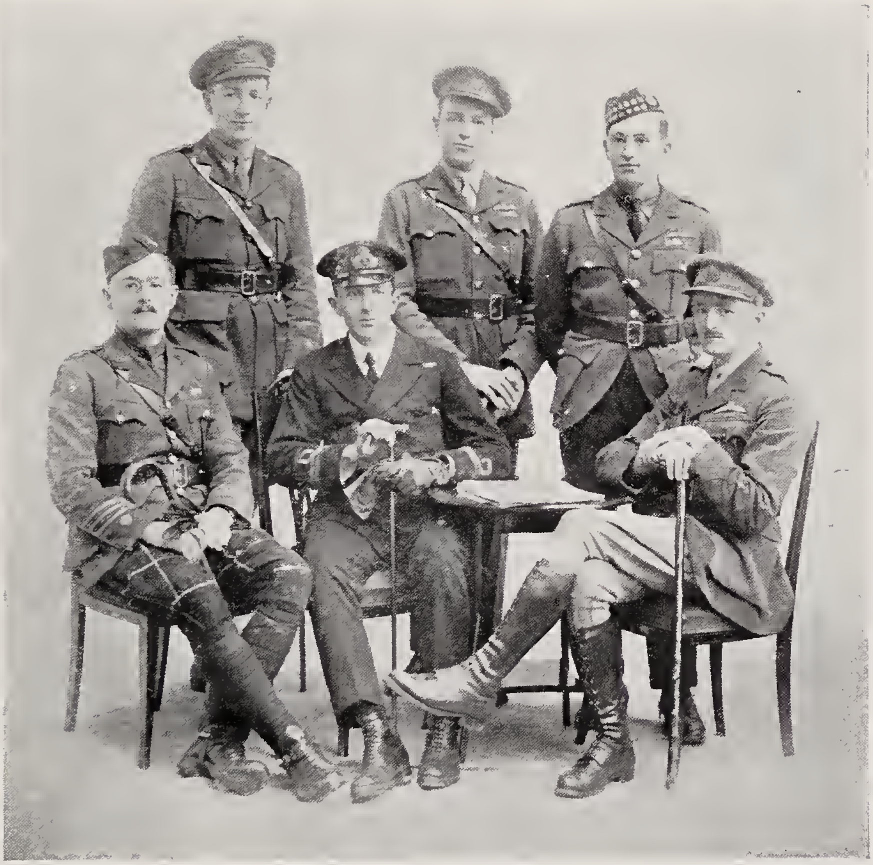
	APPOINTED	RETIRED
110th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. L. Youngs	Oct. 31, '16	Jan. 2, '17
111th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 35th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. D. Clarke	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 13, '16
112th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 26th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. B. Tremaine	July 23, '16	Dec. 4, '16
113th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. W. Pryce Jones	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 8, '16
114th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 36th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. T. Thompson	Oct. 31, '16	Nov. 11, '16
115th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 13th and 17th Reserve Battalions)		
Lt.-Col. F. V. Wedderburn	July 23, '16	
116th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. S. S. Sharpe	July 23, '16	Dec. 28, '17
Lt.-Col. G. R. Pearkes, V.C., M.C.	Dec. 28, '17	Sept. 17, '18
Lt.-Col. D. Carmichael, D.S.O., M.C.	Sept. 18, '18	Nov. 25, '18
Lt.-Col. G. R. Pearkes, V.C., D.S.O., M.C.	Nov. 25, '18	Demob.
117th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 23rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. L. J. Gilbert	Aug. 14, '16	Jan. 6, '17
118th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 23rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. M. O. Lochead	Jan. 23, '17	
119th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. T. P. T. Rowland	Aug. 8, '16	Mar. 1, '18
120th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 2nd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. G. Fearman	Aug. 14, '16	Jan. 22, '17
121st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 16th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. W. McLelan	Aug. 14, '16	Jan. 10, '17
123rd Infantry Battalion (see 123rd Pioneer Battalion)		
124th Infantry Battalion (see 124th Pioneer Battalion)		

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
125th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. M. E. B. Cutcliffe	Aug. 6, '16	Apr. 16, '18
126th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. J. Hamilton	Aug. 14, '16	
127th Infantry Battalion (renamed 2nd Battalion Railway Troops)		
128th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. Pawlett	Aug. 15, '16	May 27, '17
129th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. E. S. Knowles	Aug. 23, '16	Dec. 24, '16
130th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. E. de Hertel	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 6, '16
131st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 30th Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. D. Taylor	Oct. 31, '16	Jan. 5, '17
132nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 13th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. W. Mersereau	Oct. 26, '16	Jan. 20, '17
133rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. C. Pratt	Oct. 30, '16	Nov. 11, '16
134th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. A. Miller	Aug. 8, '16	Feb. 28, '16
135th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. B. Robson	Aug. 23, '16	Dec. 24, '16
136th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. W. Smart	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 6, '16
137th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. W. Morfitt	Aug. 23, '16	Jan. 10, '17
138th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. Belcher	Aug. 23, '16	

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
139th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Floyd	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 6, '16
140th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 13th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. L. H. Beer	Oct. 6, '16	Nov. 2, '16
141st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 18th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. C. McKenzie	Apr. 29, '17	
142nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 23rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. M. R. Graham	Nov. 11, '16	Nov. 11, '16
143rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 1st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. B. Powley	Feb. 17, '17	
144th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 18th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. W. Morley	Sept. 18, '16	Jan. 12, '17
145th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. E. Forbes	Oct. 1, '16	Oct. 26, '16
146th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. A. Low	Sept. 25, '16	Oct. 6, '16
147th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. F. McFarland	Nov. 13, '16	Jan. 1, '17
148th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 20th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. A. Magee	Oct. 6, '16	Jan. 8, '17
149th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. W. MacVicar	Mar. 28, '17	
150th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. Barre	Oct. 6, '16	Feb. 28, '18
151st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th and 21st Reserve Battalions)		
Lt.-Col. J. W. Arnott	Oct. 3, '16	Oct. 26, '16
152nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. S. B. Nelles	Oct. 3, '16	Oct. 21, '16

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
153rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. T. Pritchard	Mar. 29, '17	
154th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. G. F. MacDonald	Oct. 25, '16	Jan. 4, '17
155th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. M. K. Adams	Oct. 17, '16	Jan. 17, '17
156th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. T. C. D. Bedell	Oct. 17, '16	Mar. 14, '17
Lt.-Col. C. M. R. Graham	Mar. 14, '17	Feb. 27, '18
157th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. H. MacLaren	Oct. 17, '16	Dec. 24, '16
158th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 1st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. Milne	Nov. 13, '16	Jan. 7, '17
159th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. E. F. Armstrong	Oct. 31, '16	Jan. 7, '17
160th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. Weir	Oct. 17, '16	May 6, '17
Lt.-Col. D. M. Sutherland	May 6, '17	Dec. 1, '17
Maj. A. M. Moffatt	Dec. 1, '17	Feb. 23, '18
161st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. B. Combe	Oct. 30, '16	May 16, '17
Lt.-Col. R. Murdie, D.S.O.	June 28, '17	Feb. 23, '18
162nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 34th and 4th Battalions)		
Lt.-Col. J. M. Arthurs	Oct. 31, '16	Jan. 4, '17
163rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. DesRosiers	Nov. 27, '16	Jan. 2, '17
164th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. P. Domville	Apr. 22, '17	June 19, '17
Lt.-Col. B. M. Green	June 19, '17	Apr. 16, '18
165th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by Canadian Forestry Corps)		
Lt.-Col. L. C. D'Aigle	Mar. 28, '17	

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
166th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. G. Mitchell	Oct. 12, '16	Jan. 4, '17
168th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th and 6th Reserve Battalions)		
Lt.-Col. W. K. McMullen	Oct. 30, '16	Jan. 4, '17
169th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 5th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. C. Wright	Oct. 17, '16	Jan. 7, '17
170th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. Le Grand Reed	Oct. 25, '16	Jan. 1, '17
171st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 20th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. Sir Wm. Price	Nov. 23, '16	Jan. 7, '17
172nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 24th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. R. Vicars	Oct. 25, '16	Jan. 1, '17
173rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 2nd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Bruce	Nov. 13, '16	Jan. 4, '17
174th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. F. Osler	Apr. 29, '17	
175th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. N. Spencer	Oct. 4, '17	
176th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. Sharpe	Apr. 29, '17	
178th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Reserve Battalion)		
Drafts only		
179th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 14th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. Y. Reid	Oct. 3, '16	Jan. 4, '17
180th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. H. Greer	Nov. 13, '16	Jan. 6, '17
181st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 18th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. W. Beaubier	Apr. 18, '17	



STANDING: LIEUT. ÆNEAS McB. BELL-IRVING; MAJOR M. McB. BELL-IRVING, D.S.O., M.C., R.F.C.; MAJOR A. D. BELL-IRVING, M.C. AND BAR, CROIX DE GUERRE WITH PALM.

SEATED: MAJOR R. O. G. BELL-IRVING, D.S.O., M.C. (Killed in action); LIEUT. H. B. BELL-IRVING, D.S.C. AND BAR; LT.-COL. R. BELL-IRVING, O.B.E.

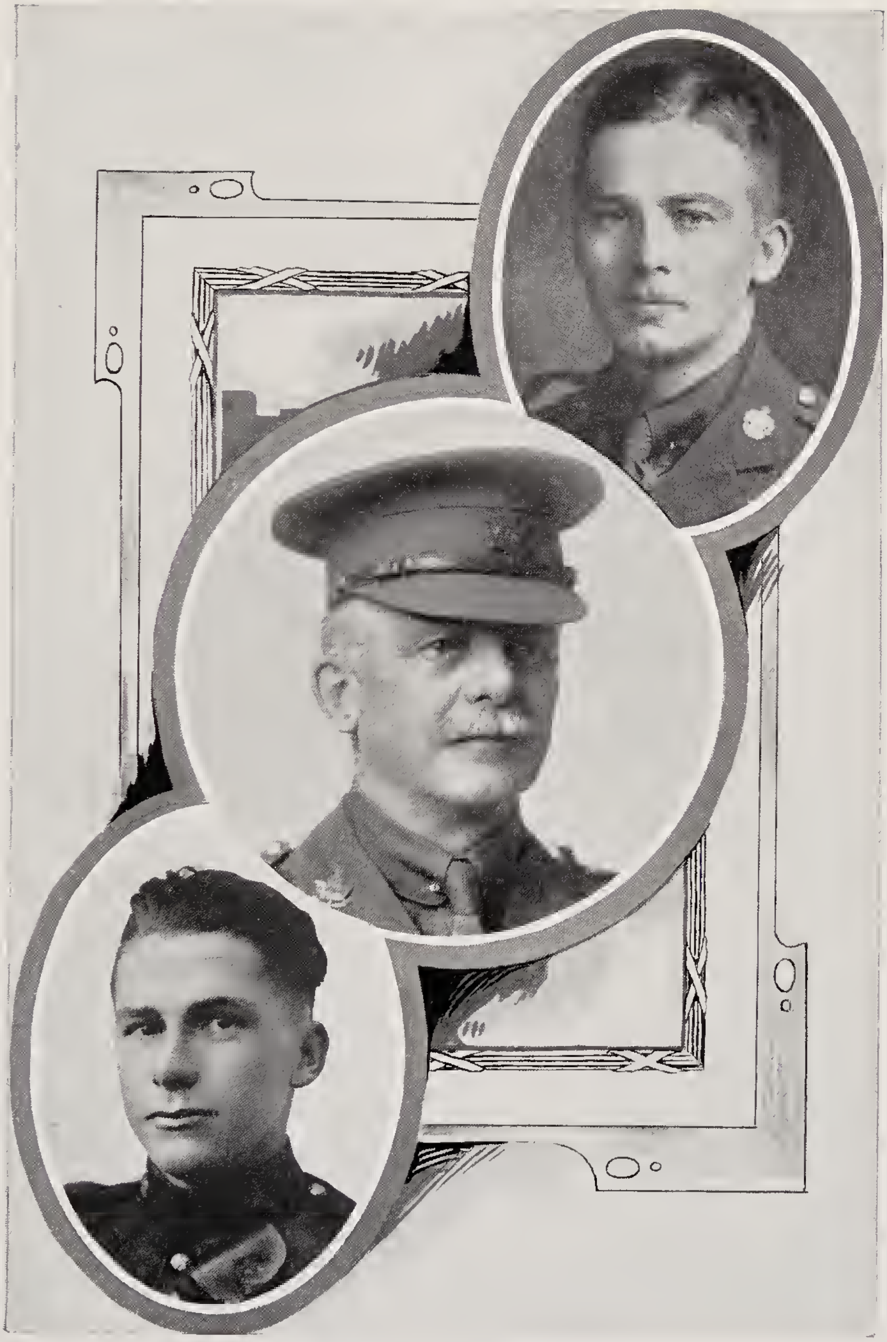
SOLDIER BROTHERS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
183rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by Manitoba Regiment)		
Lt.-Col. W. T. Edgecombe	Oct. 3, '16	
184th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Sharpe	Oct. 31, '16	Nov. 12, '16
185th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. P. Day	Oct. 12, '16	Feb. 23, '18
186th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. Smith Neil	Mar. 28, '17	
187th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. W. Robinson	Dec. 16, '16	Jan. 22, '17
188th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. S. J. Donaldson	Oct. 12, '16	Jan. 4, '17
189th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 10th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. P. A. Puize	Oct. 6, '16	Oct. 6, '16
191st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Drafts only		
192nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. E. Lyon	Nov. 1, '16	Nov. 11, '16
193rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. J. S. Langford	Oct. 12, '16	Jan. 19, '17
194th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. C. Craig	Nov. 13, '16	
195th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 32nd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. C. Garner	Oct. 31, '16	Dec. 22, '16
196th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 19th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. S. MacKay	Nov. 11, '16	Dec. 31, '16
197th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Drafts only.		

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
198th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. A. Cooper	Mar. 28, '17	Feb. 28, '18
199th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 23rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. J. Trihey	Dec. 26, '16	Jan. 10, '17
Lt.-Col. J. V. O'Donahoe	Jan. 10, '17	Apr. 11, '17
200th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. L. Bonnycastle	Apr. 3, '17	
202nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 9th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. P. E. Bowen	Nov. 23, '16	Apr. 27, '17
203rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 18th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. E. Hansford	Oct. 26, '16	Jan. 12, '17
204th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Price	Mar. 28, '17	
205th Infantry Battalion		
Drafts only.		
206th Infantry Battalion		
Drafts only.		
207th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. W. McLean	June 2, '17	
208th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 2nd and 8th Reserve Battalions)		
Lt.-Col. T. H. Lennox	Apr. 3, '17	June 20, '17
Lt.-Col. W. P. Malone	June 20, '17	Jan. 11, '18
209th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 21st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. O. Smyth	Oct. 31, '16	Dec. 5, '16
210th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 5th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. E. Seaborn	Apr. 11, '17	
211th Infantry Battalion (part of 8th Brigade Troops, March 15, '17)		
213th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Drafts only.		

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
214th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. H. Hearn	Apr. 18, '17	
215th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. E. Snider	Apr. 29, '17	
216th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. L. Burton	Apr. 18, '17	
217th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. B. Gillis	June 2, '17	
218th Infantry Battalion (See 8th Brigade Battery Troops)		
Lt.-Col. J. K. Cornwall	Feb. 17, '17	Feb. 27, '17
219th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Muirhead	Oct. 12, '16	Jan. 23, '17
220th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. B. H. Brown	Jan. 26, '17	
221st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. V. A. V. McMeans	Apr. 18, '17	
222nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 19th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. Lightfoot	Nov. 13, '16	Dec. 31, '16
223rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Maj. H. M. Hannesson	May 3, '17	
224th Infantry Battalion (Forestry)		
225th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 1st Reserve Battalion)		
Drafts only.		
226th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 14th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. R. A. Gillespie	Dec. 26, '16	Jan. 4, '17
228th Infantry Battalion (renamed 6th Battalion Railway Troops)		
229th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. H. D. Pickett	Apr. 4, '17	

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
230th Infantry Battalion (Forestry)		
Lt.-Col. R. De Salaberry	Jan. 23, '17	
231st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 1st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. F. E. Leach	Apr. 11, '17	
234th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. O. Morris	Apr. 18, '17	
235th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 3rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. S. B. Scobell	May 3, '17	
236th Infantry Battalion		
Lt.-Col. P. A. Guthrie	May 13, '16	Feb. 28, '18
238th Infantry Battalion (Forestry)		
Lt.-Col. W. R. Smyth	Sept. 13, '16	
239th Infantry Battalion (Renamed 3rd Battalion Railway Troops)		
240th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. E. J. Watt	May 3, '17	
241st Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. L. McGregor	Apr. 29, '17	
242nd Infantry Battalion (Forestry)		
Lt.-Col. J. B. White	Nov. 23, '16	
243rd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Maj. G. G. Smith	June 2, '17	
245th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 23rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. C. C. Ballantyne	May 3, '17	
246th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. N. H. Parsons	June 2, '17	
248th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 7th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. J. H. Rorke	June 2, '17	
252nd Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Maj. G. J. Thomson	June 2, '17	
254th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. P. Allan	June 2, '17	



LT.-COL. W. J. OSBORNE

SIGNALLER J. G. OSBORNE

CAPT. H. P. OSBORNE
Killed in action

SOLDIER FATHER AND SOLDIER SONS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
255th Infantry Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. C. Royce	June 6, '17	
256th Infantry Battalion (renamed 10th Battalion Railway Troops)		
257th Infantry Battalion (renamed 7th Battalion Railway Troops)		

Reserve Battalions

1st Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. H. D. Hulme	Jan. 2, '17	May 21, '17
Lt.-Col. G. S. Pragnell	May 21, '17	July 6, '17
Maj. J. L. R. DeMorinni	July 6, '17	July 31, '17
Lt.-Col. G. S. Pragnell	July 31, '17	Feb. 23, '18
Lt.-Col. C. B. Worsnop, D.S.O.	Feb. 23, '18	Demob.
2nd Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 8th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Bruce	Jan. 2, '17	June 1, '17
Lt.-Col. W. C. Towers	June 1, '17	Feb. 15, '18
3rd Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. S. Buell	Jan. 2, '17	Demob.
4th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. F. C. McCordick	Jan. 2, '17	Jan. 22, '18
Lt.-Col. H. A. Genet, D.S.O.	Jan. 23, '18	Apr. 24, '18
Maj. L. B. Unwin	Apr. 24, '18	May 17, '18
Lt.-Col. C. H. Rogers	May 17, '18	Demob.
5th Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 12th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. T. Chisholm	Jan. 2, '17	June 8, '17
Lt.-Col. J. D. McCrimmon	June 8, '17	Feb. 16, '18
6th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. M. A. Colquhoun, D.S.O.	Jan. 2, '17	Apr. 24, '17
Lt.-Col. A. C. Pratt	Apr. 24, '17	June 5, '17
Maj. C. R. Cameron	June 5, '17	
7th Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 6th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Carpenter	Jan. 1, '17	June 4, '17
Maj. D. A. Clarke, M.C.	June 4, '17	Feb. 15, '18
8th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. F. McFarland	Jan. 2, '17	June 12, '17
Lt.-Col. H. D. L. Gordon, D.S.O.	June 12, '17	July 22, '17
Maj. G. D. Fleming	July 22, '17	Sept. 12, '17
Lt.-Col. H. D. L. Gordon, D.S.O.	Sept. 12, '17	

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
9th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. C. D. Armstrong	Jan. 2, '17	
10th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. H. DesRosiers	Jan. 2, '17	
11th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. P. Walker	Jan. 2, '17	May 7, '18
Lt.-Col. P. G. Daly, C.M.G., D.S.O.	May 7, '18	
12th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. G. Mitchell	Jan. 2, '17	June 2, '17
Lt.-Col. B. O. Hooper, M.C.	June 2, '17	May 2, '18
Lt.-Col. L. Ross	May 2, '18	
13th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. W. Fowler	Jan. 2, '17	July 9, '17
Maj. A. Sterling	July 7, '17	
14th Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 11th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. I. R. Snider	Jan. 2, '17	Oct. 15, '17
15th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. F. J. Clark	July 14, '16	Jan. 2, '17
Lt.-Col. A. Dulmage	Jan. 2, '17	May 28, '17
Lt.-Col. J. A. Cross	May 28, '17	
16th Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 1st Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. E. C. J. L. Hanniker	Jan. 2, '17	May 3, '17
Lt.-Col. J. C. L. Bott	May 3, '17	Feb. 15, '18
17th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. D. D. Cameron	Jan. 2, '17	Feb. 12, '17
Lt.-Col. W. H. Muirhead	Feb. 12, '17	
18th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. K. C. Bedson	Jan. 9, '17	Feb. 10, '17
Lt.-Col. W. A. Dyer	Feb. 10, '17	
19th Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 15th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. D. S. MacKay	Jan. 2, '17	Oct. 15, '17
20th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. A. A. Magee	Jan. 2, '17	May 27, '17
Lt.-Col. G. S. Cantlie, D.S.O.	May 27, '17	
21st Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. D. R. Stewart	Jan. 2, '17	May 27, '17
Lt.-Col. W. H. Hewgill	May 28, '17	
22nd Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 23rd Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. W. W. Burland, D.S.O.	Jan. 3, '17	Apr. 2, '17
Maj. R. E. Popham	Apr. 2, '17	May 9, '17

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
23rd Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. F. C. Bowen		
Maj. D. P. McKay	Apr. 1, '16	
Lt.-Col. F. W. Fisher	Jan. 2, '17	
24th Canadian Reserve Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. H. Kirkpatrick	Jan. 2, '17	Apr. 21, '17
Lt.-Col. G. S. Pragnell, D.S.O.	Apr. 21, '17	May 20, '17
25th Canadian Reserve Battalion, Pioneer (absorbed by 4th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. N. C. Hoyles	Jan. 4, '17	July 10, '17
Maj. H. D. Meredith Jones	July 10, '17	Oct. 1, '17
Lt.-Col. N. C. Hoyles	Oct. 1, '17	Feb. 15, '18
26th Canadian Reserve Battalion (absorbed by 17th Reserve Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. A. G. Vincent	Jan. 2, '17	May 19, '17
Lt.-Col. A. W. P. Weston	May 19, '17	Oct. 15, '19

MOUNTED INFANTRY

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
1st Brigade Canadian Mounted Rifles (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. F. O. Sissons	June 12, '15	Dec. 17, '15
2nd Brigade Canadian Mounted Rifles (disbanded on reorganization)		
Col. C. A. Smart	July 18, '15	Jan. 9, '16
1st Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion		
Lt.-Col. H. I. Stephenson	June 12, '15	Jan. 12, '16
Lt.-Col. A. E. Shaw	Jan. 12, '16	June 3, '16
Lt.-Col. R. C. Andros	June 3, '16	Apr. 24, '18
Lt.-Col. B. Laws	Apr. 24, '18	Demob.
2nd Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. C. L. Bott	June 12, '15	Nov. 27, '16
Lt.-Col. G. C. Johnston, D.S.O., M.C.	Nov. 27, '18	Demob.
3rd Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. L. J. Whittaker	June 12, '15	Jan. 13, '16
4th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion		
Lt.-Col. S. F. Smith	July 18, '15	Mar. 6, '16
Lt.-Col. J. F. H. Ussher	Mar. 6, '16	June 3, '16
Lt.-Col. H. D. L. Gordon, D.S.O.	June 7, '16	May 27, '17
Lt.-Col. W. R. Patterson, D.S.O.	May 28, '17	Demob.
5th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion		
Lt.-Col. G. H. Baker	July 18, '15	June 3, '16
Lt.-Col. D. C. Draper, D.S.O.	June 3, '16	May 25, '18
Lt.-Col. W. Rhoades, D.S.O., M.C.	May 25, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
6th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. R. H. Ryan	July 18, '15	Oct. 1, '15
Lt.-Col. A. E. Shaw	Oct. 1, '15	Jan. 1, '16
7th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion ("C" Squadron only)		
Maj. E. L. McColl	Feb. 23, '15	Mar. 5, '15
8th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (absorbed)		
Lt.-Col. J. R. Munro	Oct. 13, '15	Mar. 2, '16
9th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (absorbed)		
Lt.-Col. G. C. Hodson	Dec. 2, '15	Feb. 8, '16
10th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion		
Drafts only.		
11th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (absorbed)		
Lt.-Col. G. H. Kirkpatrick	July 8, '16	Jan. 1, '17
12th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (absorbed)		
Lt.-Col. G. Macdonald	Oct. 13, '15	Feb. 8, '16
13th Canadian Mounted Rifle Battalion (absorbed)		
Lt.-Col. V. H. Holmes	June 28, '16	July 19, '16

CAVALRY

Headquarters Canadian Cavalry Brigade		
Brig.-Gen. the Rt. Hon. J. E. B. Seely, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Jan. 28, '15	May 20, '18
Brig.-Gen. R. W. Paterson, C.M.G., D.S.O.	May 20, '18	Demob.
Lord Strathcona's Horse ("Royal Canadians")		
Lt.-Col. A. C. Macdonell, D.S.O.	Sept. 17, '15	Dec. 23, '15
Lt.-Col. J. A. Hesketh, D.S.O.	Dec. 23, '15	Sept. 28, '17
Lt.-Col. M. Doherty, D.S.O.	Sept. 28, '17	Dec. 1, '17
Lt.-Col. D. G. MacDonald, D.S.O., M.C.	Dec. 1, '17	Apr. 3, '18
Lt.-Col. C. Goodday	Apr. 3, '18	June 14, '18
Lt.-Col. D. G. MacDonald, D.S.O., M.C.	June 14, '18	Nov. 28, '18
Lt.-Col. C. Goodday	Nov. 28, '18	Demob.
Royal Canadian Dragoons		
Lt.-Col. C. M. Nelles, C.M.G.	Sept. 22, '14	Mar. 13, '17
Lt.-Col. C. T. van Straubenzee	Mar. 13, '17	Oct. 10, '18
Lt.-Col. T. Newcomen, M.C.	Oct. 10, '18	Apr. 3, '19
Lt.-Col. W. H. Bell	Apr. 3, '19	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Fort Garry Horse		
Lt.-Col. R. W. Paterson, D.S.O.	Sept. 23, '14	Feb. 17, '18
Maj. R. F. Bingham	Feb. 17, '18	Mar. 27, '18
Lt.-Col. R. W. Paterson, D.S.O.	Mar. 27, '18	May 20, '18
Lt.-Col. H. I. Stevenson, D.S.O.	May 20, '18	Demob.
Canadian Light Horse — formerly Canadian Corps Cavalry Regiment		
Lt.-Col. J. H. Elmsley, D.S.O.	May 12, '16	June 19, '16
Lt.-Col. E. I. Leonard	June 19, '16	June 27, '16
Lt.-Col. C. T. van Straubenzee	June 27, '16	Mar. 13, '17
Lt.-Col. E. I. Leonard, D.S.O.	Mar. 15, '17	Nov. 6, '18
Lt.-Col. S. F. Smith, D.S.O.	Nov. 6, '18	Demob.
1st Divisional Cavalry Squadron — 19th Alberta Dragoons (absorbed in Canadian Corps Cavalry Regiment)		
Lt.-Col. F. C. Jamieson	Sept. 22, '14	May 12, '16
2nd Divisional Cavalry Squadron (absorbed in Canadian Corps Cavalry Regiment)		
Lt.-Col. E. I. Leonard	June 8, '15	May 12, '16
3rd Divisional Cavalry Squadron (absorbed in Canadian Corps Cavalry Regiment)		
Maj. T. W. Wright	Jan. 22, '16	May 12, '16
4th Divisional Cavalry Squadron (absorbed in Canadian Cavalry Depot)		
Lt.-Col. R. A. Carman	May 1, '16	May 12, '16
Royal Canadian Horse Artillery		
Lt.-Col. H. A. Panet, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Dec. 17, '16
Lt.-Col. W. H. P. Elkins, D.S.O.	Dec. 17, '16	Demob.
Cavalry Reserve Regiment — formerly Canadian Cavalry Depot		
Lt.-Col. R. W. Paterson	Sept. 22, '14	Jan. 17, '16
Lt.-Col. D. D. Young	Jan. 28, '16	Apr. 4, '17
Col. C. M. Nelles, C.M.G.	Apr. 4, '17	Apr. 2, '19
Maj. M. V. Allen, D.S.O.	Apr. 2, '19	Demob.

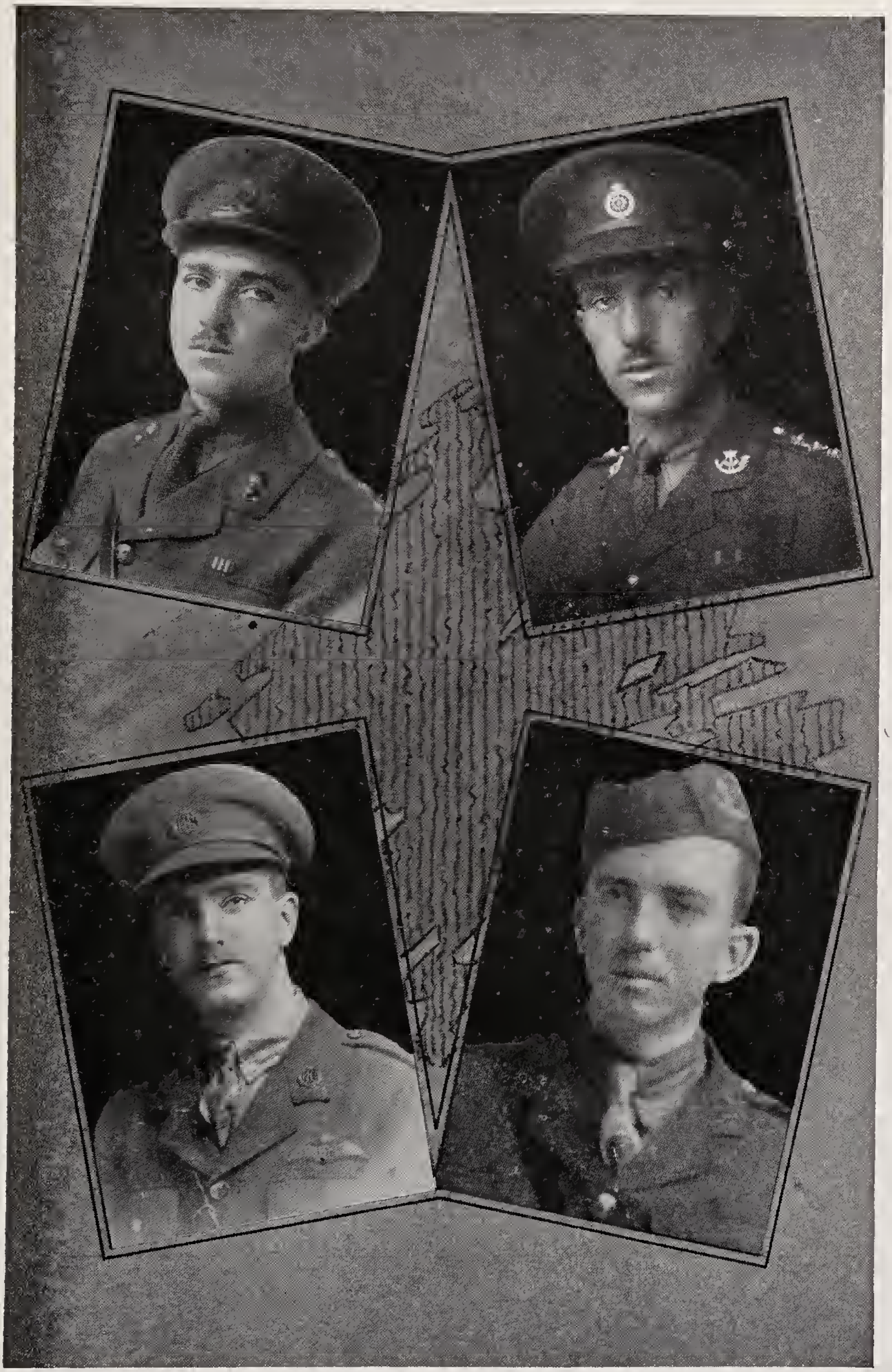
CYCLIST COMPANY

Canadian Corps Cyclist Battalion		
Maj. A. McMillan, D.S.O.	May 12, '16	Dec. 11, '16
Capt. R. S. Robinson	Dec. 11, '16	Jan. 25, '17
Maj. A. E. Humphrey, D.S.O.	Jan. 25, '17	Dec. 22, '18
Capt. F. J. G. Chadwick, M.C.	Dec. 22, '18	Demob.
1st Divisional Cyclist Company (absorbed by Corps Cyclist Battalion)		
Capt. R. S. Robinson	Sept. 22, '14	May 12, '16

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
2nd Divisional Cyclist Company (absorbed by Corps Cyclist Battalion)		
Lt.-Col. G. T. Denison	May 16, '15	Sept. 11, '15
Maj. T. L. Kennedy	Sept. 11, '15	Apr. 24, '16
Capt. A. E. Humphrey	Apr. 24, '16	May 12, '16
3rd Divisional Cyclist Company (absorbed by Corps Cyclist Battalion)		
Capt. L. P. O. Picard	Feb. 25, '16	May 12, '16
4th Divisional Cyclist Company (disbanded)		
Capt. G. L. Berkeley	Apr. 28, '16	May 18, '16
Capt. G. B. Schwartz	May 18, '16	May 24, '16
Canadian Reserve Cyclist Company		
Capt. F. B. Goodwillie	Apr. 3, '15	Aug. 3, '15
Capt. L. P. O. Picard	Aug. 3, '15	Feb. 25, '16
Capt. G. B. Schwartz	Feb. 25, '16	May 18, '16
Capt. G. L. Berkeley	May 18, '16	Aug. 1, '16
Capt. F. B. Goodwillie	Aug. 1, '16	Jan. 25, '18
Maj. C. E. Bush	Jan. 25, '18	Demob.

Artillery

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
G.O.C., R.A. Corps		
Brig.-Gen. H. E. Burstall, C.B.	Sept. 3, '15	Dec. 14, '16
Maj.-Gen. Sir E. W. B. Morrison, K.C.M.G., C.B., D.S.O.	Dec. 14, '16	Demob.
1st Divisional Artillery		
Brig.-Gen. H. E. Burstall, C.B.	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 13, '15
Brig.-Gen. E. W. B. Morrison, D.S.O.	Sept. 13, '15	Sept. 27, '15
Brig.-Gen. H. C. Thacker, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Sept. 27, '15	Demob.
2nd Divisional Artillery		
Brig.-Gen. H. C. Thacker, C.M.G.	June 7, '15	June 25, '15
Brig.-Gen. E. W. B. Morrison, D.S.O.	June 25, '15	Sept. 13, '15
Lt.-Col. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G.	Sept. 28, '15	Oct. 2, '15
Brig.-Gen. E. W. B. Morrison, D.S.O.	Oct. 2, '15	Dec. 14, '16
Brig.-Gen. H. A. Panet, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 14, '16	Demob.
3rd Divisional Artillery		
Lt.-Col. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G.	Mar. 11, '16	Mar. 13, '16
Lt.-Col. W. Eaton	Mar. 13, '16	June 20, '16
Brig.-Gen J. H. Mitchell, D.S.O.	June 20, '16	Dec. 9, '17
Brig.-Gen. J. S. Stewart, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 9, '17	Demob.
4th Divisional Artillery		
Brig.-Gen. C. H. MacLaren, D.S.O.	June 20, '17	Nov. 3, '17
Brig.-Gen. W. B. M. King, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Nov. 27, '17	Demob.



LIEUT. DONALD S. MACPHERSON, M.M. CAPT. J. ROSS MACPHERSON, D.S.O. Killed in action, August 26th, 1918

LIEUT. EWART G. MACPHERSON LIEUT. DOUGLAS W. MACPHERSON, M.C.

SOLDIER BROTHERS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
5th Divisional Artillery		
Brig.-Gen. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G.	Oct. 2, '16	May 26, '17
Lt.-Col. A. T. Ogilvie	May 26, '17	July 2, '17
Brig.-Gen. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G., D.S.O.	July 2, '17	Jan. 9, '19
Brig.-Gen. C. H. Ralston, D.S.O.	Jan. 9, '19	Demob.
Headquarters Reserve Artillery		
Lt.-Col. J. E. Mills, D.S.O.	Feb. 18, '16	Aug. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. W. B. M. King, D.S.O.	Aug. 20, '17	Nov. 25, '17
Col. C. H. L. Sharman	Nov. 26, '17	Sept. 2, '18
Brig.-Gen. C. H. McLaren, D.S.O.	Sept. 2, '18	Feb. 14, '19
Lt.-Col. J. F. McParland	Feb. 14, '19	Demob.
1st Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. E. W. B. Morrison, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Aug. 28, '15
Lt.-Col. C. H. McLaren, D.S.O.	Aug. 28, '15	June 20, '17
Lt.-Col. J. G. Piercey, D.S.O.	June 23, '17	Nov. 18, '18
Lt.-Col. L. V. M. Cosgrave, D.S.O.	Nov. 19, '18	Demob.
2nd Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. J. J. Creelman, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Feb. 26, '17
Maj. J. A. McDonald, D.S.O.	Feb. 26, '17	Mar. 23, '17
Lt.-Col. S. B. Anderson, D.S.O.	Mar. 23, '17	Demob.
3rd Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. J. H. Mitchell	Sept. 22, '14	June 9, '16
Lt.-Col. S. B. Anderson	June 9, '16	June 21, '16
Lt.-Col. E. W. Leonard, D.S.O.	June 21, '16	Jan. 1, '17
Lt.-Col. H. D. J. Crerar	Apr. 10, '17	May 1, '17
Lt.-Col. J. A. McDonald, D.S.O.	May 2, '17	Demob.
4th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. W. J. Brown	May 20, '15	July 19, '16
Lt.-Col. G. A. Carruthers	July 19, '16	July 25, '16
Lt.-Col. C. H. L. Sharman	July 25, '16	Mar. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. J. S. Stewart, D.S.O.	Mar. 19, '17	Dec. 29, '17
Lt.-Col. M. N. Ross, D.S.O.	Dec. 29, '17	Demob.
5th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G.	Sept. 6, '15	Sept. 28, '15
Lt.-Col. G. A. Carruthers	Mar. 11, '16	May 21, '16
Lt.-Col. W. O. H. Dodds, C.M.G.	May 21, '16	Sept. 20, '16
Lt.-Col. R. H. Britton, D.S.O.	Sept. 20, '16	May 2, '17
Lt.-Col. C. F. Constantine, D.S.O.	May 3, '17	Demob.
6th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. E. W. Rathbun	Mar. 1, '15	Sept. 17, '15
Lt.-Col. W. B. M. King, D.S.O.	Sept. 17, '15	Aug. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. J. K. McKay, D.S.O.	Aug. 19, '17	May 8, '18
Maj. E. Flexman, D.S.O.	May 8, '18	Aug. 6, '18
Lt.-Col. J. F. McParland	Aug. 6, '18	Demob.
7th Brigade C.F.A. (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. J. S. Stewart, D.S.O.	Aug. 10, '15	Oct. 31, '16
Lt.-Col. J. K. McKay, D.S.O.	Nov. 1, '16	Jan. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. J. S. Stewart, D.S.O.	Jan. 27, '17	Mar. 19, '17

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
8th Brigade C.F.A. (disbanded on reorganization)		
Maj. A. B. Gillies	Feb. 5, '16	Mar. 9, '16
Lt.-Col. V. Eaton	Mar. 9, '16	Apr. 11, '17
Maj. F. T. Coghlan, D.S.O.	May 5, '17	July 3, '17
Lt.-Col. J. S. Stewart	July 3, '17	July 8, '17
9th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. H. G. Carscallen, D.S.O.	Mar. 11, '16	Mar. 3, '18
Lt.-Col. F. T. Coghlan, D.S.O.	Mar. 13, '18	Demob.
10th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. G. H. Ralston, D.S.O.	Mar. 25, '16	Jan. 9, '19
Maj. A. A. Durkee	Jan. 9, '19	Demob.
11th Brigade C.F.A. (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. A. G. L. McNaughton	Mar. 11, '16	Jan. 27, '17
Lt.-Col. F. T. Coghlan, D.S.O.	Jan. 27, '17	May 5, '17
12th Brigade C.F.A. (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. S. B. Anderson	June 21, '16	Mar. 20, '17
13th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. Count H. R. V. de Bury de Bocarme	Sept. 18, '16	Jan. 23, '17
Lt.-Col. E. G. Hanson, D.S.O.	Jan. 23, '17	Dec. 19, '18
Lt.-Col. W. V. Plummer, D.S.O.	Dec. 19, '18	Apr. 15, '19
Lt.-Col. C. V. Stockwell, D.S.O.	Apr. 15, '19	Demob.
14th Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. J. L. MacKinnon	Sept. 11, '16	Dec. 31, '17
Lt.-Col. A. T. Ogilvie, D.S.O.	Dec. 31, '17	Nov. 1, '18
Lt.-Col. S. C. Oland	Nov. 1, '18	Dec. 20, '18
Lt.-Col. E. R. Greene, D.S.O.	Dec. 20, '18	Mar. 16, '19
Lt.-Col. A. T. Ogilvie, D.S.O.	Mar. 16, '19	Demob.
15th Brigade C.F.A. (disbanded on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. A. T. Ogilvie	Sept. 11, '16	Dec. 31, '17
16th Brigade C.F.A. (arrived from Canada as 12th Brigade C.F.A.) [1]		
Lt.-Col. E. G. Hanson	Sept. 11, '16	Dec. 31, '17
Col. C. H. L. Sharman, C.M.G., C.B.E.	Aug. 22, '18	Demob.
Reserve Brigade C.F.A.		
Lt.-Col. E. W. Rathbun	Feb. 18, '15	Feb. 18, '16
Lt.-Col. J. E. Mills, D.S.O.	Feb. 18, '16	Aug. 19, '17
Lt.-Col. W. Simpson	Aug. 19, '17	

---

[1] Disbanded Dec. 31, '17, and reorganized for Siberia on Aug. 22, '18.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Headquarters Canadian Corps, Heavy Artillery		
Brig.-Gen. A. C. Currie, C.M.G.	Aug. 12, '16	Jan. 25, '17
Brig.-Gen. R. H. Massie, C.M.G.	Jan. 25, '17	Nov. 10, '18
Brig.-Gen. A. G. L. McNaughton, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Nov. 10, '18	Demob.
1st Brigade Canadian Garrison Artillery—formerly 1st Heavy Artillery Group		
Lt.-Col. F. M. Cole	Jan. 8, '16	Feb. 23, '18
Lt.-Col. W. B. Prowse, D.S.O.	Feb. 23, '18	Demob.
2nd Brigade Canadian Garrison Artillery—formerly 1st Heavy Artillery Group		
Lt.-Col. F. C. Magee, D.S.O.	Feb. 10, '17	Demob.
3rd Brigade Canadian Garrison Artillery — formerly 1st Heavy Battery		
Lt.-Col. W. G. Beeman, D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '18	Demob.
1st Heavy Battery		
Maj. F. C. Magee, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	June 22, '16
Capt. G. F. Inches	June 22, '16	Oct. 3, '16
Maj. F. C. Magee, D.S.O.	Oct. 3, '16	Feb. 10, '17
Maj. G. F. Inches, M.C.	Feb. 10, '17	Demob.
2nd Heavy Battery		
Lt.-Col. J. W. Odell	June 13, '15	Sept. 7, '15
Maj. W. G. Scully	Sept. 7, '15	Sept. 25, '16
Maj. J. W. Stanley	Sept. 25, '16	Aug. 20, '17
Maj. R. J. Leach	Aug. 27, '17	Sept. 18, '17
Maj. H. P. McKeen	Sept. 18, '17	Nov. 24, '19
Maj. S. T. Layton	Nov. 24, '19	Demob.
1st Siege Battery — formerly 97th Siege Battery		
Maj. F. M. Cole	Nov. 22, '15	Jan. 8, '16
Maj. W. G. Beeman, D.S.O.	Jan. 8, '16	Aug. 12, '17
Maj. W. H. Dobbie, D.S.O.	Sept. 20, '17	Demob.
2nd Siege Battery — formerly 98th Siege Battery		
Maj. A. G. Peake	Nov. 28, '15	Feb. 2, '16
Maj. W. B. Prowse, D.S.O.	Feb. 23, '16	Feb. 7, '18
Capt. S. T. Layton	Feb. 7, '18	Feb. 28, '18
Maj. H. R. N. Corbett	Feb. 28, '18	Nov. 28, '18
Maj. L. C. Ord	Nov. 28, '18	Demob.
3rd Siege Battery — formerly 107th Siege Battery		
Maj. E. G. M. Cape, D.S.O.	Dec. 27, '15	May 28, '17
Maj. W. Leggat, M.C.	May 30, '17	Sept. 9, '18
Maj. E. R. W. Hebden, M.C.	Sept. 9, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
4th Siege Battery — formerly 131st Siege Battery		
Maj. L. W. Barker, D.S.O.	Apr. 2, '16	Demob.
5th Siege Battery — formerly 165th Siege Battery		
Maj. G. H. Maxwell	May 18, '16	Nov. 28, '16
Lieut. D. J. Maxwell	Nov. 28, '16	Feb. 18, '17
Maj. T. W. F. Macdonald	Feb. 18, '17	Mar. 29, '18
Maj. N. P. McLeod, M.C.	Mar. 29, '18	Demob.
6th Siege Battery — formerly 176th Siege Battery		
Maj. L. T. Allen	June 2, '16	Sept. 11, '17
Maj. T. E. Ryder, M.C.	Oct. 4, '17	Feb. 27, '18
Maj. C. J. McMillan	Feb. 27, '18	Demob.
7th Siege Battery — formerly 271st Siege Battery		
Maj. W. D. Tait	Sept. 18, '16	Feb. 27, '18
Maj. T. E. Ryder, M.C.	Feb. 27, '18	Demob.
8th Siege Battery — formerly 272nd (arrived from Canada as 5th Siege Battery)		
Maj. A. G. Peake	Oct. 6, '16	June 16, '17
Maj. R. A. Ring	June 16, '17	Nov. 19, '17
Maj. W. G. Scully	Nov. 24, '17	Feb. 7, '18
Maj. R. A. Ring	Feb. 7, '18	Demob.
9th Siege Battery — formerly 273rd (arrived from Canada as 8th Siege Battery)		
Maj. S. A. Heward	Oct. 6, '16	Apr. 30, '18
Capt. J. E. Lean	Apr. 30, '18	May 30, '18
Capt. A. T. Seaman	May 30, '18	July 13, '18
Maj. W. G. Scully	July 13, '18	Demob.
10th Siege Battery		
Maj. H. F. Geary	Aug. 20, '17	Oct. 15, '17
Maj. L. C. Ord	Oct. 15, '17	Nov. 28, '18
Lieut. R. Cruit	Nov. 28, '18	Jan. 20, '19
Capt. D. V. White, M.C.	Jan. 20, '19	Demob.
11th Siege Battery		
Maj. A. G. Peake	Nov. 7, '17	Jan. 24, '18
Capt. J. P. Hooper, M.C.	Jan. 24. '18	Apr. 30, '18
Maj. S. A. Heward	Apr. 30, '18	
Maj. W. G. Scully		July 13, '18
Maj. J. P. Hooper, M.C.	July 13, '18	Demob.
12th Siege Battery		
Maj. F. A. Robertson	Feb. 1, '18	
Maj. C. MacKay, M.C.		Demob.

AMMUNITION COLUMNS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
1st Divisional Ammunition Column		
Lt.-Col. J. J. Penhale, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Demob.
2nd Divisional Ammunition Column		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Harrison, D.S.O.	May 10, '15	Demob.
3rd Divisional Ammunition Column		
Lt.-Col. W. G. Hurdman, D.S.O.	Mar. 11, '16	Demob.
4th Divisional Ammunition Column		
Lt.-Col. E. T. B. Gillmore, D.S.O.	June 19, '17	Demob.
5th Divisional Column (arrived from Canada as 4th Div. Amm. Col.)		
Lt.-Col. R. Costigan, D.S.O.	Mar. 18, '16	Demob.

CANADIAN MACHINE GUN CORPS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Machine Gun Officer Canadian Corps		
Lt.-Col. R. Brutinel, D.S.O.	Oct. 28, '16	Mar. 26, '18
Machine Gun Corps		
Brig.-Gen. R. Brutinel, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 26, '18	Demob.
1st Motor Machine Gun Brigade		
Lt.-Col. R. Brutinel, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Oct. 28, '16
Lt.-Col. F. A. Wilkin, M.C.	Oct. 28, '16	Mar. 17, '18
Lt.-Col. W. K. Walker, D.S.O., M.C.	Mar. 17, '18	Demob.
2nd Motor Machine Gun Brigade		
Lt.-Col. H. F. V. Meurling, D.S.O., M.C.	June 7, '18	Demob.
Borden's Motor Machine Gun Battery (absorbed as "C" Battery 1st C.M.M.G.B.)		
Maj. E. J. Holland, V.C.	May 8, '16	Sept. 19, '16
Capt. P. A. G. McCarthy	Sept. 19, '16	May 5, '17
Capt. W. C. Nicholson	June 4, '17	Mar. 28, '18
Capt. F. P. O'Reilly, M.C.	Mar. 28, '18	May 8, '18
Capt. R. F. Inch	May 8, '18	June 7, '18
Eaton's Motor Machine Gun Battery (absorbed as "C" Battery 2nd C.M.M.G.B.)		
Maj. W. J. Morrison	June 4, '15	Nov. 28, '15
Maj. E. L. Knight	Jan. 18, '16	Sept. 26, '16
Maj. H. H. Donnelly	Sept. 27, '16	Feb. 4, '17
Capt. G. T. Scroggie	Feb. 4, '17	Nov. 2, '17
Capt. R. D. Harkness, M.C.	Nov. 4, '17	Apr. 3, '18
Lieut. W. J. Campbell	Apr. 3, '18	June 7, '18

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Yukon Motor Machine Gun Battery (absorbed as "A" Battery 2nd C.M.M.G.B.)		
Maj. H. F. V. Meurling, M.C.	June 14, '16	June 7, '18
Canadian Machine Gun Depot — formerly 86th Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. W. Stewart, D.S.O.	May 22, '16	Mar. 16, '17
Lt.-Col. W. M. Balfour, D.S.O.	Mar. 16, '17	Oct. 8, '18
Lt.-Col. W. N. Moorhouse, D.S.O.	Oct. 31, '18	Mar. 18, '19
Lt.-Col. W. M. Balfour, D.S.O.	Mar. 18, '19	Demob.
1st Canadian Machine Gun Battalion		
Lt.-Col. S. W. Watson, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 22, '18	Jan. 22, '19
Maj. R. Murdie, D.S.O.	Jan. 22, '19	Feb. 23, '19
Lt.-Col. E. W. Sansom	Feb. 23, '19	Demob.
2nd Canadian Machine Gun Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. G. Weir, D.S.O., M.C.	Feb. 22, '18	Oct. 3, '18
Lt.-Col. E. W. Sansom	Oct. 4, '18	Jan. 5, '19
Lt.-Col. J. G. Weir, D.S.O., M.C.	Jan. 5, '19	Demob.
3rd Canadian Gun Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. N. Moorhouse, D.S.O.	Feb. 22, '18	Oct. 8, '18
Lt.-Col. W. M. Balfour, D.S.O.	Oct. 8, '18	Mar. 10, '19
Lt.-Col. G. W. MacLeod, D.S.O.	Mar. 10, '19	Demob.
4th Canadian Machine Gun Battalion		
Lt.-Col. M. A. Scott, D.S.O.	Feb. 22, '18	Demob.
1st Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 1st Machine Gun Battalion)		
Lieut. J. T. Anglin	Jan. 14, '16	June 11, '16
Capt. W. J. A. Lalor, M.C.	June 11, '16	Dec. 2, '16
Maj. W. M. Pearce	Dec. 2, '16	Oct. 7, '17
Maj. W. J. A. Lalor, M.C.	Oct. 7, '17	Feb. 3, '18
Capt. R. H. Matthews, M.C.	Feb. 3, '18	Mar. 27, '18
2nd Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 1st Machine Gun Battalion)		
Capt. T. H. Raddall	Feb. 1, '16	June 22, '16
Maj. R. M. Stewart	June 22, '16	Jan. 3, '18
Capt. G. C. Ferrie	Jan. 3, '18	Mar. 13, '18
Lieut. J. A. Dewart, M.C.	Mar. 13, '18	Mar. 27, '18
3rd Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 1st Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. E. J. Houghton, M.C.	Dec. 18, '15	June 5, '17
Capt. H. Donald	June 5, '17	Oct. 8, '17
Maj. E. R. Morris	Oct. 8, '17	Mar. 27, '18

CAPT. G. W. H. MILLICAN, M.C.

LIEUT. D. J. TEPOORTEN, CROCIA DI GUERRA AND ITALIAN SERVICE MEDAL

TYPES OF CANADIAN OFFICERS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
4th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 2nd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Capt. J. M. C. Edwards	Dec. 22, '15	Oct. 27, '16
Maj. W. J. Forbes-Mitchell, D.S.O.	Oct. 27, '16	Sept. 7, '17
Maj. W. M. Pearce	Oct. 8, '17	Mar. 21, '18
5th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 2nd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Capt. S. W. Watson	Jan. 8, '16	Aug. 25, '16
Capt. J. E. McCorkell	Aug. 25, '16	Nov. 7, '16
Maj. S. W. Watson, D.S.O.	Nov. 7, '16	July 27, '17
Capt. J. E. McCorkell	July 27, '17	Jan. 31, '18
Lieut. F. L. Much	Feb. 1, '18	Mar. 21, '18
6th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 2nd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Capt. T. A. H. Taylor	Dec. 16, '15	Apr. 11, '16
Capt. A. Eastham	Apr. 11, '16	July 8, '16
Capt. T. A. H. Taylor	July 8, '16	Nov. 16, '16
Maj. A. Eastham, M.C.	Nov. 16, '16	Sept. 4, '17
Maj. C. V. Grantham, M.C.	Sept. 29, '17	Mar. 21, '18
7th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 3rd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. H. T. Cock	Dec. 28, '15	Aug. 28, '16
Maj. J. W. H. T. H. Van Den Berg	Aug. 28, '16	Mar. 23, '17
Lieut. D. S. Forbes, M.C.	Mar. 23, '17	Apr. 9, '17
Lieut. F. A. Hale	Apr. 9, '17	Aug. 19, '17
Maj. J. G. Weir, M.C.	Aug. 19, '17	Dec. 28, '17
Capt. F. W. Burnham	Dec. 28, '17	Mar. 23, '18
8th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 3rd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. W. M. Balfour	Apr. 9, '16	Dec. 21, '16
Capt. C. W. Laubach	Dec. 21, '16	Feb. 14, '17
Maj. J. R. Coull	Feb. 14, '17	July 27, '17
Maj. A. J. R. Parks	July 27, '17	Mar. 23, '18
9th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 3rd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Capt. W. H. Bothwell	Jan. 22, '16	July 9, '16
Capt. I. McKinnon	July 9, '16	Oct. 8, '16
Maj. W. McNaul	Oct. 8, '16	Mar. 23, '18
10th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 4th Machine Gun Battalion)		
Lieut. C. T. Bowring	May 16, '16	July 12, '16
Maj J. Mess	July 12, '16	Feb. 4, '17
Maj. J. C. Britton	Mar. 14, '17	Mar. 29, '18

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
11th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 4th Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. B. M. Clerk, M.C.	June 8, '16	Mar. 29, '18
12th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 4th Machine Gun Battalion)		
Capt. H. E. Hodge	May 21, '16	Oct. 26, '16
Maj. L. F. Pearce, M.C.	Oct. 26, '16	Mar. 29, '18
13th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 1st Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. J. Kay, M.C.	Jan. 16, '17	Mar. 27, '18
14th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 2nd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. J. Basevi	Jan. 16, '17	Mar. 21, '18
15th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 3rd Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. W. N. Moorhouse	Feb. 21, '17	July 1, '17
Maj. J. C. Hartley, M.C., M.M.	July 1, '17	Mar. 23, '18
16th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 4th Machine Gun Battalion)		
Maj. E. W. Sansom	Dec. 27, '16	Mar. 29, '18
17th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 2nd Canadian Machine Gun Brigade)		
Maj. H. A. Webb	May 18, '17	July 18, '17
Capt. G. Black	July 18, '17	June 7, '18
18th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 1st Canadian Motor Machine Gun Brigade)		
Capt. G. W. Beresford	Feb. 6, '17	June 7, '18
19th Canadian Machine Gun Company (absorbed in 2nd Canadian Motor Machine Gun Brigade)		
Maj. J. H. Brownlee	Feb. 12, '17	June 7, '18
Machine Gun Squadron Cavalry Brigade		
Capt. W. T. Lawless	Feb. 20, '16	Mar. 5, '16
Maj. W. R. Walker, D.S.O., M.C.	Mar. 5, '16	Mar. 16, '18
Maj. J. H. Boulter	Mar. 16, '18	Dec. 20, '18
Maj. D. G. McNeil, M.C.	Dec. 20, '18	Demob.

Engineers

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Chief Engineer, Canadian Corps		
Brig.-Gen. C. J. Armstrong, C.M.G.	Sept. 13, '15	Mar. 7, '16
Brig.-Gen. W. B. Lindsay, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 7, '16	Demob.
C.R.E. Corps Troops		
Col. H. T. Hughes, C.M.G.	May 2, '18	June 26, '18
Lt.-Col. J. Houliston, D.S.O.	June 26, '18	Demob.
1st Divisional Engineers (reorganized as 1st Engineer Brigade)		
Lt.-Col. C. J. Armstrong	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 13, '15
Lt.-Col. W. B. Lindsay	Sept. 17, '15	Mar. 7, '16
Lt.-Col. A. Macphail, D.S.O.	Mar. 7, '16	Dec. 30, '17
Lt.-Col. H. F. H. Hertzberg, D.S.O., M.C.	Dec. 30, '17	May 28, '18
2nd Divisional Engineers (reorganized as 2nd Engineer Brigade)		
Lt.-Col. J. Houliston	May 4, '15	Sept. 9, '15
Lt.-Col. H. T. Hughes	Sept. 9, '15	Dec. 22, '16
Lt.-Col. S. H. Osler, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Dec. 22, '15	June 6, '18
3rd Divisional Engineers (reorganized as 3rd Engineer Brigade)		
Lt.-Col. T. V. Anderson	Jan. 16, '16	Apr. 8, '17
Lt.-Col. J. Houliston	Apr. 8, '17	May 26, '18
4th Divisional Engineers (reorganized as 4th Engineer Brigade)		
Lt.-Col. C. A. Inksetter	May 29, '16	Oct. 15, '16
Lt.-Col. T. C. Irving, D.S.O.	Oct. 15, '16	Oct. 29, '17
Maj. W. P. Wilgar, D.S.O.	Oct. 29, '17	Nov. 18, '17
Lt.-Col. W. L. Malcolm	Nov. 18, '17	May 26, '18
5th Divisional Engineers (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. W. L. Malcolm	Mar. 1, '17	Nov. 8, '17
Maj. G. H. Shaw	Nov. 16, '17	Dec. 9, '17
Lt.-Col. A. Macphail, D.S.O.	Jan. 5, '18	Feb. 28, '18
1st Engineer Brigade		
Lt.-Col. H. F. H. Hertzberg, D.S.O., M.C.	May 28, '18	June 6, '18
Col. A. Macphail, C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 6, '18	Demob.
2nd Engineer Brigade		
Col. S. H. Osler, C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 6, '18	Demob.
3rd Engineer Brigade		
Lt.-Col. J. Houliston	May 26, '18	June 26, '18
Col. H. F. H. Hertzberg, C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	July 25, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
4th Engineer Brigade		
Lt.-Col. W. L. Malcolm	May 26, '18	June 18, '18
Col. H. T. Hughes, C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 26, '18	Demob.
1st Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 1st Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. W. W. Melville	Sept. 22, '14	Feb. 16, '16
Maj. J. P. Fell	Feb. 16, '16	May 21, '16
Maj. H. F. H. Hertzberg, M.C.	May 21, '16	Dec. 30, '17
Maj. J. M. Rolston	Jan. 1, '18	May 28, '18
2nd Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 2nd Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. W. B. Lindsay	Sept. 22, '14	Apr. 7, '15
Capt. T. C. Irving	Apr. 7, '15	May 16, '15
Maj. W. B. Lindsay	May 16, '15	Sept. 13, '15
Maj. T. C. Irving, D.S.O.	Sept. 13, '15	May 26, '16
Maj. H. F. H. Hertzberg, M.C.	June 17, '16	July 21, '16
Maj. T. C. Irving, D.S.O.	July 21, '16	Oct. 13, '16
Capt. G. R. Turner, M.C., D.C.M.	Oct. 13, '16	Feb. 26, '17
Maj. E. F. Lynn, D.S.O., M.C.	Feb. 26, '17	May 28, '18
3rd Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 3rd Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. G. B. Wright, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	May 21, '15
Maj. A. Macphail, D.S.O.	May 21, '15	Mar. 7, '16
Maj. H. F. H. Hertzberg, M.C.	Mar. 7, '16	May 21, '16
Maj. E. Pepler, D.S.O.	May 21, '16	May 28, '18
4th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 4th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. C. H. Inksetter	Apr. 28, '15	May 29, '16
Maj. H. D. Smith, D.S.O.	May 29, '16	June 4, '18
5th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 5th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. S. H. Osler	Sept. 13, '15	Dec. 22, '16
Maj. A. L. Mieville, M.C.	Dec. 22, '16	June 4, '18
6th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 6th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. W. L. Malcolm	Sept. 13, '15	Feb. 24, '17
Maj. D. S. Ellis	Feb. 24, '17	Dec. 19, '17
Maj. E. W. Harrison	Dec. 19, '17	June 4, '18
7th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 7th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. J. B. P. Dunbar	Feb. 18, '16	Oct. 1, '16
Maj. J. P. Fell	Oct. 1, '16	Feb. 26, '17
Maj. K. Stuart, M.C.	Feb. 26, '17	May 26, '18
8th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 8th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. E. R. Vince, M.C.	Feb. 18, '16	Sept. 20, '16
Maj. W. E. Manhard	Sept. 20, '16	May 26, '18

LATE MAJOR O. M. PEASE, M.C. MAJOR T. TAYLOR, M.C.

TYPES OF CANADIAN OFFICERS

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
9th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 9th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. N. R. Robertson, D.S.O.	Feb. 18, '16	May 26, '18
10th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 10th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. W. P. Wilgar, D.S.O.	May 12, '16	May 26, '18
11th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 11th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. H. L. Trotter, D.S.O.	May 12, '16	May 26, '18
12th Field Company C.E. (reorganized as 12th Battalion C.E.)		
Maj. P. Ward	May 20, '16	July 10, '16
Maj. C. T. Trotter, D.S.O.	July 19, '16	July 2, '17
Maj. E. J. C. Schmidlin, M.C.	July 4, '17	May 26, '18
13th Field Company C.E. (disbanded)		
Maj. G. H. Shaw	Mar. 2, '17	Nov. 18, '17
Maj. J. B. P. Dunbar	Jan. 5, '18	Feb. 28, '18
14th Field Company C.E. (disbanded)		
Maj. F. R. Henshaw	Mar. 21, '17	Feb. 28, '18
15th Field Company (disbanded)		
Maj. E. W. Harrison	Mar. 1, '17	Feb. 28, '18
1st Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. H. C. Walkem	May 28, '18	June 7, '18
Lt.-Col. H. F. H. Hertzberg, D.S.O., M.C.	June 7, '18	July 22, '18
Lt.-Col. C. B. Russell, D.S.O.	July 22, '18	Demob.
2nd Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. J. M. Rolston, D.S.O.	May 31, '18	Demob.
3rd Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. E. Pepler, D.S.O.	May 28, '18	Demob.
4th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. H. D. S. Smith, D.S.O.	June 4, '18	Demob.
5th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. C. W. Allen, D.S.O.	June 4, '18	Feb. 7, '19
Maj. J. A. Morphy, D.S.O.	Feb. 7, '19	Demob.
6th Battalion C.E.		
Maj. C. B. Russell, D.S.O.	June 4, '18	July 22, '18
Lt.-Col. A. L. Mieville, M.C.	July 22, '18	Demob.
7th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. W. B. Kingsmill, D.S.O.	May 26, '18	July 30, '18
Maj. K. Stuart, M.C.	July 30, '18	Aug. 23, '18
Lt.-Col. J. L. H. Bogart	Aug. 23, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
8th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. E. J. C. Schmidlin, M.C.	May 26, '18	Nov. 6, '18
Lt.-Col. W. E. Manhard, D.S.O.	Nov. 19, '18	Demob.
9th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. N. R. Robertson, D.S.O.	May 26, '18	Demob.
10th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. W. P. Wilgar, D.S.O.	May 26, '18	Demob.
11th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. H. L. Trotter, D.S.O.	May 26, '18	Demob.
12th Battalion C.E.		
Lt.-Col. J. T. C. Thompson, D.S.O.	May 26, '18	Sept. 25, '18
Lt.-Col. G. H. Shaw	Sept. 25, '18	Nov. 3, '18
Lt.-Col. E. J. C. Schmidlin, M.C.	Nov. 6, '18	Demob.

SIGNALS

Headquarters Canadian Corps Signalling Company		
Maj. R. H. Willan	Sept. 18, '15	Aug. 9, '16
Maj. W. L. de M. Carey	Sept. 22, '16	Jan. 23, '17
Cap. P. Earnshaw, M.C.	Jan. 24, '17	July 5, '17
Maj. F. G. Mallock, M.C.	July 5, '17	July 8, '18
Maj. G. A. Cline, D.S.O.	July 8, '18	Demob.
1st Divisional Signalling Company		
Maj. F. A. Lister, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, '14	Dec. 6, '15
Maj. E. Ford, D.S.O.	Dec. 6, '15	Aug. 1, '17
Maj. G. A. Cline	Aug. 1, '17	Feb. 1, '18
Maj. P. Earnshaw, D.S.O., M.C.	Feb. 1, '18	Demob.
2nd Divisional Signalling Company		
Maj. J. L. H. Bogart	May 15, '16	Sept. 11, '16
Capt. G. A. Cline	Sept. 11, '16	Mar. 5, '17
Maj. A. A. Anderson, D.S.O.	Mar. 14, '17	Demob.
3rd Divisional Signalling Company		
Maj. T. E. Powers	May 5, '16	Oct. 16, '16
Maj. A. Leavitt, M.C.	Dec. 15, '16	Aug. 10, '18
Maj. K. M. Campbell	Aug. 10, '18	Jan. 1, '19
Maj. A. Leavitt, M.C.	Jan. 1, '19	Demob.
4th Divisional Signalling Company		
Maj. A. G. Lawson, M.C.	May 30, '16	Oct. 23, '17
Maj. M. S. Parnell-Smith	Oct. 25, '17	Dec. 15, '17
Maj. A. G. Lawson, M.C.	Dec. 15, '17	July 12, '18
Maj. F. G. Mallock, M.C.	July 12, '18	Demob.
5th Divisional Signalling Company (disbanded, except Artillery Section)		
Maj. W. M. Miller, M.C.	Feb. 14, '17	Feb. 28, '18

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
5th Divisional Signalling Company (Artillery Section)		
Capt. M. L. Maitland	Aug. 29, '17	
Capt. F. S. McPherson		Demob.
Cavalry Brigade Signalling Company		
Capt. L. P. Haviland	June 17, '15	Aug. 5, '17
Capt. S. A. Lee	Aug. 5, '17	Demob.

ARMY TROOPS COMPANIES CANADIAN ENGINEERS

1st Army Troops Company C.E.		
Capt. K. Stuart	Jan. 18, '16	Feb. 26, '17
Capt. R. S. Worsley, M.C.	Feb. 26, '17	June 6, '18
Capt. G. W. G. Booker	June 6, '18	Demob.
2nd Army Troops Company C.E.		
Capt. G. H. Shaw	Oct. 23, '15	Feb. 26, '17
Capt. R. L. Junkin, M.C.	Feb. 26, '17	July 21, '17
Capt. H. B. Boswell	July 21, '17	June 4, '18
Capt. F. M. Brickenden	June 4, '18	Demob.
3rd Army Troops Company C.E.		
Maj. E. S. Hill	June 9, '16	Jan. 26, '18
Capt. O. B. McCuaig, M.C.	Jan. 26, '18	Demob.
4th Army Troops Company C.E.		
Maj. C. B. Russell	Oct. 31, '16	June 6, '18
Capt. H. S. Fellowes	June 6, '18	Feb. 14, '19
Lieut. H. C. Holman	Feb. 14, '19	Demob.
5th Army Troops Company C.E.		
Maj. E. R. Vince, M.C.	Apr. 11, '17	June 10, '18
Capt. J. S. Oliver	June 10, '18	Nov. 30, '19
Lieut. H. L. Bunting, M.C.	Nov. 30, '19	Demob.

TUNNELLING COMPANIES

1st Tunnelling Company C.E. (disbanded)		
Maj. R. P. Rogers	Jan. 1, '16	Apr. 25, '16
Maj. C. B. North	Apr. 25, '16	July 11, '18
2nd Tunnelling Company C.E. (disbanded)		
Maj. R. W. Coulthard	Jan. 30, '16	July 20, '16
Maj. L. N. B. Bullock, D.S.O.	July 20, '16	Mar. 16, '17
Capt. F. A. Brewster, M.C.	Mar. 16, '17	Nov. 1, '17
Maj. L. N. B. Bullock, D.S.O.	Nov. 1, '17	Nov. 17, '17
Maj. F. A. Brewster, M.C.	Nov. 17, '17	Dec. 22, '17
Maj. A. B. Ritchie, M.C.	Dec. 22, '17	July 2, '18
Capt. F. A. Brewster, M.C.	July 2, '18	July 7, '18

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
3rd Tunnelling Company C.E.		
Maj. A. W. Davis, D.S.O.	Dec. 25, '15	Aug. 10, '17
Maj. A. Hibbert, D.S.O., M.C.	Dec. 22, '17	Demob.
4th Tunnelling Company C.E. (absorbed by Engineer Training Depot)		
Maj. J. R. Roaf	Aug. 8, '16	

Entrenching Battalions

1st Entrenching Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. F. J. Dingwall	July 15, '16	Oct. 3, '17
2nd Entrenching Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. C. R. Hill	July 17, '16	Oct. 1, '17
3rd Entrenching Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. A. K. Hobbins, D.S.O.	June 27, '16	Oct. 6, '17
4th Entrenching Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. H. B. Verret, D.S.O.	Aug. 29, '16	Sept. 15, '17
Lt.-Col. H. Snell	Sept. 15, '17	Oct. 3, '17

Pioneer Battalions

1st Pioneer Battalion (renamed 9th Battalion Railway Troops)		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Hodgins	Nov. 20, '15	Oct. 20, '16
Lt.-Col. J. A. Macdonell	Oct. 20, '16	Jan. 8, '17
Maj. W. H. Moodie	Jan. 8, '17	Mar. 6, '17

(See 9th Battalion Railway Troops for continuation.)

2nd Pioneer Battalion (absorbed on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. W. M. Davis	Dec. 6, '15	Jan. 17, '16
Lt.-Col. G. E. Sanders, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Feb. 7, '16	Aug. 7, '17
Lt.-Col. C. W. Allen	Sept. 8, '17	June 4, '18
3rd Pioneer Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. W. J. H. Holmes, D.S.O.	July 1, '15	May 31, '17
4th Pioneer Battalion — formerly 67th Infantry Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. L. Ross, D.S.O.	Apr. 2, '16	Apr. 30, '17
5th Pioneer Battalion (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. P. Weatherbe	Sept. 12, '16	Dec. 2, '16
107th Pioneer Battalion (absorbed on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. G. Campbell, D.S.O.	Sept. 18, '16	Oct. 9, '17
Lt.-Col. H. C. Walkem	Oct. 9, '17	May 28, '18

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
123rd Pioneer Battalion (absorbed on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. W. B. Kingsmill	Aug. 7, ’16	May 24, ’18
124th Pioneer Battalion (absorbed on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. W. C. V. Chadwick	Aug. 7, ’16	Oct. 18, ’17
Lt.-Col. J. T. C. Thompson	Oct. 18, ’17	May 26, ’18
Labour Commandant, Canadian Corps		
Col. A. W. R. Wilby	Mar. 1, ’18	Demob.
Canadian Labour Group		
Lt.-Col. J. W. H. McKinery, D.S.O.	Sept. 14, ’18	Demob.
1st Infantry Works Battalion — formerly 1st Labour Battalion (absorbed by Canadian Labour Group on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. H. A. C. Machin	Dec. 6, ’16	June 16, ’17
Lt.-Col. R. H. Nelland, D.S.O.	June 16, ’17	Sept. 14, ’18
2nd Infantry Works Battalion — formerly 4th Labour Battalion (absorbed by Canadian Labour Group on reorganization)		
Lt.-Col. J. W. H. McKinery, D.S.O.	Jan. 26, ’17	Sept. 17, ’18

LABOUR BATTALIONS

1st Labour Battalion (See 1st Infantry Works Battalion)

2nd Labour Battalion (See 12th Battalion Railway Troops)

3rd Labour Battalion (See 11th Battalion Railway Troops)

4th Labour Battalion (See 2nd Infantry Works Battalion)

DIVISIONAL TRAINS

1st Divisional Train		
Lt.-Col. W. A. Simson, D.S.O.	Sept. 22, ’14	Nov. 24, ’17
Lt.-Col. W. D. Greer	Nov. 24, ’17	Mar. 3, ’18
Lt.-Col. C. A. Corrigan, D.S.O.	Mar. 3, ’18	Jan. 1, ’19
Lt.-Col. E. J. Cleary, D.S.O.	Jan. 1, ’19	Demob.
2nd Divisional Train		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Massie, D.S.O.	Apr. 17, ’15	Jan. 11, ’18
Maj. J. A. McLennan	Jan. 11, ’18	Feb. 24, ’18
Lt.-Col. C. M. Scott	Feb. 24, ’18	Jan. 25, ’19
Lt.-Col. H. J. Freeman	Jan. 25, ’19	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
3rd Divisional Train		
Lt.-Col. C. H. Loughead	Jan. 17, '16	Jan. 28, '16
Lt.-Col. W. H. D. A. Findlay	Jan. 29, '16	Demob.
4th Divisional Train		
Lt.-Col. R. H. Webb, D.S.O., M.C.	Jan. 7, '16	July 14, '17
Lt.-Col. W. H. Robinson	July 14, '17	Mar. 20, '18
Lt.-Col. W. D. Greer	Mar. 20, '18	Demob.
5th Divisional Train (Artillery Section)		
Maj. G. M. Cooper	Aug. 17, '17	Demob.

SUPPLY COLUMNS[1]

Canadian Corps Supply Column (disbanded on reorganization)		
Maj. E. M. Harris, D.S.O.	Feb. 1, '17	Apr. 14, '18
Canadian Corps Troops Supply Column (absorbed by Corps Troops M.T. Co.)		
Maj. F. B. Eaton	Sept. 14, '15	Dec. 14, '15
Maj. H. C. Greer	Dec. 14, '15	Jan. 17, '16
Maj. A. C. Larter	Jan. 17, '16	Apr. 10, '16
Maj. J. G. Parmelee	Apr. 10, '16	Apr. 14, '18
1st Divisional Supply Column (absorbed by 1st Divisional M.T. Co.)		
Maj. M. Moore	Apr. 8, '15	Oct. 22, '15
Capt. G. H. Gordon	Oct. 22, '15	Dec. 14, '15
Maj. F. B. Eaton	Dec. 14, '15	Dec. 24, '16
Capt. T. J. Turpin	Dec. 31, '16	Dec. 9, '17
Lieut. E. de la Mare	Dec. 9, '17	Feb. 2, '18
Maj. H. W. Webster	Feb. 2, '18	Apr. 10, '18
Capt. E. de la Mare	Apr. 10, '18	Apr. 14, '18
2nd Divisional Supply Column (absorbed by 2nd Divisional M.T. Co.)		
Maj. E. M. Harris	Apr. 10, '15	July 18, '15
Maj. A. C. Larter	Apr. 11, '16	Nov. 15, '16
Capt. J. C. Ellard	Nov. 15, '16	Dec. 11, '16
Maj. F. G. Arnold	Dec. 11, '16	Apr. 10, '18
Maj. H. W. Webster	Apr. 10, '18	Apr. 14, '18
3rd Divisional Supply Column (absorbed by 3rd Divisional M.T. Co.)		
Maj. H. O. Lawson	Jan. 28, '16	July 30, '17
Capt. J. C. Ellard	July 30, '17	Apr. 14, '18
4th Divisional Supply Column (absorbed by 4th Divisional M.T. Company)		
Maj. F. T. McKean	July 19, '16	Jan. 25, '17
Capt. E. R. Birchard	Feb. 8, '17	Nov. 7, '17
Capt. C. G. MacKinnon	Nov. 7, '17	Apr. 14, '18

---

[1] All supply columns were reorganized on April 14, '18, to Mechanical Transport Companies.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
1st Canadian Cavalry Brigade Supply Column (changed to Canadian Section 5th Cavalry Division Supply Column)		
Maj. R. F. Bingham	Nov. 29, '15	Dec. 30, '16
Lieut. A. G. Cleghorn	Dec. 30, '16	Jan. 12, '17
Capt. H. P. Blackwood	Jan. 12, '17	June 6, '17
Lieut. A. G. Cleghorn	June 6, '17	Aug. 1, '17
Capt. D. Shepherd	Aug. 1, '17	Sept. 29, '17
Capt. G. W. Chaplin	Sept. 29, '17	Apr. 14, '18

Canadian Corps Mechanical Transport

Headquarters Canadian Corps Mechanical Transport Column		
Maj. F. T. McKean, D.S.O.	Apr. 15, '18	Demob.
Corps Troops Mechanical Transport Company		
Maj. J. G. Parmelee	Apr. 15, '18	Mar. 18, '19
Capt. D. Shepherd	Mar. 18, '19	Demob.
1st Divisional Mechanical Transport		
Maj. N. J. Lindsay	Apr. 15, '18	July 11, '18
Maj. G. W. Chaplin	July 11, '18	Demob.
2nd Divisional Mechanical Transport Company		
Maj. H. W. Webster	Apr. 15, '18	Apr. 20, '19
Capt. J. H. McLachlin	Apr. 25, '19	Demob.
3rd Divisional Mechanical Transport Company		
Maj. E. M. Harris	Apr. 15, '18	Demob.
4th Divisional Mechanical Transport Company		
Maj. G. H. Gordon	Apr. 15, '18	Demob.
Canadian Engineers Mechanical Transport Company		
Maj. N. J. Lindsay	July 11, '18	Jan. 3, '19
Capt. W. H. Munroe	Jan. 3, '19	Demob.
Canadian Motor Machine Gun Mechanical Transport Company		
Maj. F. G. Arnold	June 1, '18	Demob.
1st Canadian Army Auxiliary Horse Company — formerly No. 1 Reserve Park		
Maj. C. Adams	Sept. 22, '14	Nov. 10, '16
Maj. E. J. Cleary	Nov. 10, '16	Dec. 29, '18
Capt. J. R. Patterson	Dec. 31, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
2nd Canadian Army Auxiliary Horse Company — formerly No. 2 Reserve Park		
Maj. H. A. Stewart, D.S.O.	May 15, '15	Feb. 18, '18
Capt. H. Burnett	Feb. 18, '18	May 24, '18
Maj. C. Ermatinger	May 24, '18	Demob.

AMMUNITION PARKS[1]

Canadian Corps Ammunition Park (absorbed by M.T. Column)		
Lt.-Col. A. de M. Bell	Sept. 15, '15	Feb. 9, '17
Maj. F. T. McKean, D.S.O.	Feb. 9, '17	Apr. 14, '18
1st Divisional Ammunition Sub-Park (absorbed by 1st M.T. Company)		
Maj. A. de M. Bell	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 15, '15
Maj. E. C. Goldie	Sept. 15, '15	Apr. 25, '16
Maj. W. J. Morrison	July 3, '16	Feb. 23, '17
Lieut. F. E. H. Johnson	Feb. 23, '17	Mar. 8, '17
Maj. N. J. Lindsay	Mar. 8, '17	Apr. 14, '18
2nd Divisional Ammunition Sub-Park (absorbed by 2nd M.T. Company)		
Lt.-Col. G. F. C. Poussette	May 15, '15	Sept. 11, '15
Maj. H. W. Webster	Sept. 11, '15	Nov. 17, '17
Capt. W. S. Goodeve, M.C.	Nov. 17, '17	Mar. 13, '18
Lieut. R. W. Whittome	Mar. 16, '18	Apr. 14, '18
3rd Divisional Ammunition Sub-Park (absorbed by 3rd M.T. Company)		
Maj. N. J. Lindsay	Mar. 9, '16	Mar. 8, '17
Capt. W. H. Munroe	Mar. 8, '17	Apr. 14, '18
4th Divisional Ammunition Sub-Park (absorbed by 4th M.T. Company)		
Maj. G. H. Gordon	July 19, '16	Apr. 14, '18
1st Canadian Cavalry Brigade Ammunition Column (disbanded)		
Maj. W. J. Morrison	Nov. 29, '15	July 3, '16
Capt. H. G. Cochrane	July 3, '16	July 20, '16
Lieut. T. R. Young	July 20, '16	Feb. 12, '17

RAILWAY TROOPS

Headquarters Canadian Railway Troops (France)		
Maj.-Gen. J. W. Stewart, C.B., C.M.G.	Mar. 2, '17	Demob.

---

[1] All Ammunition Sub-Parks were absorbed into Mechanical Transport Companies on April 14, '18.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Headquarters Canadian Railway Troops (England)		
Col. J. W. Stewart	Oct. 7, '16	Mar. 2, '17
Col. B. M. Humble, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Mar. 18, '17	Demob.
1st Battalion Railway Troops (from No. 1 Construction Company, Feb. 5, '17)		
Lt.-Col. B. Ripley, C.B.E., D.S.O.	Sept. 12, '16	Demob.
2nd Battalion Railway Troops (from 127th Infantry Battalion, Nov. 8, '16)		
Lt.-Col. F. F. Clarke, D.S.O.	Aug. 23, '16	Demob.
3rd Battalion Railway Troops — formerly 239th Battalion		
Lt.-Col. J. B. L. MacDonald, D.S.O.	Dec. 16, '16	Demob.
4th Battalion Railway Troops		
Lt.-Col. C. L. Hervey, D.S.O.	Jan. 29, '17	June 15, '18
Lt.-Col. J. B. Harstone, D.S.O.	June 15, '18	Demob.
5th Battalion Railway Troops		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Griffin	Feb. 5, '17	Jan. 8, '19
Maj. L. F. Grant	Jan. 8, '19	Demob.
6th Battalion Railway Troops (from 228th Battalion, Mar. 8, '17)		
Lt.-Col. A. Earchman, C.B.E., D.S.O.	Feb. 17, '17	Demob.
7th Battalion Railway Troops (from 257th Battalion, Mar. 8, '17)		
Lt.-Col. L. T. Martin, D.S.O.	Feb. 17, '17	Demob.
8th Battalion Railway Troops (from 218th Battalion, Mar. 8, '17)		
Lt.-Col. J. K. Cornwall, D.S.O.	Feb. 29, '17	Demob.
9th Battalion Railway Troops (from 1st Pioneer Battalion, Mar. 6, '17)		
Lt.-Col. W. H. Moody, D.S.O.	Mar. 6, '17	Demob.
10th Battalion Railway Troops (from 256th Battalion, Apr. 10, '17)		
Lt.-Col. W. A. MacConnell, D.S.O.	Mar. 28, '17	Demob.
11th Battalion Railway Troops — formerly 3rd Labour Battalion		
Lt.-Col. W. A. Munro, D.S.O.	Feb. 2, '17	Demob.
12th Battalion Railway Troops — formerly 2nd Labour Battalion		
Lt.-Col. A. C. Garner, D.S.O.	Feb. 8, '17	Demob.
13th Battalion Railway Troops		
Lt.-Col. S. P. McMordie, D.S.O.	Mar. 13, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Canadian Overseas Railway Construction Corps		
Lt.-Col. C. W. P. Ramsey	June 10, '15	Oct. 23, '16
Lt.-Col. J. G. Reid, D.S.O.	Oct. 23, '16	Demob.
No. 1 Construction Company (See 1st Battalion Railway Troops)		
No. 2 Construction Company		
Maj. D. H. Sutherland	Mar. 28, '17	Demob.

Canadian Forestry Corps

Directorate of Timber Operations		
Maj.-Gen. A. McDougall, C.B.	Sept. 28, '16	Demob.
Canadian Forestry Corps (France)		
Col. J. B. White, D.S.O.	Apr. 22, '17	Nov. 29, '18
Lt.-Col. J. B. Donnelly (acting)	Nov. 29, '18	Demob.
Headquarters Central Group		
Lt.-Col. E. W. Rathbun	Nov. 30, '16	June 15, '17
Maj. P. Garratt	June 15, '17	Aug. 1, '17
Lt.-Col. C. H. L. Jones	Aug. 1, '17	Sept. 1, '18
Lt.-Col. W. F. Cooke, D.S.O.	Sept. 1, '18	Demob.
Headquarters Jura Group		
Lt.-Col. G. H. Johnson, C.B.E.	Jan. 11, '17	Demob.
Headquarters Bordeaux Group		
Lt.-Col. J. L. Miller, C.B.E.	Feb. 16, '18	Mar. 30, '19
Lt.-Col. W. Herd	Mar. 30, '19	Demob.
Headquarters Marne Group		
Lt.-Col. P. D. L. Lyall, M.B.E.	July 1, '18	Demob.
Headquarters No. 1 District		
Lt.-Col. F. J. Carew, O.B.E.	July 27, '17	Demob.
Headquarters No. 2 District		
Lt.-Col. K. H. McDougall, D.S.O. ...	Sept. 15, '17	Oct. 21, '18
Lt.-Col. W. F. Cooke, D.S.O.	Oct. 21, '18	Demob.
Headquarters No. 4 District		
Lt.-Col. J. Wilson	Aug. 2, '17	Demob.
Headquarters No. 5 District		
Lt.-Col. G. M. Strong	Apr. 22, '18	July 28, '18
Lt.-Col. G. B. Klock	July 28, '18	Demob.
Headquarters No. 6 District		
Maj. W. H. Milne	Sept. 9, '17	Jan. 28, '18
Lt.-Col. T. Hale	Jan. 28, '18	Jan. 15, '19
Maj. G. O. Spence	Jan. 15, '19	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
Headquarters No. 9 District		
Lt.-Col. W. F. Cooke, D.S.O.	May 12, '17	Aug. 27, '18
Maj. A. J. Bell	Aug. 27, '18	Oct. 21, '18
Lt.-Col. K. H. McDougall, D.S.O.	Oct. 21, '18	Jan. 9, '19
Maj. A. J. Bell	Jan. 9, '19	Demob.
Headquarters No. 10 District		
Maj. T. Hale	Nov. 2, '17	Jan. 26, '18
Maj. G. B. Klock	Feb. 2, '18	July 28, '18
Lt.-Col. G. M. Strong, D.S.O.	July 28, '18	Sept. 24, '18
Maj. W. A. Ferguson	Sept. 24, '18	Feb. 7, '19
Lieut. C. Cockshutt	Feb. 7, '17	Demob.
Headquarters No. 11 District		
Lt.-Col. W. S. Fetherstonhaugh	Aug. 10, '18	Demob.
Headquarters No. 12 District		
Lt.-Col. J. L. Miller	Aug. 1, '17	Feb. 16, '18
Lt.-Col. W. Herd	Feb. 16, '18	Demob.

Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps

Director-General of Medical Services		
Maj.-Gen. G. LaF. Foster, C.B.	July 16, '18	Demob.
Director of Medical Services (London)		
Surg.-Gen. G. C. Jones, C.M.G.	Sept. 22, '14	Feb. 9, '17
Surg.-Gen. G. LaF. Foster, C.B.	Feb. 9, '17	July 16, '18
Director of Medical Services (France)		
Brig.-Gen. A. E. Ross, C.B., C.M.G.	July 16, '18	Demob.
D.D.M.S. Corps		
Col. G. LaF. Foster, C.B.	Sept. 13, '15	Feb. 9, '17
Col. A. E. Ross, C.B., C.M.G.	Feb. 9, '17	July 16, '18
Col. A. E. Snell, C.M.G., D.S.O.	Aug. 29, '18	Dec. 14, '18
Col. R. M. Simpson, D.S.O.	Dec. 14, '18	
D.D.M.S. (London)		
Col. M. MacLaren, C.M.G.	July 16, '18	Demob.
A.D.M.S. 1st Division		
Col. G. LaF. Foster, C.B.	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 13, '15
Col. A. E. Ross, C.M.G.	Sept. 13, '15	Feb. 9, '17
Col. F. S. L. Ford, C.M.G.	Feb. 9, '17	June 20, '17
Col. R. P. Wright, C.M.G., D.S.O.	June 20, '17	Dec. 28, '18
Col. G. J. Boyce, D.S.O.	Dec. 28, '18	Demob.
A.D.M.S. 2nd Division		
Col. J. T. Fotheringham, C.M.G.	Nov. 5, '14	Mar. 9, '17
Col. H. M. Jacques, D.S.O.	Mar. 9, '17	Dec. 27, '17
Col. R. M. Simpson	Feb. 2, '18	Dec. 14, '18
Col. R. H. MacDonald, M.C.	Dec. 14, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
A.D.M.S. 3rd Division		
Col. J. W. Bridges	Feb. 23, '16	June 22, '16
Col. A. E. Snell, D.S.O.	June 22, '16	Aug. 29, '18
Col. C. P. Templeton, C.B., D.S.O.	Aug. 29, '18	Demob.
A.D.M.S. 4th Division		
Col. H. A. Chisholm, D.S.O.	May 1, '16	May 14, '17
Col. C. A. Peters	May 14, '17	Jan. 18, '19
Col. P. G. Bell	Jan. 18, '19	Demob.
No. 1 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Ross	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 12, '15
Lt.-Col. R. P. Wright	Sept. 13, '15	June 20, '17
Lt.-Col. G. J. Boyce, D.S.O.	June 20, '17	Feb. 27, '19
Lt.-Col. R. M. Filson	Feb. 27, '19	Demob.
No. 2 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. D. W. MacPherson	Sept. 22, '14	Nov. 17, '15
Lt.-Col. E. B. Hardy, D.S.O.	Nov. 17, '15	Nov. 25, '16
Lt.-Col. J. J. Fraser, D.S.O.	Nov. 25, '16	Mar. 26, '18
Lt.-Col. J. H. Wood, D.S.O.	Dec. 18, '18	Demob.
No. 3 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. W. L. Watt	Sept. 22, '14	Sept. 3, '15
Lt.-Col. J. A. Gunn	Sept. 3, '15	Feb. 27, '16
Lt.-Col. C. P. Templeton	Feb. 26, '16	Feb. 9, '17
Lt.-Col. A. S. Donaldson	Feb. 9, '17	Demob.
No. 4 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. W. Webster, D.S.O.	Apr. 18, '15	May 24, '17
Lt.-Col. C. F. McGuffin, D.S.O.	May 24, '17	Dec. 16, '17
Maj. R. H. McDonald, M.C.	Dec. 16, '17	Jan. 18, '19
Maj. G. W. Treleaven, D.S.O., M.C.	Jan. 18, '19	Feb. 22, '19
Maj. T. H. Bell, M.C.	Feb. 22, '19	Demob.
No. 5 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. G. D. Farmer	Apr. 18, '15	Nov. 7, '16
Lt.-Col. C. F. McGuffin	Nov. 7, '16	May 24, '17
Maj. J. F. Burgess	May 24, '17	June 29, '17
Lt.-Col. D. P. Kappele, D.S.O.	June 29, '17	Oct. 13, '18
Maj. H. W. McGill, M.C.	Oct. 13, '18	Mar. 3, '19
Maj. G. W. Treleaven, D.S.O., M.C.	Mar. 5, '19	Demob.
No. 6 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. R. P. Campbell	Apr. 29, '15	Sept. 16, '16
Lt.-Col. T. J. R. Murphy, D.S.O.	Sept. 16, '16	Sept. 14, '18
Lt.-Col. R. H. M. Hardisty, D.S.O., M.C.	Sept. 14, '18	Demob.
No. 7 Ambulance (Cavalry Brigade)		
Lt.-Col. D. P. Kappele	Jan. 10, '15	June 29, '17
Maj. A. C. Rankin	June 29, '17	June 12, '18
Maj. W. A. G. Bauld	June 12, '18	June 24, '18
Maj. W. J. E. Mingie	June 24, '18	July 6, '18
Lt.-Col. W. A. G. Bauld	July 6, '18	Demob.

LT.-COL. C. P. TEMPLETON, D.S.O.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
No. 8 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. S. W. Hewetson	Apr. 1, '16	Jan. 27, '17
Lt.-Col. J. N. Gunn	Jan. 27, '17	Dec. 9, '17
Maj. E. R. Selby	Dec. 9, '17	Jan. 13, '18
Lt.-Col. J. N. Gunn	Jan. 13, '18	Feb. 27, '18
Lt.-Col. E. R. Selby	Feb. 27, '18	Demob.
No. 9 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. C. A. Peters	Jan. 3, '16	Nov. 2, '16
Lt.-Col. A. T. Bazin, D.S.O.	Nov. 2, '16	Nov. 3, '17
Lt.-Col. C. W. Vipond, D.S.O.	Nov. 18, '17	Demob.
No. 10 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. A. W. Tanner	Mar. 2, '16	June 3, '16
Lt.-Col. G. R. Philip	June 3, '16	Apr. 21, '17
Lt.-Col. T. McC. Leask, D.S.O.	Apr. 21, '17	Demob.
No. 11 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. J. D. McQueen	May 22, '16	Sept. 22, '17
Lt.-Col. H. E. Moshier	Sept. 22, '17	Aug. 30, '18
Lt.-Col. S. Paulin, D.S.O.	Aug. 30, '18	Demob.
No. 12 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. H. F. Gordon	June 24, '16	Jan. 11, '17
Lt.-Col. P. G. Bell, D.S.O.	Jan. 11, '17	Jan. 5, '19
Maj. G. Hall	Jan. 5, '19	Jan. 25, '19
Maj. F. C. Clarke, M.C.	Jan. 25, '19	Feb. 13, '19
Lt.-Col. E. A. Neff	Feb. 13, '19	Demob.
No. 13 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. J. L. Biggar	July 1, '16	Jan. 3, '17
Lt.-Col. A. L. C. Gilday	Jan. 29, '17	Apr. 23, '18
Lt.-Col. W. H. K. Anderson, D.S.O.	Apr. 23, '18	Demob.
No. 14 Field Ambulance		
Lt.-Col. R. S. Pentecost	May 30, '17	Feb. 28, '18
Lt.-Col. G. G. Corbet	May 12, '18	Demob.
No. 15 Field Ambulance		
Maj. R. M. Filson	Apr. 10, '17	May 14, '17
Lt.-Col. E. L. Stone	May 14, '17	Feb. 28, '19
No. 16 Field Ambulance (disbanded)		
Lt.-Col. G. G. Corbet	Apr. 10, '17	Feb. 28, '18
No. 1 Canadian Clearing Station		
Lt.-Col. F. S. L. Ford	Sept. 22, '14	June 20, '16
Lt.-Col. T. W. H. Young	June 20, '16	Mar. 18, '17
Lt.-Col. C. H. Dickson	Mar. 18, '17	Feb. 7, '18
Lt.-Col. A. E. H. Bennett	Feb. 16, '18	Feb. 28, '19
Maj. R. B. Robertson	Feb. 28, '19	Demob.
No. 2 Canadian Clearing Station		
Col. G. S. Rennie	Apr. 18, '15	May 4, '15
Col. W. A. Scott	May 4, '15	Aug. 24, '15
Lt.-Col. J. E. Davey	Aug. 24, '15	Nov. 16, '17
Lt.-Col. P. G. Brown	Nov. 16, '17	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
No. 3 Canadian Clearing Station		
Lt.-Col. R. J. Blanchard	July 1, '15	Nov. 14, '17
Lt.-Col. J. L. Biggar	Nov. 14, '17	June 12, '18
Lt.-Col. F. A. Young	June 22, '18	Demob.
No. 4 Canadian Clearing Station		
Lt.-Col. S. W. Prowse	June 19, '16	Dec. 14, '17
Lt.-Col. S. Campbell	Dec. 15, '17	Jan. 28, '19
Maj. J. L. Cock	Jan. 28, '19	Demob.
No. 1 Stationary Hospital (changed to No. 13 Canadian General Hospital)		
Lt.-Col. L. Drum	Sept. 22, '14	Feb. 12, '15
Lt.-Col. S. H. McKee	Feb. 12, '15	Dec. 27, '15
Lt.-Col. E. J. Williams	Dec. 27, '15	Dec. 2, '17
No. 2 Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. A. T. Shillington	Sept. 22, '14	Nov. 22, '15
Lt.-Col. J. T. Clarke	Nov. 22, '15	Nov. 28, '16
Lt.-Col. G. D. Farmer	Nov. 28, '16	Dec. 8, '17
Lt.-Col. D. Donald	Dec. 9, '17	Aug. 29, '18
Lt.-Col. G. Clingan	Aug. 30, '18	Jan. 16, '19
Lt.-Col. J. Hayes, D.S.O.	Jan. 17, '19	Demob.
No. 3 Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. H. R. Casgrain	Feb. 6, '15	Aug. 29, '15
Lt.-Col. E. G. Davis, C.M.G.	Aug. 29, '15	May 1, '17
Lt.-Col. C. H. Reason, D.S.O.	May 1, '17	Demob.
No. 4 Stationary Hospital (renamed No. 8 General Hospital)		
Lt.-Col. A. Mignault	May 6, '15	July 8, '16
No. 5 (Queen's University) Stationary Hospital (renamed No. 7 General Hospital)		
Lt.-Col. F. Etherington	May 6, '15	Jan. 26, '16
No. 7 (Dalhousie University) Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. J. Stewart	Jan. 10, '16	Nov. 18, '16
Maj. E. V. Hogan	Nov. 19, '16	Dec. 12, '16
Lt.-Col. J. Stewart	Dec. 12, '16	Mar. 7, '18
Lt.-Col. E. V. Hogan	Mar. 7, '18	Demob.
No. 8 Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. H. E. Munroe	May 19, '16	Demob.
No. 9 (St. Francis Xavier College) Stationary Hospital (changed to No. 12 General Hospital)		
Lt.-Col. R. C. McLeod	June 19, '15	Jan. 4, '17
Lt.-Col. H. E. Kendall	Jan. 4, '17	Mar. 8, '17
Lt.-Col. C. H. Gilmour	Mar. 8, '17	Apr. 7, '17
Lt.-Col. H. E. Kendall	Apr. 7, '17	Sept. 30, '17

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
No. 9 (St. Francis Xavier College) Stationary Hospital (reorganized Nov. 22, '17)		
Lt.-Col. H. E. Kendall	Nov. 22, '17	Aug. 29, '18
Col. R. St. J. Macdonald	Aug. 29, '18	Demob.
No. 10 (Western University) Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. E. Seaborn	Aug. 23, '16	Demob.
No. 1 General Hospital		
Col. M. Maclaren, C.M.G.	Sept. 21, '14	May 11, '16
Col. C. F. Wilde	May 11, '16	Sept. 15, '17
Col. R. M. Simpson	Sept. 15, '17	Feb. 2, '18
Col. J. A. Gunn	Feb. 27, '18	Nov. 13, '18
Col. W. H. Delaney	Nov. 13, '18	Feb. 4, '19
Lt.-Col. N. B. Gwyn	Feb. 4, '19	Demob.
No. 2 General Hospital		
Col. J. W. Bridges	Apr. 10, '15	Feb. 6, '16
Col. K. Cameron	Feb. 6, '16	May 10, '17
Col. G. S. Rennie, G.M.G.	May 16, '17	Demob.
No. 3 (McGill University) General Hospital		
Col. H. S. Birkett, C.B.	Mar. 5, '15	Nov. 7, '17
Col. J. M. Elder, C.M.G.	Nov. 7, '17	July 8, '18
Lt.-Col. A. T. Bazin	July 9, '18	Aug. 1, '18
Col. Lorne Drum	Aug. 1, '18	June 10, '19
Lt.-Col. L. H. McKim	June 10, '19	Demob.
No. 4 General Hospital (took over Basingstoke Military Hospital, Sept. 20, '17)		
Col. J. A. Roberts	May 15, '16	Dec. 18, '16
Col. W. B. Hendry, D.S.O.	Jan. 30, '17	Demob.
No. 5 General Hospital (took over Military Hospital, Kirkdale, Oct. 13, '17)		
Col. E. C. Hart, C.M.G.	May 15, '15	Dec. 14, '17
Col. G. D. Farmer	Dec. 14, '17	Mar. 1, '19
Col. P. Burnett	Mar. 1, '19	Demob.
No. 6 (Laval University) General Hospital		
Col. G. E. Beauchamp	Mar. 23, '16	Demob.
No. 7 (Queen's University) General Hospital — formerly No. 5 Stationary Hospital		
Col. F. Etherington, C.M.G.	Mar. 2, '16	Demob.
No. 8 General Hospital—formerly No. 4 Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. A. Mignault	July 8, '16	July 17, '16
Lt.-Col. A. E. Le Bel	July 17, '16	Nov. 6, '17
Col. H. R. Casgrain	Nov. 6, '17	Nov. 14, '18
Lt.-Col. R. de L. Harwood	Nov. 14, '18	Demob.

	APPOINTED	RETIRED
No. 9 General Hospital (Canadian Military Hospital, Shorncliffe)		
Lt.-Col. C. A. Reason	June 18, '16	May 7, '17
Col. E. G. Davis, C.M.G.	May 8, '17	Apr. 29, '18
Lt.-Col. E. J. Williams, D.S.O.	Apr. 29, '18	Demob.
No. 10 General Hospital—formerly Kitchener War Hospital		
Lt.-Col. A. T. Shillington	Mar. 14, '17	Sept. 10, '17
Col. C. F. Wilde	Sept. 16, '17	Feb. 22, '18
Col. W. McKeown	Feb. 22, '18	Demob.
No. 11 General Hospital (Moore Barracks Hospital)		
Col. W. A. Scott, C.M.G.	July 9, '15	Demob.
No. 12 General Hospital (took over Bramshott Military Hospital from No. 9 Stationary Hospital, Sept. 21, '17)		
Lt.-Col. H. E. Kendall	Sept. 21, '17	Nov. 20, '17
Col. W. Webster, D.S.O.	Nov. 20, '17	Mar. 12, '18
Col. M. Robertson, C.B.E.	Mar. 12, '18	Demob.
No. 13 General Hospital—formerly No. 1 Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. E. J. Williams, D.S.O.	Oct. 2, '17	Apr. 14, '18
Lt.-Col. H. C. S. Elliott	Apr. 14, '18	Demob.
No. 14 General Hospital—formerly No. 10 Stationary Hospital		
Lt.-Col. A. E. Seaborn	Sept. 10, '17	Nov. 28, '17
Lt.-Col. R. D. Panton	Nov. 28, '17	Demob.
No. 15 Hospital (from Duchess of Connaught Red Cross Hospital, Dec. '17)		
Lt.-Col. F. S. L. Lord	Dec. 16, '14	Feb. 2, '15
Col. C. W. F. Gorrell	Feb. 2, '15	Sept. 24, '16
Lt.-Col. D. W. McPherson, C.M.G.	Sept. 29, '16	Jan. 29, '17
Col. J. A. Roberts, C.B.	Jan. 29, '17	Apr. 4, '17
Col. W. L. Watts, C.M.G.	Apr. 4, '17	Aug. 6, '18
Col. P. G. Goldsmith	Aug. 27, '18	Demob.
No. 16 General Hospital (from Ontario Military Hospital, Orpington, Dec. '17)		
Lt.-Col. I. H. Cameron	Jan. 31, '16	Apr. 10, '16
Lt.-Col. D. W. McPherson, C.M.G.	Apr. 10, '16	Sept. 29, '16
Lt.-Col. G. Chambers	Sept. 29, '16	Jan. 29, '17
Col. D. W. McPherson, C.M.G.	Jan. 29, '17	Demob.

APPENDIX II

DECORATIONS AWARDED CANADIANS

BRITISH

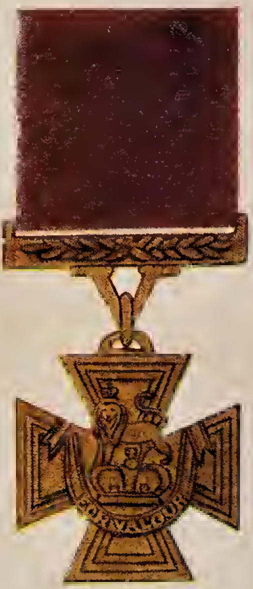
V.C.	64
K.C.B.	8
C.B.	45
G.C.M.G.	1
K.C.M.G.	6
C.M.G.	172
D.S.O.	710
Bar to D.S.O.	89
2nd Bar to D.S.O.	15
C.B.E.	50
G.B.E.	259
M.B.E.	100
M.V.O.	2
M.C.	2,877
Bar to M.C.	294
2nd Bar to M.C.	16
R.R.C.	338
Bar to R.R.C.	4
D.F.C.	40
Bar to D.F.C.	6
A.F.C.	16
D.F.M.	1
D.C.M.	1,930
Bar to D.C.M.	38
2nd Bar to D.C.M.	1
M.M.	12,316
Bar to M.M.	836
2nd Bar to M.M.	38
M.S.M.	1,553
King's Police Medal	1
Albert Medal	1

AMERICAN

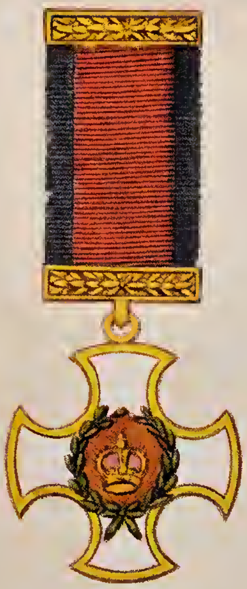
D.S.M.	2

Foreign

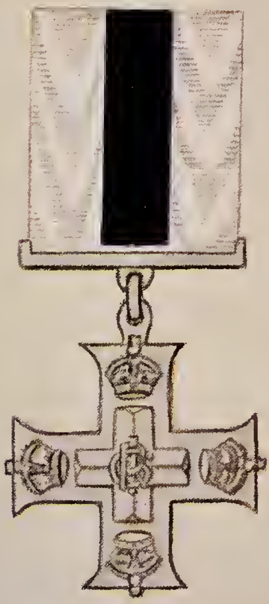
Légion d'Honneur Croix de Commandeur	8
Légion d'Honneur Croix d'Officier	18
Légion d'Honneur Croix de Chevalier	34
Croix de Guerre	710
Médaille Militaire	54
Decoration Militaire	8
Médaille d'Honneur avec Glaives (en Vermeil)	3
Médaille d'Honneur avec Glaives (en Argent)	11
Médaille d'Honneur avec Glaives (en Bronze)	22
Médaille des Épidémies (en Argent)	4
Médaille des Épidémies (en Vermeil)	1
Ordre du Mérite Agricole Chevalier	52
Ordre du Mérite Agricole Officier	4
Médaille de la Reconnaissance (en Bronze)	4
Médaille Civique (Belgium)	1
Palmes Académie Officier de l'Instruction Publique	1
Ordre de Leopold Commandeur	2
Ordre de Leopold Officier	2
Ordre de Leopold Chevalier	6
Ordre de la Couronne Officier	4
Ordre de la Couronne Chevalier	1
Médaille de la Reine Elizabeth	3
Ordre de la Couronne Commandeur	1
Order of St. Stanislas	31
Order of Ste. Anne	19
Order of St. George	103
Medal of St. George	25
Order of St. Vladimir	2
Order of the Crown of Italy	5
Order of St. Maurice and St. Lazarus	3
Silver Medal for Military Valour	4
Bronze Medal for Military Valour	22
Order of the White Eagle	4
Order of St. Sava	5
Gold Medal for Zealous Service	1
Order of Danilo	8
Silver Medal for Bravery	2
Military Order of Avis	4
Portuguese Military Medal for Good Service (Copper)	2
Order of the Star of Roumania Chevalier	3
Order of the Crown of Roumania Chevalier	2
Croix de Virtute Militara	4
Medaille Barbatie si Credinta	6



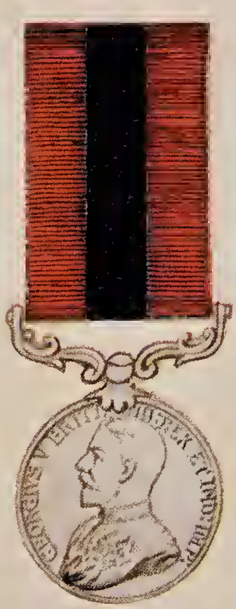
VICTORIA CROSS



DISTINGUISHED SERVICE ORDER



MILITARY CROSS


GEORGIVS V BRITT: OMN: REX ET IND: IMP:

DISTINGUISHED CONDUCT IN THE FIELD

Order of Regina Maria	1
Order of the White Elephant	2
Order of the Crown of Siam	2
Order of Wen-Hu	3
Mentioned in Despatches	5,467
Name brought to the Notice of the Secretary of State for War	100

APPENDIX III

STATISTICAL ACCOUNT OF THE C.E.F.

THE total number of men enlisted in Canada from the beginning of the war to November 15th, 1918, was 595,441.

The details are:—

Obtained by voluntary enlistment	465,984
Drafted or reporting voluntarily after the Military Service Act came into force	179,933
Granted leave or discharged	24,933

Overseas Service other than C.E.F.:—

Royal Air Force	21,169
Imperial Motor Transport	710
Inland Water Transport	4,701
Naval Service	2,814
Jewish Palestine Draft	42

The number of men of the Canadian Expeditionary Force who had gone overseas on November 15th, 1918, was 418,052.

The movement overseas by years was as follows:—

Before December 31st, 1914	30,999
Calendar year 1915	84,334
Calendar year 1916	165,553
Calendar year 1917	63,536
January 1st to November 15th, 1918	73,630

The distribution of Canada's troops was as follows:—

C.E.F. proceeded overseas	418,052

On September 30th, 1918, about 160,000 men were in France and about 116,000 men in England.

On the strength of the C.E.F. in Canada and St. Lucia, including those under training as overseas reinforcements, Siberian Expeditionary Force, Canadian Garrison Regiment, Military Police Corps, Medical and Administrative Services, etc.	36,533
On harvest leave without pay	15,405
Granted leave of absence without pay as compassionate and hardship cases	7,216
Number discharged in Canada who had not proceeded overseas for the following among other reasons: as below medical standard, absentees, aliens, to accept commissions, deaths, on transfer to British Army and Royal Air Force	95,306

The total casualties sustained by the Canadian Expeditionary Force, and reported up to January 15th, 1919, were 218,433. The details are:—

Killed in action	35,684
Died of wounds	12,437
Died of disease	4,057
Wounded	155,839
Prisoners of war	3,049
Presumed dead	4,682
Missing	398
Deaths in Canada	2,287
Total	218,433

The Canadians' longest line was in front of Vimy, probably one tenth of the British front.

In the closing days of the war they were continually used as spear-head troops, leading the attack at Amiens on August 9th, 1918, at Arras on August 26th, and on the Drocourt-Quéant Line (Hindenburg Line) on September 24th, 1918.

APPENDIX IV

TERMS OF ARMISTICE WITH GERMANY

(Signed at 5 a.m. on November 11th)

A. — Clauses relating to Western Front

I. — Cessation of operations by land and in the air six hours after the signature of the Armistice [viz., at 11 a.m.].

II. — Immediate evacuation of invaded countries — Belgium, France, Alsace-Lorraine, Luxemburg — so ordered as to be completed within fourteen days from the signature of the Armistice.

German troops which have not left the above-mentioned territories within the period fixed will become prisoners of war.

Occupation by the Allied and United States Forces jointly will keep pace with evacuation in these areas.

All movements of evacuation and occupation will be regulated in accordance with a Note (Annexure 1).

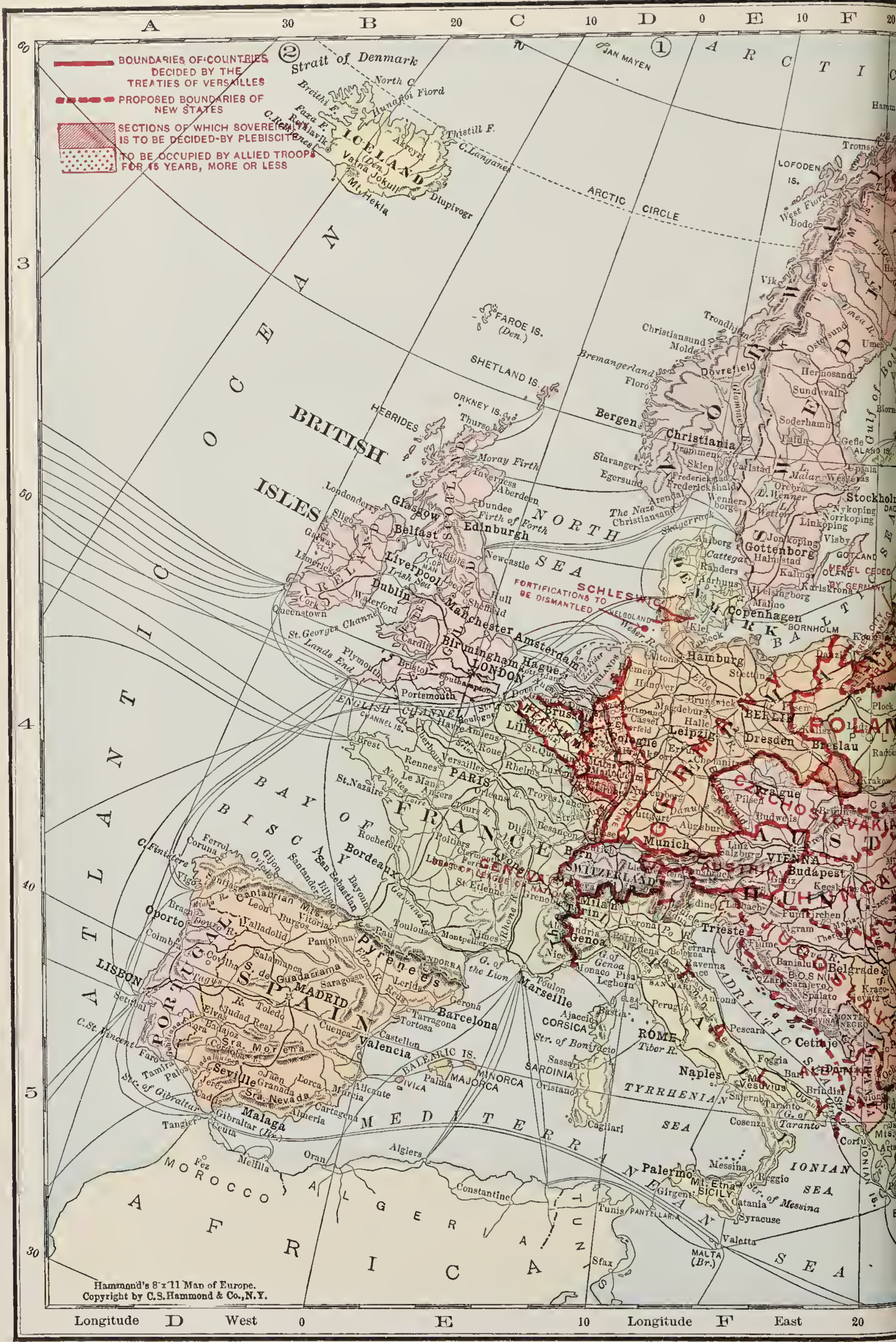
III. — Repatriation, beginning at once, to be completed within fourteen days, of all inhabitants of the countries above enumerated (including hostages, persons under trial, or convicted).

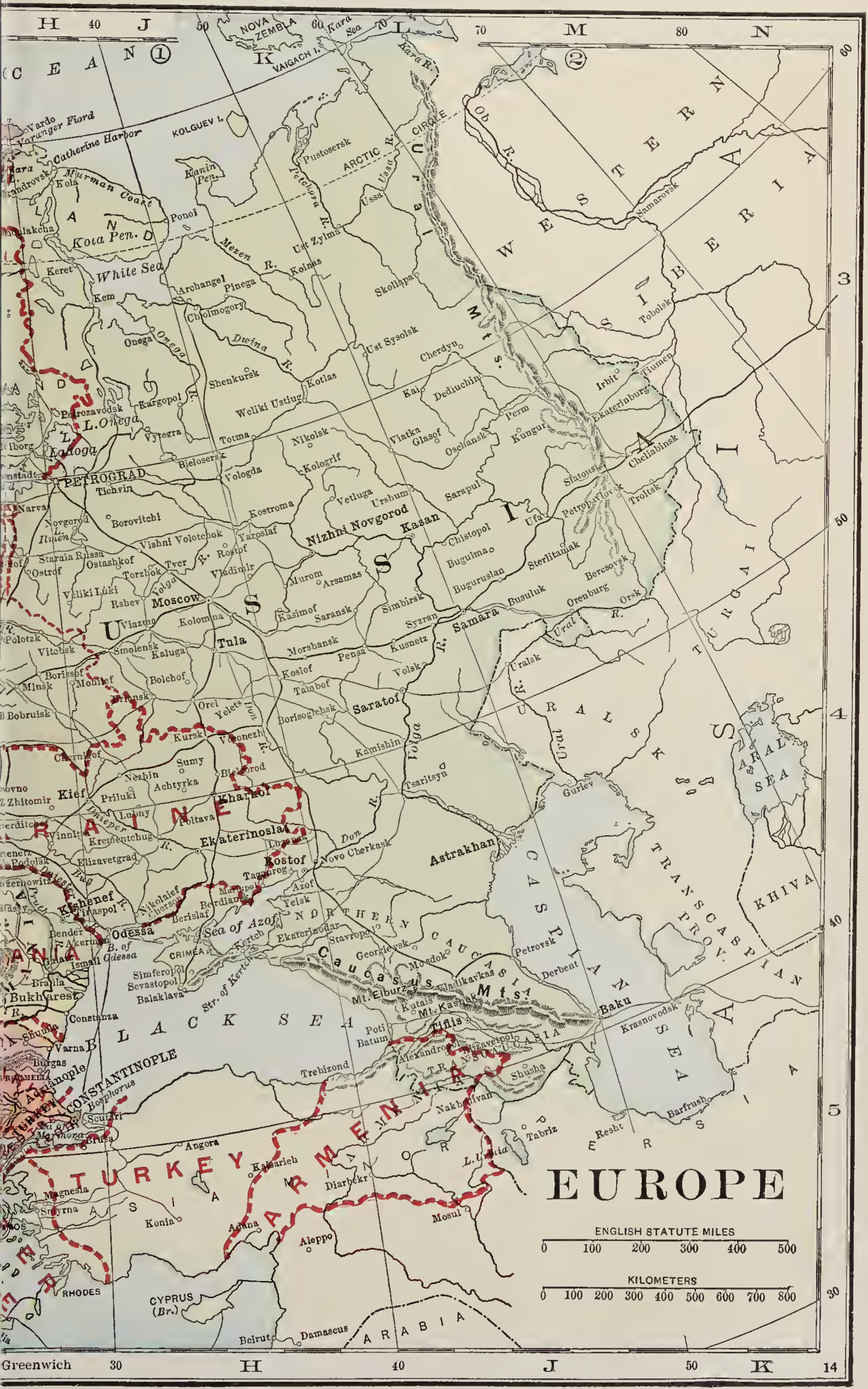
IV. — Surrender in good condition by the German Armies of the following equipment: —

5,000 guns (2,500 heavy, 2,500 field).
30,000 machine guns.
3,000 *Minenwerfer.*
2,000 aeroplanes (fighters, bombers — firstly D. 7's — and night bombing machines).

The above to be delivered *in situ* to the Allied and United States troops in accordance with the detailed conditions laid down in the Note (Annexure 1).

V. — Evacuation by the German Armies of the countries on the left bank of the Rhine. These countries on the left


BOUNDARIES OF COUNTRIES DECIDED BY THE TREATIES OF VERSAILLES
PROPOSED BOUNDARIES OF NEW STATES
SECTIONS OF WHICH SOVEREIGNTY IS TO BE DECIDED BY PLEBISCITE
TO BE OCCUPIED BY ALLIED TROOPS FOR 15 YEARS, MORE OR LESS
A
B
C
D
E
F
30
20
10
0
60
50
40
30
Strait of Denmark
JAN MAYEN
ARCTIC CIRCLE
ICELAND (Den.)
Reykjavik
Mt. Hekla
FAROE IS. (Den.)
SHETLAND IS.
ORKNEY IS.
HEBRIDES
BRITISH ISLES
ATLANTIC OCEAN
NORTH SEA
LOFODEN IS.
Trondhjem
Bergen
Christiania
Stockholm
Copenhagen
Gottenborg
Glasgow
Edinburgh
Belfast
Dublin
Liverpool
Manchester
Birmingham
LONDON
Queenstown
St. Georges Channel
ENGLISH CHANNEL
Amsterdam
Hague
SCHLESWIG
FORTIFICATIONS TO BE DISMANTLED
HELGOLAND
MEMEL CEDED BY GERMANY
Hamburg
BERLIN
Leipzig
Dresden
Breslau
POLAND
CZECHOSLOVAKIA
Prague
Munich
VIENNA
Budapest
SWITZERLAND
Bern
Brussels
BELGIUM
Cologne
PARIS
FRANCE
Bordeaux
Lyons
Geneva
Marseille
BAY OF BISCAY
SPAIN
MADRID
PORTUGAL
LISBON
Oporto
Barcelona
Valencia
Seville
Malaga
Gibraltar (Br.)
Str. of Gibraltar
BALEARIC IS.
MAJORCA
MINORCA
CORSICA
SARDINIA
ROME
Naples
Genoa
Milan
Trieste
Belgrade
Sarajevo
Cetinje
ADRIATIC SEA
TYRRHENIAN SEA
IONIAN SEA
SICILY
Palermo
Messina
MALTA (Br.)
Valetta
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
Tunis
Algiers
ALGERIA
MOROCCO
AFRICA
Tangier
Hammond's 8"x11 Map of Europe.
Copyright by C.S.Hammond & Co.,N.Y.
Longitude
West
East



EUROPE
ENGLISH STATUTE MILES
0 100 200 300 400 500
KILOMETERS
0 100 200 300 400 500 600 700 800
H 40 J 50 K 60 L 70 M 80 N
Greenwich 30 H 40 J 50 K
①
②
3
4
5
60
50
40
30
OCEAN
NOVA ZEMBLA
VAIGACH I.
Kara Sea
Kara R.
KOLGUEV I.
Vardo
Varanger Fiord
Catherine Harbor
Murman Coast
Kola
Kanin Pen.
Pustosersk
ARCTIC CIRCLE
Ussa R.
Ussa
Petchora R.
Ural Mts.
Ob R.
WESTERN SIBERIA
Samarovsk
Tobolsk
Tiumen
Irbit
Ekaterinburg
Cheliabinsk
Troitsk
Ponoi
Kola Pen.
White Sea
Keret
Kem
Archangel
Pinega
Cholmogory
Mezen R.
Ust Zylma
Koinas
Skoliapa
Onega
Onega R.
Dwina R.
Shenkursk
Kotlas
Ust Sysolsk
Cherdyn
Kai
Dediuchin
Perm
Kungur
Oschansk
Glasof
Viatka
Weliki Ustiug
Kargopol
Petrozavodsk
L. Onega
Vytegra
Totma
Nikolsk
Kologrif
L. Ladoga
PETROGRAD
Tichvin
Bielosersk
Vologda
Narva
Novgorod
L. Ilmen
Borovitchi
Vishni Volotchok
Kostroma
Vetluga
Urshum
Sarapul
Slatoust
Petropavlovsk
Staraia Russa
Ostashkof
Ostrof
Torzhok
Tver
Yaroslaf
Rostof
Nizhni Novgorod
Kasan
Chistopol
Bugulma
Ufa
Sterlitamak
Beresovsk
Orsk
Veliki Luki
Rshev
Volga R.
Moscow
Vladimir
Murom
Arsamas
Kasimof
Saransk
Simbirsk
Syzran
Samara
Buguruslan
Busuluk
Orenburg
Ural R.
TURGAI
RUSSIA
Polotzk
Vitebsk
Viazma
Kolomna
Smolensk
Kaluga
Tula
Morshansk
Pensa
Kusnetz
Uralsk
Borissof
Minsk
Mohilef
Bolchof
Koslof
Tambof
Volsk
Bobruisk
Briansk
Orel
Yelets
Don R.
Borisoglebsk
Saratof
URALSK
Ural R.
ARAL SEA
Kursk
Voronezh
Kamishin
Volga R.
Tsaritsyn
Gurief
Chernigof
Sumy
Bielgorod
Rovno
Zhitomir
Kief
Nezhin
Priluki
Achtyrka
Kharkof
Lubny
Poltava
UKRAINE
Berditchef
Dnieper R.
Vinnitsa
Krementchug
Ekaterinoslaf
Lugansk
Kamenetz Podolsk
Elisavetgrad
Rostof
Novo Cherkask
Don R.
Astrakhan
Dniester R.
Bug R.
Taganrog
Czernowitz
Kishenef
Tiraspol
Nikolaief
Cherson
Mariupol
Berdiansk
Azof
Yeisk
NORTHERN CAUCASIA
Bender
Akerman
Odessa
B. of Odessa
Berislaf
Sea of Azof
Ekaterinodar
Stavropol
Georgievsk
Mosdok
Petrovsk
Derbent
CASPIAN SEA
TRANSCASPIAN PROV.
KHIVA
CRIMEA
Kertch
Str. of Kertch
Simferopol
Sevastopol
Balaklava
Ismail
Galatz
Braila
Bukharest
Caucasus Mts.
Mt. Elburz
Vladikavkas
Kutais
Mt. Kasbek
Tiflis
Baku
Krasnovodsk
Constanza
BLACK SEA
Poti
Batum
Alexandropol
Elizavetpol
TRANSCAUCASIA
Shusha
Varna
Burgas
Adrianople
CONSTANTINOPLE
Bosphorus
Scutari
Trebizond
ARMENIA
Nakhitchevan
Tabriz
Resht
PERSIA
Barfrush
Brusa
Marmora
TURKEY
Angora
Kaisarieh
Diarbekr
L. Urumia
Magnesia
Smyrna
ASIA
Konia
Adana
Mosul
Aleppo
RHODES
CYPRUS (Br.)
Beirut
Damascus
ARABIA

bank of the Rhine shall be administered by the local authorities under the control of the Allied and United States Armies of occupation.

The occupation of these territories will be carried out by Allied and United States garrisons holding the principal crossings of the Rhine (Mayence, Coblenz, Cologne), together with bridgeheads at these points of a 30 kilometre [about 19 miles] radius on the right bank, and by garrisons similarly holding the strategic points of the regions.

A neutral zone shall be set up on the right bank of the Rhine between the river and a line drawn 10 kilometres [6¼ miles] distant, starting from the Dutch frontier, to the Swiss frontier. In the case of inhabitants, no person shall be prosecuted for having taken part in any military measures previous to the signing of the Armistice.

No measure of a general or official character shall be taken which would have, as a consequence, the depreciation of industrial establishments or a reduction of their *personnel.*

Evacuation by the enemy of the Rhinelands shall be so ordered as to be completed within a further period of sixteen days — in all thirty-one days after the signature of the Armistice.

All movements of evacuation and occupation will be regulated according to the Note (Annexure 1).

VI. — In all territory evacuated by the enemy there shall be no evacuation of inhabitants; no damage or harm shall be done to the persons or property of the inhabitants.

No destruction of any kind to be committed.

Military establishments of all kinds shall be delivered intact, as well as military stores of food, munitions, equipment not removed during the periods fixed for evacuation.

Stores of food of all kinds for the civil population, cattle, etc., shall be left *in situ.*

Industrial establishments shall not be impaired in any way, and their *personnel* shall not be moved.

VII. — Roads and means of communication of every kind, railroads, waterways, main roads, bridges, telegraphs, telephones shall be in no manner impaired.

All civil and military *personnel* at present employed on them shall remain.

5,000 locomotives, 150,000 wagons, and 5,000 motor lorries in good working order, with all necessary spare parts and fittings, shall be delivered to the Associated Powers within the period fixed for the evacuation of Belgium and Luxemburg.

The railways of Alsace-Lorraine shall be handed over within the same period, together with all pre-war *personnel* and material.

Further, material necessary for the working of railways in the country on the left bank of the Rhine shall be left *in situ.*

All stores of coal and material for upkeep of permanent way, signals, and repair shops shall be left *in situ* and kept in an efficient state by Germany, as far as the means of communication are concerned, during the whole period of the Armistice.

All barges taken from the Allies shall be restored to them. The Note appended as Annexure 2 regulates the detail of these measures.

VIII. — The German Command shall be responsible for revealing all mines or delay-action fuses disposed on territory evacuated by the German troops, and shall assist in their discovery and destruction.

The German Command shall also reveal all destructive measures that may have been taken (such as poisoning or pollution of springs, wells, etc.), under penalty of reprisals.

IX. — The right of requisition shall be exercised by the Allied and United States Armies in all occupied territory, save for settlement of accounts with authorized persons.

The upkeep of the troops of occupation in the Rhineland (excluding Alsace-Lorraine) shall be charged to the German Government.

X. — The immediate repatriation, without reciprocity, according to detailed conditions which shall be fixed, of all Allied and United States prisoners of war; the Allied Powers and the United States of America shall be able to dispose of these prisoners as they wish. However, the return of German prisoners of war interned in Holland and Switzerland shall continue as heretofore. The return of German prisoners of war shall be settled at peace preliminaries.

XI. — Sick and wounded who cannot be removed from evacuated territory will be cared for by German *personnel,* who will be left on the spot, with the medical material required.

B. — CLAUSES RELATING TO THE EASTERN FRONTIERS OF GERMANY

XII. — All German troops at present in any territory which before the war belonged to Russia, Rumania, or Turkey, shall withdraw within the frontiers of Germany as they existed on August 1st, 1914; and all German troops at present in territories which before the war formed part of Russia must likewise return to within the frontiers of Germany as above defined as soon as the Allies shall think the moment suitable, having regard to the internal situation of these territories.

XIII. — Evacuation by German troops to begin at once; and all German instructors, prisoners, and civilian as well as military agents now on the territory of Russia (as defined on August 1st, 1914) to be recalled.

XIV. — German troops to cease at once all requisitions and seizures, and any other undertaking with a view to obtaining supplies intended for Germany in Rumania and Russia, as defined on August 1st, 1914.

XV. — Abandonment of the Treaties of Bukarest and Brest-Litovsk and of the Supplementary Treaties.

XVI. — The Allies shall have free access to the territories evacuated by the Germans on their Eastern frontier, either through Danzig or by the Vistula, in order to convey supplies to the populations of these territories or for the purpose of maintaining order.

C. — CLAUSE RELATING TO EAST AFRICA

XVII. — Unconditional evacuation of all German forces operating in East Africa within one month.

D. — GENERAL CLAUSES

XVIII. — Repatriation, without reciprocity, within a maximum period of one month, in accordance with detailed conditions hereafter to be fixed, of all civilians interned or deported who may be citizens of other Allied or Associated States than those mentioned in Clause III.

XIX. — With the reservation that any future claims and demands of the Allies and United States of America remain unaffected, the following financial conditions are required: —

Reparation for damage done.

While the Armistice lasts no public securities shall be removed by the enemy which can serve as a pledge to the Allies for the recovery or reparation for war losses.

Immediate restitution of the cash deposit in the National Bank of Belgium, and, in general, immediate return of all documents, specie, stocks, shares, paper money, together with plant for the issue thereof, touching public or private interests in the invaded countries.

Restitution of the Russian and Rumanian gold yielded to Germany or taken by that Power.

This gold to be delivered in trust to the Allies until the signature of peace.

E. — Naval Conditions

XX. — Immediate cessation of all hostilities at sea, and definite information to be given as to the location and movements of all German ships.

Notification to be given to neutrals that freedom of navigation in all territorial waters is given to the Naval and Mercantile Marines of the Allied and Associated Powers, all questions of neutrality being waived.

XXI. — All Naval and Mercantile Marine prisoners of war of the Allied and Associated Powers in German hands to be returned, without reciprocity.

XXII. — Handing over to the Allies and the United States of all submarines (including all submarine cruisers and minelayers) which are present at the moment with full complement in the ports specified by the Allies and the United States. Those that cannot put to sea to be deprived of crews and supplies, and shall remain under the supervision of the Allies and the United States. Submarines ready to put to sea shall be prepared to leave German ports immediately on receipt of wireless order to sail to the port of surrender, the remainder to follow as early as possible. The conditions of this Article shall be carried [out] within fourteen days after the signing of the Armistice.

XXIII. — The following German surface warships, which shall be designated by the Allies and the United States of America, shall forthwith be disarmed and thereafter interned in neutral ports, or, failing them, Allied ports, to be designated by the Allies and the United States of America, and placed under the surveillance of the Allies and the United States of America, only caretakers being left on board, namely: —

6 Battle Cruisers.
10 Battleships.
8 Light Cruisers, including two minelayers.
50 Destroyers of the most modern types.

All other surface warships (including river craft) are to be concentrated in German Naval bases to be designated by the Allies and the United States of America, and are to be paid off and completely disarmed and placed under the supervision of the Allies and the United States of America. All vessels of the auxiliary fleet (trawlers, motor-vessels, etc.) are to be disarmed. All vessels specified for internment shall be ready to leave German ports seven days after the signing of the Armistice. Directions of the voyage will be given by wireless.

NOTE. — A declaration has been signed by the Allied Delegates and handed to the German Delegates, to the effect that, in the event of ships not being handed over owing to the mutinous state of the Fleet, the Allies reserve the right to occupy Heligoland as an advanced base to enable them to enforce the terms of the Armistice. The German Delegates have on their part signed a Declaration that they will recommend the Chancellor to accept this.

XXIV. — The Allies and the United States of America shall have the right to sweep up all minefields and obstructions laid by Germany outside German territorial waters, and the positions of these are to be indicated.

XXV. — Freedom of access to and from the Baltic to be given to the Naval and Mercantile Marines of the Allied and Associated Powers. To secure this, the Allies and the United States of America shall be empowered to occupy all German forts, fortifications, batteries, and defence works of all kinds in all the entrances from the Kattegat into the Baltic, and to sweep up all mines and obstructions within and without German territorial waters without any questions of neutrality being raised, and the positions of all such mines and obstructions are to be indicated.

XXVI. — The existing blockade conditions set up by the Allied and Associated Powers are to remain unchanged, and all German merchant ships found at sea are to remain liable to capture. The Allies and United States contemplate the provisioning of Germany during the Armistice as shall be found necessary.

XXVII. — All Naval aircraft are to be concentrated and immobilized in German bases to be specified by the Allies and the United States of America.

XXVIII. — In evacuating the Belgian coasts and forts Germany shall abandon all merchant ships, tugs, lighters, cranes, and all other harbour materials, all materials for inland navigation, all aircraft and air materials and stores, all arms and armaments, and all stores and apparatus of all kinds.

XXIX. — All Black Sea ports are to be evacuated by Germany; all Russian warships of all descriptions seized by Germany in the Black Sea are to be handed over to the Allies and the United States of America; all neutral merchant ships seized are to be released; all warlike and other materials of all kinds seized in those ports are to be returned, and German materials as specified in Clause XXVIII are to be abandoned.

XXX. — All merchant ships in German hands belonging to the Allied and Associated Powers are to be restored in ports to be specified by the Allies and the United States of America without reciprocity.

XXXI. — No destruction of ships or of materials to be permitted before evacuation, surrender, or restoration.

XXXII. — The German Government shall formally notify the neutral Governments of the world, and particularly the Governments of Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Holland, that all restrictions placed on the trading of their vessels with the Allied and Associated countries, whether by the German Government or by private German interests, and whether in return for specific concessions, such as the export of shipbuilding materials, or not, are immediately cancelled.

XXXIII. — No transfers of German merchant shipping of any description to any neutral flag are to take place after signature of the Armistice.

F. — Duration of Armistice

XXXIV. — The duration of the Armistice is to be 36 days, with option to extend. During this period, on failure of execution of any of the above clauses, the Armistice may be denounced by one of the contracting parties on 48 hours' previous notice.

G. — Time Limit for Reply

XXXV. — This Armistice to be accepted or refused by Germany within 72 hours of notification.

INDEX

INDEX

A

Adami, Col., 79, 87, 88, 107
Aix Noulette, 50
Albert, 53
Algie, Lieut. W. L. A., V.C., 270
Amiens, 22, 32, 33, 39, 59
Amiens, Battle of, 59, 61, 69
Amy, Mrs. L., 183
Amyot, Col., 111
Anti-Aircraft Searchlight Co., C.E., 65, 66, 70, 71
Aquitania, the, 240
Archangel, 220, 221, 224, 230, 231, 237, 238
Argyll, Duchess of, 212
Armentières, 27
Army Medical Corps, 75 et seq.
Army Nursing Sisters, the, 81
Army Troops Co., C.E., 54, 60, 70, 71
Arnoldi, Maj. F. F., 222, 235, 237
Arnoldi, Lieut. Joan, 180
Arras, 40, 41
Arras, Battle of, 39, 56, 69
Artillery, the Canadian, 1 et seq.
Aubin St. Vaast, 150

B

Babtie Board, Report of the, 83, 91, 92, 96
Baikal, lake, 238
Barclay, Mrs. G., 185
Barker, Lt.-Col., W. G.,V.C., 270
Barron, Corp. C., V.C., 271
Beaverbrook, Lady, 142
Beaver Hut, the, 141-42
Bell, Dr. J., 76
Bellew, Capt. E. D., V.C., 272
Beresnik, 225, 227, 230, 231, 236
Bergas, Mme., 189
Bergin, Dr. D., 75, 76
Birks, Lt.-Col. G. W., 148, 153
Bishop, Lt.-Col. W. A., V.C., 273
Black, Mrs. G., 183
Bolsheviki, the, 226 et seq.
Borden, Sir F., 76
Borden, Sir R., 156
Boulter, Miss, 182
Bourlon Wood, 45, 53
Bourne, H. E. Cardinal, 155
Brazeau, Mlle. T., 189
Brereton, Sergt. A., V.C., 274
Bridges, Lt.-Col. J. W., 83
Brillant, Lieut. J., V.C., 274
Brown, Mrs. G., 186
Brown, Pte. H., V.C., 275
Brown, Lady MacLaren, 180, 182, 207, 208, 209
Browning, Miss E. G., 188
Bruce, Col. H. A., Report of, 83, 84, 90, 91, 92, 95
Bruce, Mrs. J., 198, 200
Bulford, 86
Bully Grenay, 29
Burnham, Miss, 188
Burnham, Mrs. H., 188

C

Cairns, Sergt. H., V.C., 276
Camblain l'Abbé, 126
Cambrai, 34
Camouflage, 58, 59
Campbell, Lieut. F. W.,V.C., 277
Casualty Clearing Stations, 82, 89
Canadian Daily Record, the, 143
Canal de Conde, 41
Canal de la Sensée, 41, 43
Canal de l'Escaut, 41
Canal du Nord, 35, 40, 41, 44, 45
Chalford, Canon, 126
Chaplain Service, the, 116 et seq.
Chase-Casgrain, Mme., 189
Clark, Corp. L., V.C., 277
Clark-Kennedy, Lt.-Col. W. H., V.C., 278
Clearing Hospitals, the, 82
Cliveden, 89
Combe, Lieut. R. G., V.C., 279
Connaught, H. R. H. The Duchess of, 201

"Continuous Wave Wireless," the, 62
Coppins, Corp. F. W., V.C., 280
Corbett, Capt. D., 153
Corps Dental Laboratory, 108
Corps Pigeon Service, 63
Corps R.E. Parks, 59, 60, 61
Corps Signal Co., 64
Corps Tramway Co's, 53
Cotter, Miss R., 187
Croak, Pte. J. B., V.C., 280
Crosby, Gen., 237
Currie, Sir Arthur, 105-06, 114-15, 141, 242, 243
Czaritza, the S. S. 237

D

Davies, W. H., 134
Davignon, Miss, 189
De Longueil, Mlle., 189
Demobilization, 240 et seq.
Dennison, Miss J., 187
Dental Department, 108
Despatch Rider Letter Service, 63, 73
Dinesen, Pte. T., V.C., 281
Divisional Engineers, 67
Divisional R.E. Parks, 60
Dobell, Mrs. W. M., 185
Douglas, Surg.-Maj., V.C., 76
Douglas, Mrs. W., 188
Drew, Mrs. W., 184
Drocourt-Quéant Switch Line, 34
Drummond, Lady, 179
Duff, Lt.-Col. H. R., 82
Duisans, 59
Dvina, the river, 221, 223-26, 231-35

E

Ellison, Miss G., 185
Elmsley, Brig.-Gen. J. H., 238
Emtsa, the river, 224
Engineers, the Canadian, 37 et seq.
Engineers, M.T. Co., 61, 66, 69, 70, 72
Etaples, 150

F

Ferris, Mrs. W. D., 181
Festubert, 27
Field Ambulances, 82
Finn, Miss M. I., 180
Fiset, Maj.-Gen. Sir Eugene, 78, 240
Fisher, Corp. F., V.C., 281
Fitz-Randolph, Miss H., 42, 182
Fleet, Miss E., 189
Fleming, Mrs. S., 180
Fleurbaix, 24, 25
Flowerdew, Lieut. G. M., V.C., 282
Forde, Lt.-Col. E., 72
Forgie, A. W., 137
Fort Gassion, 89
Foster, Miss, 189
"Fuller Phone," the, 62

G

Gatewood, Mrs., 204
Gault, Mrs. Hamilton, 186
Gavin, Lt.-Col., 225
General Hospitals, 82, 85, 86, 89, 97, 111
George, Rt. Hon. David Lloyd, 213
Gillis, Capt., 231
Godman, Mrs. F. T., 182
Good, Sergt. H. J., V.C., 282
Gooderham, Col., 212
Gooderham, Mrs. A. E., 198, 199, 209, 212, 215
Gordon, Mrs. M. R., 180
Graham, C., 137
Graham, E. E., 134
Gregg, Lieut. M. F., V.C., 283
Gunners' Bridge, 226

H

Haig, Field Marshal Earl, 202, 212
"Halifax Fund," the, 211
Hall, Sergt.-Maj. F. W., V.C., 284
Hanna, Sergt.-Maj. R., V.C., 284
Harvey, Lieut. F. M. W., V.C., 285
Hobson, Sergt. F., V.C., 285
Hodgetts, Lt.-Col., 83
Hodgins, Mr. Justice, 263
Holmes, Sergt. T. W., V.C., 286
Honey, Lieut. S. L., V.C., 287
Horne, Gen. Sir H., 116
Hôtel d'Iêna, the, 148, 149
Hughes, Sir Sam, 90

Hutcheson, Capt. B. S., V.C., 287
Hyde, Maj. W. C., 222, 234, 235

I

I.O.D.E., War Work of the, 197 et seq.
Inglis, Capt., 44
Ironsides, Maj.-Gen. E., 222, 237

J

Jeffray, Miss M., 185
Jocelyn, Lt.-Col., 225
Jones, Surg.-Gen. G. Carleton, 77, 92, 93, 96

K

Kaeble, Corp. J., V.C., 288
Keenan, Lt.-Col., 78
Kem, 221
Kemp, Sir Edward, 155
Kerr, Miss E., 189
Kerr, Lieut. G. F., V.C., 289
Kerr, Pte. J. C., V.C., 289
Kerr, Miss M., 189
Kingman, A., 153
Kinross, Pte. C. J., V.C., 290
K. of C. " Catholic Army Huts," 153 et seq.
Knight, Sergt. A. G., V.C., 290
Kola, 220
Konowal, Corp. F., V.C., 291
Kurgomen, 226, 227, 228, 230, 231, 235

L

La Bassée, 27
La Coulotte, 51
Langstaff, Mrs. J. M., 205
Lavington, 86
Learmonth, Capt. O'K. M., V.C., 292
Leckie, Col., 236
Lee, Capt., 138
Lens, 7, 50, 52
Le Touquet, 89
Le Treport, 89
Lewis, Miss W., 180, 181
Liévin, 52, 127
Lille, 25
Lindsay, Maj.-Gen. W. B., 67
Lipsett, Gen., 151
Llandovery Castle, the, 114
Lyall, Lieut. G. T., V.C., 292
Lyall, Mrs. P., 189

M

McAdams, Miss R., 184
McCarthy, Miss L., 189
Macdonald, Miss, 198
MacDougald, Mrs., 204
MacDowell, Maj. T. W., V.C., 293
MacGregor, Capt. J., V.C., 294
McGillivray, Capt., 171
McIntyre, Miss M., 185
McKean, Lieut. G. B., V.C., 284
McKenzie, Lieut. H., V.C., 295
McLachlin, Miss J., 185, 188
McLeod, Lieut. A. A., V.C., 296
MacMahon, Mrs., 198
McMeares, Miss L., 180
McMillan, Mrs., 175
McMurrich, Miss H., 185
MacNaughton, Brig.-Gen. A. G. L., 20
McTavish, Miss, 189
Manion, Capt. R. J., 102-03
Marquion, 44, 45, 46
Martin, Miss L., 186
Mathewson, Miss, 186
Merrifield, Sergt. W., V.C., 297
Metcalf, Corp. W. H., V.C., 297
Mezières, 22
Middleton, Gen., 76
Milne, Pte. W. J., V.C., 298
Miner, Corp. H. G. B., V.C., 298
Minto, Lady, 213
Mitchell, Capt. C. N., V.C., 299
Monro, Mrs. G., 186
Mons, 36, 40, 41, 149
Morris, Miss E., 189
Morrison, Maj.-Gen. Sir Edward, 24
Mowat, Capt., 232, 233
Mowrer, Mrs. L. G., 187
Mullin, Lieut. G. H., V.C., 300
Murray, Mrs. C., 198
Murray, Brig. Mary, 168
Murray, Maj.-Gen., 168

N

Nasmith, Lt.-Col. G. G., 83
Neilson, Col. H., 76, 77
Netheravon, 86
Neuville Vitasse, 58

Nissen huts, the, 58
Northland, the, 263
Nunney, Pte. C. J. P., V.C., 300

O

O'Gorman, Rev. J. J., 153
O'Kelly, Capt. C. P. J., V.C., 301
Onega, 221
O'Rourke, Pte. M. J., V.C., 301
Orr, Major, 111

P

Page, Miss B., 187
Passchendaele, 7, 30, 31, 39
Patricia, H. R. H. Princess, 214
Pattison, Pte. J. G., V.C., 302
Pearkes, Lt.-Col. G. R., V.C., 303
Pearson, Sir Arthur, 214
Pearson, H. A., 136
Peck, Lt.-Col. C. W., V.C., 304
Penfold, Capt., 170
Pequegnat, A., 137
Perley, Sir George, 155
Perley, Lady, 180, 182
Petrograd, 220, 221
Piander, 233
Pinega, the river, 221
Pless, 235
Plummer, Capt. Mary, 180, 200
Pontoon Bridging Co., C.E., 60, 69, 70, 72
Portal, Major, 18

R

Rayfield, Pte. J. P., V.C., 304
Red Triangle Clubs, 140
Reid, Miss H. R. Y., 193
Richards, Commissioner, 171
Richardson, Pte. J., V.C., 305
Riddett, Mrs., 184
Ridgeway, R., 133
Robertson, Pte. J. P., V.C., 306
Robinson, Capt., 170
Robinson, Mrs. C., 188
Roddick, Dr. T., 75, 76
Rosières, 56
Ross, Brig.-Gen. A. E., 104-05
Ross, Mrs. J. F. W., 188
Ross, Mrs. J. G., 182
Russia, Campaign in Northern, 219 et seq.
Rutherford, Lieut. C. S., V.C., 306
Ryerson, Dr. G. A. S., 76

S

Salisbury Plain, 85, 86, 89
Salvation Army, Work of the, 168 et seq.
Sanctuary Wood, 28
Sanitary Section, the, 109-11
Scobie, Miss E., 188
Scott, Lt.-Col. G. F., 132-33
Scrimger, Lt.-Col. F. A. C., V.C., 307
Selzo, 226
Shankland, Capt. R., V.C., 308
Sharman, Lt.-Col. C. H. L., 219, 222-25, 233, 235
Shenkursk, 227, 231, 233
Shushega, 234, 235
Sifton, Sergt. E. W., V.C., 308
Signal Service, the, 62-65, 72-73
Smith, Lt.-Col. Clarence F., 159
Snyder, Miss K. J., 188
Somme, Battle of the, 28, 29, 47
Southall, Major, 174
Spall, Sergt. R., V.C., 309
Special Works Co's, R.E., 58
Spencer, Miss S. S., 180
Stationary Hospitals, 82, 89, 97, 100, 111, 113
Steele, Capt., 170, 171, 172
Stephen, the S. S., 223
Stitt, Capt. O. M., 56
Strachan, Maj. H., V.C., 309
Strathy, Mrs. H. S., 198
Sullivan, Dr. M., 76

T

Tait, Lieut. J. E., V.C., 310
Tate, Miss, 188
Taylor, Miss F., 189
Thomas, Mrs. W. R., 189
Thompson, "Bob," 134
Tinques, 146
Tobin, Dr., 76
Topsa, 226
Tory, Dr. H. M., 151
Tramway Co's, C.E., 70, 71, 150
Tulgas, 225, 226, 228, 229, 234, 236
Tunnelling Co's, C.E., 50, 69, 70, 71
Turner, Gen., 155

V

Vaga, the river, 221, 225, 226, 231, 233, 235, 237

Valcartier, 82, 83, 85, 87, 137
Valenciennes, 36, 149
Van Koughnet, Mrs. A., 198
Vimy Ridge, Battle of, 29, 39
Vimy Ridge, Defences of, 47
Vimy Ridge, University of, 152
Vistafka, 234
Vladivostok, 238
Voluntary Aid Hospitals, 94-96

W

Wallis, Miss K., 186
Walton, Capt., 171
Wancourt, 58
Watel, Mrs. P., 189
Watt, Mrs. A. T., 181, 182
Webb, Miss R., 187
Weller, Mrs. K., 185
Whiteman, H., 136
Whitman, Miss J., 189
Wilken, A. G., 134
Wilson, Lt.-Col. F. W. E., 111
Women, War Work of Canadian, 176 et seq.
Worthington, Col. A. N., 78

Y

Yemelskoe, the river, 224
Young, Pte. J. F., V.C., 311
Y.M.C.A., the, 136 et seq.
Ypres, 25, 27

Z

Zengel, Sergt. R. L., V.C., 311

Printed at the Colonial Press, Boston, Mass.

DATE DUE

NOV 1 7 2008

547 .C2 C35 v.6
010101 000
Canada in the Great World War
0 1163 0019517 3
TRENT UNIVERSITY

D547 .C2C35 v. 6
Canada in the great World War

DATE	ISSUED TO
	105362

105362